

## 91. GOOD WORKS or KEEPING THE LAW DOES NOT SAVE US

There are basically only two religions in the world today. These represent two different ideas as to how we gain acceptance with God and how we get into heaven. One is right. The other is wrong. These are:

### I. GOOD WORKS. The idea that if I am **good enough then God will accept me into heaven**(wrong).

The problems with this view are that:

1. How good do I have to be? Where is the cut off point that determines entry to heaven?
2. If I can get into heaven by my good works, then **why did Christ die?**
3. How do you judge **how much salvation** each good work buys you?
4. If we have to earn our salvation, there is always that feeling of **guilt**, because maybe we haven't done enough good works to earn salvation.
5. If we are hoping to be saved by our good works, **then we could lose our salvation** by not keeping up the good works. This leads to **uncertainty**. We can never be sure of going to heaven as long as we trust in our good works.
6. Trusting in our good works leads to **fear** of missing heaven.
7. It leads to a wrong comparison. People say "I am a good person." They are comparing themselves with sinful man. We should compare ourselves with God. Then we appear as big sinners.
8. If we could be saved by our good works then, **we could boast**. Do you think God would devise a system of salvation that allowed man to boast?
9. It causes some people to **give up trying to be good**, so they sin as much as they want.
10. Does "man save man" or does "God save man"?
11. It leads to a religion of **self denial** to earn salvation. God has given us richly in all things to enjoy.

Religious man likes to think that his good works can save him because:

1. It keeps people under the control of religious leaders, because people fear that if they stop coming to church, they will go to hell.
2. People like to feel that they have worked for their salvation and that they deserve it. They think "I earn everything else in life by hard work, why not my salvation?"
3. Man likes to make the rules himself, and does not like God telling him what to do. Sinful man does not want God to get the glory for saving him.

99% of the world's religions are religions of good works to earn salvation. Examples include: Roman Catholicism, Islam, Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons and Hinduism to name a few.

### II. FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST AS MY SIN PAYMENT. (The right way).

This begins with the idea that I am a sinner, that I have broken God's laws, and that compared to God I am not a good person, but a self centred sinner.

God's law that I have broken condemns me to hell. The good news is that Jesus Christ on the cross had all my sins laid on him, so that Jesus Christ took the full punishment for all my past, present and future sins that I deserved in hell forever. He thus became the Saviour of all people. We are now responsible to receive or call on Christ to be our Saviour from sin. When we do this Christ saves us and gives us the free gift of eternal life.

The benefits of Christ saving us instead of our works saving us are:

1. We can be **100% sure** of going to heaven because Christ is 100% responsible for saving us and for keeping us saved.

2. We can concentrate on **servicing God in joy**, rather than in fear of trying to earn our entrance ticket to heaven.
3. We know that we will **meet** our saved **loved ones** in heaven.
4. We **rest** in God's **acceptance** of us because of Christ.
5. It releases us from the **bondage of fear** of trusting a man made organization to get us into heaven.
6. It leads us to **develop a loving relationship** with Christ as our Saviour, Friend and God, rather than Mary.
7. It leads us to base our beliefs for living on the **Bible**, not on some man made organization.

### Let us study some Bible passages teaching that "good works don't save us".

1. Knowing that a man is:
  - a) not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ;
  - b) even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law;
  - c) for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. Galatians 2:16.
2. If righteousness come by the law, then Christ is **dead in vain**. Galatians 2:21.
3. Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of **faith**? Galatians 3:2.
4. Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. Galatians 3:6.
5. Know ye therefore that they which are of **faith**, the same are the **children of Abraham**. Gal. 3:7.
6. The scripture foreseeing that God would **justify the heathen through faith**. Galatians 3:8.
7. So then they which be **of faith** are **blessed** with faithful Abraham. Galatians 3:9.
8. For as many as are of the **works of the law** are under the curse. Galatians 3:10.
9. For it is written, **Cursed is everyone** that **continues not** in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. Galatians 3:10.
10. But that **no man** is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident. Galatians 3:11.
11. The just shall live by faith. Galatians 3:11.
12. Christ has **redeemed us** from the **curse of the law**, being made a curse for us. Galatians 3:13.
13. That we might receive the **promise of the Spirit through faith**. Galatians 3:14.
14. If there had been a **law** given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. This teaches that no law gave eternal life. Galatians 3:21.
15. The scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the **promise by faith of Jesus Christ** might be given to them that **believe**. Galatians 3:22.
16. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, **shut up** into the **faith** which should afterwards be revealed. Galatians 3:23.  
This means that we were shut up in the prison of the law until salvation by faith in Christ came.
17. The **law** was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that **we** might be **justified by faith**. Galatians 3:24.
18. But after that faith is come, **we are no longer under a schoolmaster**. Galatians 3:25.  
We are not under the schoolmaster of the Mosaic law.
19. For ye are **all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus**. Galatians 3:26.
20. Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law? Galatians 4:21.
21. If ye be **circumcised**, Christ shall profit you nothing. Galatians 5:2.

This means that if you are trusting your circumcision to save you, or your good works, or your baptism, or your sacraments, or your church to save you, then Christ has not saved you. You are still lost and going to hell.

22. I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. Galatians 5:3  
This means that if you trust your works to save you, then you can only be saved by always keeping all the whole law, which no one can do. Therefore, those trusting their works are heading to hell.
23. Christ is become of **no effect unto you**, whosoever of you are justified by the law. Galatians 5:4.
24. the hope of **righteousness by faith**. Galatians 5:5.
25. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing nor uncircumcision: **but faith** which worketh by love. Galatians 6:15; 5:6.
26. In whom also after that **ye believed, ye were sealed** with that holy Spirit of promise. Ephesians 1:13
27. For **by grace** are ye saved **through faith**;  
i) and that **not of yourselves**;  
ii) it is the **gift of God**:  
iii) **not of works**, lest any man should boast. Ephesians 2:8,9.

Four times we are told here that we are not saved by works, but by faith.

**Question: Where then do good works come in?**

**Answer:** Good works come **after salvation** to show our gratitude to God in love for saving us.

"For we are his workmanship, **created** in Christ Jesus **unto good works**, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them." Ephesians 2:10.



28. That Christ may dwell in your hearts **by faith**. Ephesians 3:17.
29. And be found in Christ, **not having mine own righteousness**, which is of the **law**, but that which is of the **faith of Christ**, the **righteousness** which is **of God by faith**. Philippians 3:9.
30. **Not by works** of righteousness which **we have done**, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. Titus 3:5.
31. Therefore **by the deeds of the law** there shall **no flesh be justified** in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. Romans 3:20.
32. The righteousness of God **without the law** is manifested. Romans 3:21. (Romans 3:22.)
33. The righteousness of God which is **by faith of Jesus Christ** unto all and upon all them that believe.
34. Being **justified freely** by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus. ...a **propitiation** (forgiveness and favour) **through faith** in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins. Romans 3:24,25.
35. Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? **of works? NO:** but by the law of **faith**. Romans 3:27.
36. Therefore, we conclude that a man is **justified by faith without the deeds of the law**. Romans 3:28
37. One God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through **faith**. Rom. 3:30

**Question:** Does salvation by faith and not by works mean that we can go out and sin as we wish?

A: Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law. Rom. 3:31

The law is now written on the believer's heart, so that we obey the law of the Spirit of life from an inward motivation.

38. If Abraham were justified by works he hath whereof to glory; but not before God. Romans 4:2.
39. Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. Romans 4:3.
40. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his **faith** is counted for righteousness. Romans 4:5.
41. David also describes the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputes righteousness without works. Romans 4:6.
42. **Faith** was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness. How was it then reckoned? When he was in **uncircumcision**. Romans 4:9,10.
- Note:** Abraham was saved by faith before he was circumcised. This teaches us that we are saved by faith before baptism, good works, sacraments or any human work.
43. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. Rom. 5:1
- Note:** Peace with God comes by faith in Christ, not by good works.
44. The Gentiles ..... have attained to righteousness ..... which is of **faith**. But Israel ..... has not attained to righteousness. Why? Because they sought it not by faith, but .....by the works of the law. Romans 9:30-32.
45. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace. Romans 11:6.
- Note:** If you think you are saved by your own works, then you miss God's grace.
46. Who hath saved us ..... not according to our works. 11 Timothy 1:9.
47. Q: What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?  
A: Jesus ..... this is the work of God, that ye **believe** on him whom he hath sent. John 6:28,29.
48. i) He said to the woman, Thy **faith** hath saved thee; go in peace. Luke 7:50.  
ii) When he saw their **faith**, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. Luke 5:20.  
iii) Purifying their hearts by **faith**. Acts 15:9.  
iv) That they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them that are sanctified by **faith** that is in me. Acts 26:18.  
v) Jesus said unto him (Bartimaeus), Receive thy sight: thy **faith** hath saved thee. Luke 18:42.  
vi) Daughter, thy **faith** hath made thee whole; go in peace. Mark 5:34.  
vii) To a repentant leper: "thy **faith** hath made thee whole." Luke 17:19.
49. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever **believeth in him** shall receive remission of sins. Acts 10:43.
50. By him **all that believe** are **justified from all things**, from **which ye could not be justified** by the **law of Moses**. Acts 13:39.
- Note:** If the law of Moses could not justify anybody, how can keeping the laws of the Catholic Church, Jehovah's Witness, Mormon, Baptism, sacraments, or good works justify you?

**OBJECTION: Question:** "But doesn't James 2:14-26 teach that works save us?" **Ans:** No, because:

1. James in 2:10,11 says that even if we have kept the whole law always showing good works every day, except in one act of sin, we are guilty of

breaking all the law. "For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all."

2. Wherever you have true believers, you have counterfeit believers. Eg: Neither the priest or the Levite who had religious training, helped the dying man. Matt.7:21, Luke 10:25-37
3. A poor believer, hungry and without proper clothing entered a church. A person with dead faith saw the visitor in need, yet did nothing to meet his needs. He just said a few pious words: "Depart in peace; be ye warmed and filled". James 2:1-5,16.

**Note:** Each of these four people had dead faith. Each would defend the idea that he had faith, yet neither demonstrated that faith in loving works.

To help a needy person is an expression of love, and faith works by love. Galatians 5:6.

The question in James 2:14: "Can faith save him?" is alternatively translated: "Can that kind of faith save him?" What kind of faith? The faith that is never shown by practical works. The answer is "NO". Any declaration of faith that does not result in a changed life and good works is a false declaration. That kind of faith is dead faith.

"Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone." James 2:17.

True saving faith always produces works. God sees our faith in Christ as Saviour, then he saves us.

Man cannot see faith. Man can only see our works as the fruit of salvation.

|                                                                                                                                 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p><b>Faith</b> is the <b>Godward</b> condition of salvation.<br/><b>Works</b> is the <b>manward</b> evidence of salvation.</p> |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

James illustrates his point with two Old Testament characters:

1. **Abraham.** "Was not Abraham our Father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?" James 2:21.
  - a) Abraham was justified **before God** by age 85. "He believed in the Lord; and he counted it to him for righteousness." Genesis 15:6; 16:16.
  - b) Abraham was justified **before man** by age 137, when he offered up Isaac upon the altar. Genesis 22:1-14.
2. **Rahab.** "Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?" James 2:25.
  - a) Rahab was justified **before God** (salvation) when she confessed with her mouth Jehovah to be God.

"For the Lord your God, he is God in heaven above, and in earth beneath." Joshua 2:11,1-14
  - b) Rahab was justified **before man** (service) when she received and sent the messengers out another way. "Then she let them down by a cord through the window." Joshua 2:15,16.

### **Conclusion:**

1. Forsake trusting your works to save you, and receive Jesus Christ as your Saviour from sin today.
2. Leave any church that teaches a gospel of good works for salvation. God's curse is on such a church or religion. Galatians 1:6-9.

## 92. EVIDENCE FOR CREATION in 6 DAYS in 4074 BC

### Bible Reading: Genesis 1

Sixteen Bible passages say that God created life on earth:

1. "In the beginning God **created** the heaven and the earth". Genesis 1:1.
2. "So God **created** man in his own image, ... male and female". Genesis 1:27.
3. "The Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have **created** ..." Genesis 6:7.
4. "The day that God **created** man upon the earth". Deuteronomy 4:32.
5. "Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath **created** these things, that bringeth out their host by number: he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might ....." Isaiah 40:26.
6. "Hast thou not known? Hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the Lord, the **Creator** of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? There is no searching of his understanding." Isaiah 40:28.
7. "I have **created** him (humans) for my glory". Isaiah 43:7.
8. "I have made the earth, and **created** man upon it". Isaiah 45:12.
9. "Hath not one God **created** us?" Malachi 2:10.
10. "For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of **creation**, which God **created** unto this time". Mark 13:19.
11. "But from the beginning of the **creation** God made them male and female." Mark 10:6.
12. "For by him were all things **created**, that are in heaven and earth....." Colossians 1:16.
13. "For the invisible things of him from the **creation** of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse." Romans 1:20.
14. "Who changed the truth of God (creation) into a lie (evolution), and worshipped and served the creature (himself) more than the **Creator** (God), who is blessed for ever. Amen." Romans 1:25.
15. "God, who **created** all things by Jesus Christ:" Ephesians 3:9.
16. "For by him were all things **created**, that are in heaven, and are in earth....all things were **created** by him and for him:" Colossians 1:16.
17. "Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou has **created** all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were **created**." Revelation 4:11.
18. "Remember now thy **Creator** in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not ....." Ecclesiastes 12:1.

Aim: God created man by intelligent design in 6 days 6000 years ago. Man did not evolve by unintelligent random processes over millions of years. We are accountable to God as our Creator.

Most schools teach that evolution is right.

What scientific evidence is there for creation by God in 6 days 6000 years ago?

### I. EVIDENCE FOR A YOUNG EARTH.

For evolution to be remotely possible, many millions of years are needed. If it can be shown that the earth is young (about 6000 years old), and not millions of years old (as required by evolution), then evolution would not have enough time to happen. Consider these examples pointing to a young earth:

#### I. EVIDENCE FROM STARS

1. Galaxy star clusters (spirals with billions of stars) move so rapidly that they would not stay together if the universe were very old.

2. Large Stars. Some stars are so large that they radiate energy 10,000 to 1 million times more rapidly than our sun. They could not have contained enough hydrogen to radiate this fast for millions of years, because their initial mass would have been too big. These O and B class stars, and P Cygni stars could not continue atomic fusion longer than 50,000 to 300,000 years.
3. Abundant Hydrogen in stars. Hydrogen in stars is continually being converted into Helium. Hydrogen cannot be made from other elements. Fred Hoyle states that, if the universe were as old as Big Bang theorists think, then there would be little hydrogen left, as it would be converted to Helium by now. Spectra from stars reveal abundant hydrogen in stars. This implies a young universe.

#### II. EVIDENCE FROM OUR SOLAR SYSTEM

4. Solar shrinking. Since 1836, over 100 different observers at the Greenwich Observatory and US Naval Observatory have measured the sun's diameter to shrink at 0.1% per century or 5 feet per hour. At this rate, 50,000 years ago the sun would have been so large as to boil earth's oceans, making life on earth impossible. 100,000 years ago our sun would have been twice as large.
5. Rare Solar Neutrinos. In 1968 it was discovered that our sun emits hardly any neutrinos. This lack of solar neutrinos irrefutably points to a recently created sun. (A neutrino is an uncharged particle of no or very little mass, travelling at the speed of light, and is produced in the sun when protons and electrons react to form neutrons.)
6. Comets elliptically orbit the sun and are thought to be as old as the sun. As comets orbit the sun, they lose some of their water and gases from the sun's heat, gravity and tail formation. The tail consists of material driven away from its head by solar energy. Some comets regularly seen in the 19<sup>th</sup> Century have broken up and vanished, or plunged into the sun. All comets should self-destruct in a short time, less than 10,000 years. There should be no comets left. Evolution cannot explain comets in an old solar system. Comets are young objects created in a young solar system.
7. Solar Wind. As the sun's radiation flows outward, it applies an outward force on very small particles orbiting the sun. All particles smaller than 100,000<sup>th</sup> of a centimetre should have long ago been 'blown out' of our solar system if it were billions of years old. Yet satellite studies show that these small particles are abundant and still orbiting the sun. This implies a young solar system.
8. Solar Drag. (Poynting-Robertson Effect). Small and medium size rocks circling the sun are gradually drawn into the sun by gravity. The sun acts like a giant vacuum cleaner, sweeping up about 100,000 tons of micrometeoroids each day. Each particle absorbs and re-radiates energy from the sun, causing them to slow down and fall into the sun. At today's rate, our sun would have sucked in most solar dust particles larger than 100,000<sup>th</sup> of a centimetre in less than 10,000 years, and all of it within 50,000 years. Yet the abundance of these particles, with no known source of replenishment, points to a young solar system.

#### III. EVIDENCE FROM OTHER PLANETS

9. Meteoroids bombarding Saturn's rings would have destroyed them in less than 10,000 years. (W T Brown, *In the Beginning*, p 18).
10. Solid Ammonia in Saturn's rings, with a higher vapour pressure than ice, could not survive long without vaporising into space. Young rings imply a young Saturn.
11. Jupiter's Moons. If they evolved, they should be physically alike, having the same amount of volcanoes and impact craters, but this is not so. Evolution claims that all planets were molten 5 billion years ago and volcanic activity stopped 4 billion years

ago as they cooled. The moons Ganymede and Callisto have no volcanoes and many impact craters. Europa has no volcanoes and no impact craters. Io has 7 active volcanoes and no impact craters. Titan has volcanoes.

12. **Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune** (4) have rings, which could not survive 4 billion years. Jupiter's intense magnetic field radiation would sweep out its rings. (Bradford Smith, a Voyager Scientist).
13. **Venus' high temperature** and **little erosion**, imply a young age for Venus. If Venus was 4 billion years old, its dense atmosphere should have worn away its craters.
14. **Mars** has **little erosion** and **some water**. Mars has many sharp edged craters and volcanoes, as well as month-long dust storms. Several thousand years of this weather would have seriously eroded these edges and its strong colour differences. Powerful solar UV radiation would have long ago broken down the small amount of water, releasing the oxygen into the atmosphere and hydrogen into space. Evolution predicts no surface water and much atmospheric oxygen, but measurements show the opposite being some surface water and very little atmospheric oxygen.

#### IV. EVIDENCE FROM OUR MOON

15. **Lunar Gases**. Argon 36 and Krypton 84 inert gases on the moon came from the sun as 'solar wind'. Based on today's solar wind intensity, today's amount of these gases would be built up in under 10,000 years.
16. **Lunar Recession**. Due to tidal friction, the moon is moving away from earth at about 4 cm per year (1 ½ inches). At this rate, 5 billion years ago the moon would have been 200,000 Km closer.
17. **Lunar quakes, lava flows** and **gas emissions** show that the moon is not a cold, dead body. It is still adjusting to inner stresses and is not yet in thermal equilibrium. If it were 5 billion years old, it would not show such thermal activity.
18. **Lunar Isotopes**. Short-lived Uranium 236 and Thorium 230 were found in moon rocks. If the moon were 5 billion years old, these isotopes would long ago have decayed to lead. But instead they are relatively abundant in moon rocks. Thorium 230 has a half-life of 75,400 years, and Uranium 236 of 23 million years.
19. **Moon dust** comes from meteorite dust and from solar radiation breaking surface rocks to dust at a rate of 3/10,000ths of an inch per year. The one-eighth of an inch of moon dust implies a young moon, not a 5 billion year old moon.

#### V. EVIDENCE FROM EARTH'S ATMOSPHERE

20. **Atmospheric Helium** comes from **radioactive decay** of Uranium and Thorium as they emit alpha particles (Helium nuclei), as well as alpha particles from the sun. Although hydrogen can escape earth's atmosphere, Helium cannot.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Years to reach present Helium level} &= \frac{\text{Present mass of Helium}}{\text{Rate of Helium formation each year}} \\ &= \frac{3.5 \times 10^{15} \text{ grams Helium}}{3 \times 10^{11} \text{ grams Helium formed p.a.}} \\ &= 11,600 \text{ years to reach present levels.} \end{aligned}$$

If earth was 4 billion years old, there would be 400,000 times more Helium in the atmosphere. Where is it? This date of 11,600 years is closer to the Biblical age of earth of 6,000 years.

#### VI. EVIDENCE FROM METEORITES

21. **Meteorite Dust**. 20 million meteors enter earth's atmosphere every 24 hours. These add 25 tons weight to earth each day. Meteorite mass added to the earth in 4 billion years

$$= 25 \text{ tons} \times 365 \times 4 \times 10^9 \text{ tons}$$

$$= 3.65 \times 10^{13} \text{ tons added.}$$

Surface area of earth = 196,800,000 square miles.

$$\text{Mass of meteorite dust per square mile} = \frac{3.65 \times 10^{13} \text{ tons}}{1.96 \times 10^8 \text{ sq miles}}$$

$$= 1.96 \times 10^8 \text{ sq miles}$$

$$= 186,000 \text{ tons per sq mile}$$

Where is all this meteorite dust? It is not there. This implies a young earth.

22. **Meteorite Craters** only occur on the earth's surface, never being found in the rock strata. If earth were 5 billion years old, we would find many meteorite craters in the sedimentary rock strata, but we don't. Thus all meteorites which have struck the earth, have hit it in the last 5000 years.
23. **Meteorites** and **Tektite Showers** are only found at or close to the earth's surface, never in the deeper sedimentary rock strata. If earth were ancient, many would be found all through the geological column. 'No meteorites have ever been found in the geological column' (Fred Whipple, 'Comets' in *The New Astronomy*, p 207). This points to a young earth with sedimentary strata deposited recently and quickly.

#### VII. EVIDENCE FROM THE GLOBE

24. **Earth's Magnetic Field** is decaying exponentially, according to measurements over 170 years.

| Authority    | Year | Magnetic Moment (amp/m <sup>2</sup> ) x 10 <sup>22</sup> |
|--------------|------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| Gauss        | 1835 | 8.558                                                    |
| Adams        | 1845 | 8.488                                                    |
| Adams        | 1880 | 8.363                                                    |
| Vestine      | 1905 | 8.291                                                    |
| Dyson-Furner | 1922 | 8.165                                                    |
| USC & GS     | 1945 | 8.066                                                    |
| Leaton       | 1965 | 8.013                                                    |

This points to a half-life of 1,400 years. On this basis, Earth's magnetic field 7,000 years ago would have been 32 times stronger than it is today. 20,000 years ago it would have dissolved the earth. 1 million years ago it would have had greater magnetism (10<sup>215</sup> Tesla) than all objects in the universe. It would appear that the earth could not be more than 6,000 to 7,000 years old. In 1979 NASA launched a satellite 'Magsat' to measure earth's magnetic field. The overall intensity of earth's field was found to be declining at a rate of 26 nanoteslas per year, with a half-life of just 830 years. Extrapolation shows that the field strength should reach zero in 1,200 years. (*Creation Research Quarterly*, June 1981, p 40). "In the next two millenia, if the present rate of decay is sustained, the dipole moment of the (earth's magnetic) field should reach zero." (*Scientific American*, December 1989). Since a past stronger magnetic field deflected more cosmic rays, this would have changed the rate of Carbon-14 production in the past, giving wrong Carbon-14 dates.

## VIII. EVIDENCE FROM BENEATH EARTH'S SURFACE

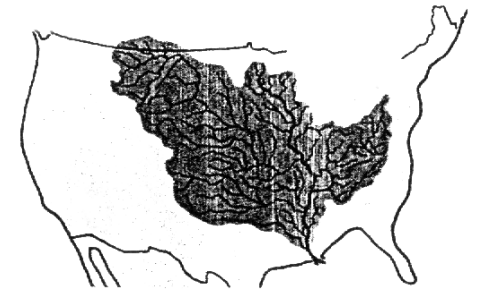
25. **Oil Well Pressure**. When oil drillers first penetrate oil wells, oil gushes out because the oil and gas are under great pressure from surrounding rocks. Sedimentary rocks surrounding the oil wells are porous. Studies of these show that the oil would seep out before 100,000 years, but this has not happened. This great oil pressure argues strongly against millions of years age for oil wells, and implies an age for oil of around 10,000 years. Oil, coal and gas were formed during the Great Flood 4,400 years ago (in 2418BC).
26. **Lack of Anciently Destroyed Oil Reservoirs**. If earth were very old, we would find empty oil reservoirs, where all the oil had leaked out, leaving only residues which would show in drilling cores. Such locations are never found, thus showing that all the world's oil reserves were formed recently.
27. **Earth's Molten Interior**. Deep within the earth, the rocks are molten. The earth is slowly cooling from the surface inwards according to Stefan's Law of Radiation. Lord Kelvin in 1889 calculated that the earth could not be billions of years old because of earth's known rate of cooling, the existing temperature gradient in the earth, and the assumption that the earth could not have been hotter than "white hot" initially. "Popular Lectures and Addresses" (London: MacMillan, 1889, p.415).  
If earth were billions of years old, it would have cooled far more than it now has, even if we assume a radioactively generated heating mechanism. (W T Brown, *In the Beginning*, p 17).
28. **Zircon/Lead Ratios**. Radiogenic lead slowly leaks out of Zircon crystals at normal temperatures, but leaks out more rapidly as the temperature increases. Careful study of zircon crystals from core samples 15,000 feet deep at 313°C in New Mexico show that almost no radiogenic lead had leaked from that super-heated zircon. This strongly points to a young earth.
29. **Radiohaloes shorten geologic ages of millions of years to a few thousand years**. Radiohaloes are colour rings around microscopic radioactive minerals in rock crystals. "Squashed" Polonium-210 radiohaloes indicate that Jurassic, Triassic and Eocene formations in the Colorado Plateau were deposited **within months** of one another, not from 225-255 million years apart, as evolution claims.  
"Orphan" Polonium-218 radiohaloes, having no evidence of their mother elements, imply either instant creation, or drastic changes in radioactive decay rates.

## IX. EVIDENCE FROM EARTH'S SURFACE

30. **Topsoil accumulation**. The average topsoil depth worldwide is 8 inches. Allowing for losses due to erosion, calculations show that it takes 300 to 1,000 years to accumulate one inch of topsoil. On this basis the earth would be about 6,000 to 8,000 years old.
31. **Niagara Falls erosion** is about 7 feet per year. From their first mapping in 1678 to 1842, the water wore away the top of the falls at a rate of 7 feet per year. Since the gorge is 7 miles long,  
the age of the Falls =  $\frac{7 \text{ miles} \times 5280 \text{ feet/mile}}{7 \text{ feet per year}} = 5,280 \text{ years (approximately)}$   
This is close to the time of Noah's Flood 4,400 years ago, especially since the Falls would have eroded faster just after the Flood. For other large waterfalls, the cut distances and rates of erosion agree well with the Falls' origin 4,400 years ago.

## X. EVIDENCE FROM THE OCEANS

32. **Coral Growth** rates accurately measured under favourable growth conditions, show that no known coral formation is older than 3,500 years. (A A Roth, 'Coral Reef Growth', *Origins*, Vol 6, No.2, 1979, p 88).
33. **Sea ooze**. As fish and ocean plants die, they fall to the bottom and form an ooze, or very soft mud on the ocean floor at a rate of one inch every 1,000-5,000 years. Measuring the depth of this ooze indicates a young earth.
34. **Ocean Concentrations of elements from rivers and springs**. If we assume, as evolutionists must, that the oceans were 100% freshwater (0% mineral content) at the beginning of earth's history, and knowing today's amount of each element in the oceans, we may calculate how long each element took to reach today's concentration level. Of the 51 main elements in sea water, 20 could have accumulated to today's level in 1,000 years; 9 other elements in 10,000 years, and 8 others in 100,000 years. For example, Lead (2,000 years); Silicon (8,000 years); Vanadium (10,000 years); Cobalt and Nickel (18,000 years); Caesium (40,000 years); Bismuth (45,000 years); Mercury (42,000 years); Copper (50,000 years); Tin (100,000 years); Sodium (260 million years). Sodium gives the longest accumulation time, so by this method, earth could be no older than 260 million years.
35. **Ocean sediment**. There is not enough sediment on the sea floors for earth to be 5 billion years old. Rivers add about 28 billion tons of sediment to the oceans each year. If this had occurred for 1 billion years, the continents would have eroded away many times. There would be a layer of sediment on the ocean floor at least 60 miles thick. However, the average depth of sediment on the ocean floor is about 800 metres, and the continents have not eroded once yet. The Tasman Sea off Australia is not part of a subduction zone of ocean floor being pushed deep into the earth. Subduction zones could not dispose of 10% of incoming sediment. Hence, sea floors seem young.
36. **Juvenile water** coming out of volcanoes has never been in the oceans before. About 1 cubic mile of water is added yearly. 340,000,000 cubic miles of water are on earth's surface.  
**Question:** How many years would it take to accumulate 340 million cubic miles of water?  
**Answer:** 340 million years. This implies that there were no oceans 340 million years ago, the supposed age of fishes. So how could life have evolved in the oceans 2,000 million years ago if there were no oceans then? (Source: H. Morris, *Scientific Creationism*, p.156).
37. **Delta Filling**. The Mississippi river dumps about 300 million cubic metres of sediment into the Gulf of Mexico each year. If this river were millions of years old, the Gulf would have been filled long ago. Since the delta grows about 250 feet per year, it's age calculates to about 4000 years, very close to the Flood 4,400 years ago. Source: B.Allen, *Geologic Age of Mississippi*, CRS Vol. 9, p.96-114.



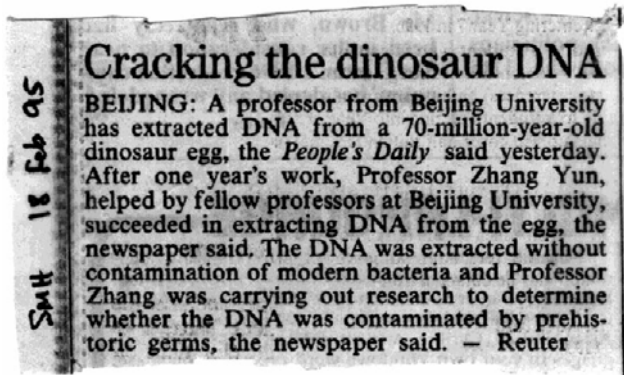
**XI. EVIDENCE FROM LIVING THINGS**

38. **Tree Rings.** The oldest living things are Bristlecone pines growing in Eastern Nevada, aged about 4,600 years old (sometimes producing 2 growth rings per year, so their age would be less), and Sequoia Gigantea in the Sierra Nevada Mountains, which are never older than about 4,000 years. These giant redwoods have no known enemies, and never have any dead trees among them. Unless man cuts them down, they never seem to die. 17 Bristlecone pines are dated about 4,000 years old. Since the Flood occurred about 2,418 BC, this implies that:
- all the pre-Flood Sequoias and Bristlecones were wiped out by the Flood, and
  - there is no record of any living tree older than the Flood.

Question: If evolution were true, why do we find none of these trees dated 15,000 years or older?

Answer: Because evolution is false. These old trees were planted just after the Flood in 2418 BC.

39. **Dinosaur DNA** is so rare that the first sample was discovered in 1995. DNA decomposes soon after the specimen dies. There is no known way for DNA to survive for 70 million years.



SYDNEY MORNING HERALD - 18 FEBRUARY, 1995

**XII. EVIDENCE FROM ANCIENT CIVILIZATIONS**

40. **Man's Recorded History.** If man has lived on earth for 1 million years, why do we only find human records going back to about 3500 BC? This cuneiform tablet is the oldest human writing from Sumeria. When human records first appear, they show man to be highly developed with a sophisticated civilisation. This agrees better with a creation date of 4074 BC than with evolution's 1 million year history of man. Why did man do nothing for 1 million years? Because he has only been here for 6,000 years.
41. **Bible Records.** The Bible is valid history and should not be dismissed. It consistently verifies authentic archaeological research. If the Bible's post Flood dates have been confirmed as accurate by cross checking them with Assyrian, Babylonian, Egyptian and solar eclipse records, then surely the same accuracy must apply to Biblical dates from Creation (4074 BC) to the Flood (2418 BC) in Genesis 1-10.
42. **Astronomical Records.** Because of the rarity of solar eclipses at any given location, and because astronomers can date every solar eclipse going back thousands of years, when an ancient tablet or manuscript mentions a solar eclipse, we can accurately date that record, and other events associated with it in other countries.

Before 2250 BC, we have no records of any solar eclipse being seen by man. "The earliest Chinese date which can be assigned with any probability is 2250 BC, based on an astronomical reference in the Book of History". (Ralph Linten, The Tree of Culture (1955), p 520).

43. **Writing.** The oldest writing is a Sumerian pictograph written on clay tablets dated about 3500 BC.
44. **Pyramids.** Do evolutionists expect us to believe that man sat around for 1 million years doing nothing, building nothing, showing no signs of intelligence or engineering, then suddenly design and build highly technical pyramids in Egypt, the oldest being the step Pyramid for King Zoser in about 2600 BC? This date closely matches the Biblical Flood date of 2418 BC. This confirms Bible chronology better than evolutionary speculation and guesswork.

**Conclusion:** The evidence for creation dating is clear and scientific, being confirmed from many scientific disciplines and archaeological records.

**2. REFUTING THE GEOLOGICAL COLUMN TIMETABLE**

The geological column is one of the most popular evidences used to demonstrate evolution. It seeks to prove evolution of life from simple to complex forms over 2 billion years. The chart below is supposed to represent the history of life in fossil format. Nowhere in earth do we find the complete sequence of fossils or strata as shown in this chart. The only real evidence for this chart is on paper and in some geologist's minds.

| ERA                       | PERIOD                                                                            | EPOCH                                                              | RECORDS OF DISTINCTIVE LIFE           | MILLIONS OF YEARS AGO |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| CENOZOIC                  | QUATERNARY                                                                        | RECENT                                                             |                                       |                       |
|                           |                                                                                   | PLEISTOCENE                                                        | -EARLY MAN-----                       | 2+                    |
|                           |                                                                                   | PLIOCENE                                                           | -LARGE CARNIVORES-----                | 10                    |
|                           | TERTIARY                                                                          | MIOCENE                                                            | -WHALES, APES, GRAZERS-----           | 27                    |
|                           |                                                                                   | OLIGOCENE                                                          | -LARGE BROWSING ANIMALS-----          | 38                    |
|                           |                                                                                   | EOCENE                                                             | -RISE OF FLOWERING PLANTS-----        | 55                    |
| PALEOCENE                 |                                                                                   | -FIRST PLACENTAL MAMMALS-----                                      | 70                                    |                       |
| MESOZOIC                  | CRETACEOUS                                                                        | -DINOSAURS EXTINCT<br>-MODERN FLORAS-----                          | 130                                   |                       |
|                           | JURASSIC                                                                          | -DINOSAURS ZENITH<br>-PRIMITIVE BIRDS<br>-FIRST SMALL MAMMALS----- | 180                                   |                       |
|                           | TRIASSIC                                                                          | -APPEARANCE OF DINOSAURS-----                                      | 225                                   |                       |
| PALEOZOIC                 | PERMIAN                                                                           | -CONIFERS ABUNDANT<br>-REPTILES DEVELOPED-----                     | 260                                   |                       |
|                           | CARBONIFEROUS:                                                                    | -PENNSYLVANIAN-----                                                | -FIRST REPTILES<br>-COAL FORESTS----- | 300                   |
|                           |                                                                                   | -MISSISSIPPIAN-----                                                | -SHARKS ABUNDANT-----                 | 340                   |
|                           | DEVONIAN                                                                          | -RISE OF AMPHIBIANS<br>-FISHES ABUNDANT-----                       | 405                                   |                       |
|                           | SILURIAN                                                                          | -EARLIEST LAND PLANTS<br>-AND ANIMALS-----                         | 435                                   |                       |
|                           | ORDOVICIAN                                                                        | -FIRST PRIMITIVE FISHES-----                                       | 480                                   |                       |
| CAMBRIAN                  | -ALL SUBKINGDOMS OF INVERT-<br>-EBRATE ANIMALS<br>-TRILOBITES<br>-BRACHIPODS----- | 570                                                                |                                       |                       |
| PROTEROZOIC<br>ARCHEOZOIC | PRECAMBRIAN                                                                       | -NO INDISPUTABLE FOSSILS-----                                      | 570 TO 1,500+                         |                       |

**Question:** How do evolutionists/geologists construct this time scale?

**Answer:** They start with the assumption that "since life is here, life has evolved".

Any simple fossil is dated early, and any complex fossil is dated later.

**Question:** How are ages assigned to rock strata?

**A.** 1. They approximate ages by spreading fossils over the total time assumed for their evolution.

2. Radioactive datings and age estimates based on strata thicknesses assign more specific ages.

Strata thicknesses are dated on the assumption that rock strata were laid down in the past at the same rate as today, about one foot every 5000 years.

A worldwide Flood of Noah's kind would disprove this assumption. Most organisms on dying are not fossilised because they rot bacterially or are eaten by scavengers. For example, consider the millions of North American bison killed by Buffalo Bill and others. Where are their fossils? Nowhere, because they were not suddenly buried by a catastrophe, but were eaten by scavengers, or rotted, decayed and dissipated. Dust and leaves falling over a carcass will not preserve it.

Evolutionists follow this faulty circular reasoning:

1. Assume evolution.
2. Datings that fit are accepted, those datings not fitting are rejected.
3. Arrange rock strata on a chart so organisms progress from simple to complex.
4. Contradictions to "Correct" order are explained away.

### 3. FOSSILS and ARTEFACTS of Early Man that Contradict Evolutionary Succession.

- 1) **Guadeloupe Woman** was discovered in 1812 in the Caribbean island of Guadeloupe, in a 1 mile long limestone formation that evolutionists date as 28 million years old. This is a full 25 million years earlier than when man is supposed to have appeared on earth. When this 2 ton limestone block containing Guadeloupe woman was first exhibited in the British Museum in 1812 it was shown as proof of the Genesis Flood. In 1881 it was transferred to the museum's basement.
- 2) **Calaveras skull** found mineralised in 1876. It was found 130 feet below ground in the Sierra Nevada mountains of California. The skull was authenticated by a physician as equivalent to modern man and certified by an evolutionist (J.D. Whitney, Chief of the California Geological Survey) as having been found in Pliocene Stratum (supposedly 2-5 million years old). This disproves evolutionary dating of rock strata and of ancient man.
- 3) **Castinedolo skull** found in Castinedolo, Italy is perfectly human and found in Pliocene strata (supposedly 2-5 million years old).
- 4) **Two Moab skeletons** were found in Cretaceous rock (at Moab, Utah) supposedly dated as 70-135 million years old. The University of Utah Anthropologist, J.P. Marwitt certified them as definitely Homo Sapiens. (Creation Res. Soc. Qlty, Sept 1973, p.110). Technicians at the University of Arizona dated the skeletons by the nitrogen retention test as under 5000 years old. F.A. Barnes in "The Case of the Bones in Stone" in "Desert" 38 (Feb. 1975,p.36) describes two 100 million year old human skeletons, buried under 15 feet of rock which was bulldozed off. Their bones were still together at the joints, and stained green by copper salts from the surrounding rocks. In turn, the surrounding rocks were stained by the organics from the bodies. Evolution dates this rock and hence this human skeleton at 97 million years before humans supposedly appeared.
- 5) **Freiberg skull** found in brown coal in 1842, displayed in the Mining Academy in Freiberg (Saxony). (Otto Stutzer, Geology of Coal, (1940), p.271).

- 6) **Gold Chain in Coal.** In 1891, Mrs S.W. Culp in Morrisville, Illinois, dropped and broke a chunk of coal to find embedded in it a 10 inch, 8 carat gold chain. Since evolutionists claim that coal was deposited in the Carboniferous period (300 million years ago), and man supposedly appeared 3 million years ago, they have the problem of a man-made gold chain dated 300 million years before man appeared on earth.

**Question:** How can a man made article exist before man appeared?

**Answer:** Evolution never happened, man is recently created 6000 years ago, the Geological Column and radiometric dating methods are wrong. (Morrisville, Illinois Times, June 11, 1891).

- 7) **Iron Pot in Coal.** Professor W. Rusch has reported an iron pot encased in coal dated by evolutionary standards at 300 million years old. (Creation Research Quarterly (March, 1971) p.201).

The pictured affidavit reads as follows:



*Sulphur Springs, Arkansas, November 27, 1948.*

*While I was working in the Municipal Electric Plant in Thomas, Okla. in 1912, I came upon a solid chunk of coal which was too large to use. I broke it with a sledge hammer. This iron pot fell from the center, leaving the impression or mold of the pot in the piece of coal. Jim Stall (an employee of the company) witnessed the breaking of the coal, and saw the pot fall out. I traced the source of the coal, and found that it came from the Wilburton, Oklahoma Mines.*

*Frank J. Kenwood*

*Sworn to before me, in Sulphur Springs, Arkansas this 27th day of November, 1948.*

*Julia L (?)*

- 8) **Child's Spoon.** In 1937, Mrs Myrna Burdeck and her mother found a child's spoon in soft Pennsylvania coal. (Creation Research Quarterly, June 1976, p.74).
- 9) **Metal Bowl.** An intricately carved metal bowl was blasted out of solid pudding stone. (Scientific American, June 5, 1852).
- 10) **Bell Shaped Silver Vessel.** Workmen blasting near Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1851, found a bell shaped metal vessel with inlaid silver floral designs embedded in solid rock. (Scientific American, June 1851).
- 11) **Iron Nails.**
  - a) Sir David Brewster found an iron nail in Cretaceous rock (65-144 million years ago) in the Kingoodie Quarry, North Britain in 1845. The last inch of the nail was embedded in the stone. (David Brewster, Report of meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, Vol. 14).
  - b) Hiram Witt while searching for gold in California 1851, dropped and broke a piece of quartz to find an iron nail with a perfect head inside. (The London Times, 1851).
- 12) **The Nampa Image** is a baked clay figure obtained from a well being bored in 1889 at Nampa, Idaho. It was pumped from rocks 300 feet deep under a "Tertiary" lava sheet (12 million years old.) The problem for evolutionists is how can a man made clay figure 12 million years old (supposedly) have been laid down before man evolved 3 million years ago (supposedly)?  
Source: American Geologist, F.Wright, 23 (1899), p.267.





**13) Human and Dinosaur Footprints in the same rock strata:**

i) **Glen Rose, Texas** (40 miles south-west of Dallas) at the Paluxy River contains hundreds of Human footprints both normal and giant size, along side trails of large three-toed dinosaur and Brontosaurus footprints in early Cretaceous limestone dated 120 million years old. Both man and dinosaur are apparently running. These prints were first noticed after a 1908 flood when the Paluxy river rose 27 feet. Clifford Burdick, a mining geologist and Ronald Bird, a paleontologist with the American Museum of Natural History carefully examined and reported on the footprints in "Natural History", May 1939, p.255 and in "The Naturalist", Spring 1957.

In 1938, Bird Transported some of the Brontosaurus tracks to the American Museum of Natural History in New York City.

Human footprints have been found in layers below that of the dinosaur footprints.

Over 100 human footprint trails have been studied in the Paluxy River area.

These refute evolution's long ages and show that both man and dinosaur lived at the same time.

ii) **Turkmenia**. Notice this report in the Sydney Morning Herald, 21 Nov. 1983, "A report from the Soviet news agency, Tass, says that about 1500 tracks made by dinosaurs have been found in Turkmenia – but among those prints are those resembling the footprints of a man. According to Professor Amanniyazov, director of Turkmenia's Institute of Geology: "If further analysis proves that the prints have been left by anthropoids, the history of mankind will be extended to 150 million, not 5 million years.""

Why did Professor Amanniyazov assume dinosaur extinction 150 million years ago as absolutely certainty? Why did he not consider the alternative position of dinosaurs living with man recently?

The fact that dinosaur and human footprints have been found in the same rock strata proves that man and dinosaurs lived at the same time.

This is a great problem to evolutionists who believe that dinosaurs became extinct 70 million years ago. Evolutionists claim that dinosaurs died out 67 million years before man appeared.

These footprints prove that:

- a) Man and dinosaur lived at the same time, and
- b) The evolutionary geological column is completely wrong in its dating of rocks. The evidence for these tracks being genuine are:
  - i) The tracks of man and dinosaur are widely distributed from Turkestan to Texas.
  - ii) The tracks are mostly exposed by bulldozers or erosion.
  - iii) Two Palaeontologists have pronounced them genuine:
    - Dr. Camp of the University of California, and
    - Dr. G. Westcott of Ypsilanti, Michigan.
  - iv) The associated dinosaur tracks are accepted as valid.
  - v) Some prints have ridges of mud pushed up around them.
  - vi) Upon sawing through the footprints, the rock particles underneath are more compressed than particles surrounding the prints.

Source: "Scientific American", A.G. Ingalls: "The Carboniferous Mystery" 162 (1940), page 14. See R.L. Wysong "The Creation-Evolution Controversy", p.373.

iii) **Trilobites in Shoeprint**. In June 1968, William Meister unearthed a fossil shoeprint in the "Wheeler Mid-Cambrian" strata at Antelope Springs, Utah. Trilobites were embedded in both heel and toe. The shoeprint measured 10.25 inches long by 3.5 inches wide, belonging to a right foot which had stepped on several trilobites. Seven other shoe tracks were found in the area precluding this as a quirk. Man and

trilobite living together would disprove 500 million years of the geological column. ("Why Not Creation?" M.Cook, Grand Rapids, Baker, 1970, p.185-193).

iv) **Arizona tracks** near Tuba City in the Glen Canyon group, which is late Triassic to early Jurassic strata, dated by evolutionists from 100-175 million years ago. Over 60 human tracks were mapped and photographed, some with shoes, some barefooted, some standing still, others walking. At least 300 tridactyl dinosaur tracks have been found in the same strata. (Creation Research Quarterly, Sep, Dec, 1989).

v) **Nevada tracks**. Miners digging in a coal seam in Fisher Canyon, Pershing County, Nevada, found a shoeprint so clear that traces of sewed thread are visible. The coal it was found in has an evolutionary date of 15 million years, long before man "evolved". (Source: Andrew Tomas, "We Are Not The First", 1971, p.24).

vi) **Nicaragua tracks**. Human footprints were found near Lake Managua, Nicaragua, 16-24 feet beneath the surface, under 11 strata of rock. Mastodon bones and other fossils have been found in strata above the human footprints. Other human footprints have been found in South America; New Harmony, Indiana; St. Louis, Missouri; Herculaneum, Missouri; Kingston, New York; Berea, Kentucky; Carson City, Nevada. (Source: Creation Res. Soc. Qtly, March 1971, p. 205).

**14) Hammer in "300 million year old" Limestone in London, Texas.**

This hammer is obviously man made. The problem here for evolutionists is that this artefact shows that man lived at the same time as when limestone was deposited.

Source: "Creation or Evolution" G. Rehn.

**15) Dinosaur Pictographs.**

Pictures of dinosaur, ibex and other creatures have been found on the walls of the Havasupai Canyon by S. Hubbard, Honorary Curator of Archaeology of the Oakland Museum in the late 1800's. Does this show man and dinosaur living at the same time?

Source: "Arizona Highways". E. Scoyen, 27 July 1951 p.36-39.

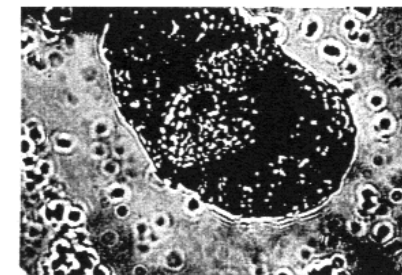


**16) Sculptures of Extinct Birds.**

Jose Diaz Bolio, a Mexican archaeologist discovered ancient Mayan sculptures of a bird like an Archaeopteryx. This would create a 130 million year discrepancy between Archaeopteryx extinction and man's first appearance. Archaeopteryx and man should never have met if evolution is true. Source: Science Digest, "Serpent Bird of the Mayans" 64 (Nov. 1968).

**17) Five Toed Llama Etchings on Pottery.** Evolution claims 5 toed Llamas were extinct 30 million years ago. Source: R.L. Wysong, p.378.

18) **Pollen in Pre-Cambrian Strata.** Pollen from Angiosperm and Gymnosperm trees (woody plants supposedly 260 million years old have been found in Pre Cambrian Hakati shale in the Grand Canyon (supposedly 570 million years old). The problem here for evolutionists is conifer pollen existing 300 million years before it appeared on earth. Some spores are stained with red oxide from surrounding rocks, thus proving that the spores are not from present day contamination.



Source: Nature, R. Stainforth, 210 (1966) p.292.

#### 4. FLOOD EVIDENCE

Creationists state that all geological history can be explained by creation and a worldwide flood in the last 6000 years. Consider the following evidence for this:

##### 1. Pre-Cambrian void, then abundant, complex Cambrian fossils

Pre-Cambrian rocks are the pre-Flood basement.

Post-Cambrian rocks are the post-Flood fossil rich strata. Earliest Cambrian rocks (supposedly 500 million years old) contain highly complex, diversified animal fossils which suddenly appeared.

**Question:** How could this complex range of fauna evolve so suddenly and quickly?

This was as unexplainable to Darwin as it is to Evolutionists today.

**Answer:** Creationists easily explain this as the pre-Flood, post-Flood demarcation.

The "2 billion year" geological column used to support the evolution of life, is actually a record of the destruction of life by the worldwide flood.

The geological column is a record of life's departure, not of life's coming.

The geological column represents 2 or 3 months deposition not 2 billion years, as this chart shows:

| Creation-Flood Model    |          |                                                                                           |           |
|-------------------------|----------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| Evolution Model         |          |                                                                                           |           |
| PRESENT<br>thousands    | PRESENT  | NO SIGNIFICANT FOSSILIZATION OR SEDIMENTATION                                             | thousands |
| GEOMETABLE<br>billions  | FLOOD    | AQUEOUS BURIAL OF BILLIONS OF LIVING FORMS--FOSSILS<br><br>VAST EROSION AND SEDIMENTATION | months    |
| PRECAMBRIAN<br>billions | PREFLOOD | CRYSTALLINE BASEMENT ROCKS: PREFLOOD ROCKS MINUS THOSE REMOVED BY THE FLOOD               | thousands |

**2. Fossilisation.** The existence of billions of plant and animal fossils preserved in the earth's crust speaks of a flood catastrophe. The fossil record is not "incomplete" as evolutionists argue, (incomplete only because it does not contain the links they need to prove evolution), but is quantitatively huge, with a greater variety of species than are alive today.

Consider these fossil examples supporting the worldwide flood:

- i) **Coal and Oil Reserves** even in polar regions can only be explained by the catastrophic burial of billions of plants and animals. Coal (fossil plants) were deposited by a water catastrophe, not by slow accumulation in swamps. Fossil trees extend through several layers of coal.
- ii) **Mammoths** by the millions cover about 14% of the earth's surface from Siberia to Alaska, frozen so rapidly that their flesh is edible today.
- iii) **Fossil Dinosaur Bones.**
  - in Dinosaur National monument Utah contain over 300 different kinds of dinosaurs.
  - in Geisseltal Germany, we find remains of 6000 fossil vertebrates.
- iv) **Closed Clams.** We find millions of fossil closed clams in a 3 foot stratum in Texas. Clams do not live packed together like this. Clam shells will open unless buried before death.
- v) Billions of **fossilised fish**, contorted in agony over 10,000 square miles, with 1000 fish in one square metre are found in England.
- vi) Millions of **fossil trilobites** rolled into defensive balls, and although marine, are found 7000 feet high on mountains.
- vii) **800 billion** fossils of **amphibians, reptiles and fish** covering 200,000 square miles in the Karoo formation of South Africa.
- viii) **Rain drops, ripple marks, worm trails, animal tracks, droppings, insect wing detail and feathers** are fossilised.
- ix) **Sharks** flattened to  $\frac{1}{4}$  inch thick with the tail still upright suggest sudden catastrophic burial.
- x) **Rhinoceroses, camels, pigs,** etc. make up 9,000 fossil animals in one hill at Agate Springs, Nebraska.
- xi) A 14 foot **Porthus fish** has swallowed a 6 foot **Gillicus** fish, with no signs of digestion.
- xii) A **Perch** swallowing a **Herring** is caught in the action by very quick burial at fossil lake Wyoming. (Fig. )

Was deposition slow or rapid?

**Question:** Where is one example of fossilisation occurring on a scale today equivalent to the magnitude of fossil graveyards worldwide? Creationists insist that: "Fossilisation is unnatural, abnormal, catastrophic, quick and the exception. When we see worldwide fossilisation, and noting that water is required for fossilisation to occur, then we are pointed to Noah's flood. The geological column does not record the coming of life, but the going and demise of life."

The scientific community is aware of this, but they ignore it and shelve it to keep faith in uniformitarian evolution.

3. **Polystrate Trees.** Crossing several rock strata are trees preserved as well at their tops as at their bottoms. These fossil trees bridge an evolutionary imagined time span of millions of years, that would preclude their "in place" growth and fossilisation.



**Question:** Was this tree standing unweathered for millions of years while strata was slowly deposited all around it?

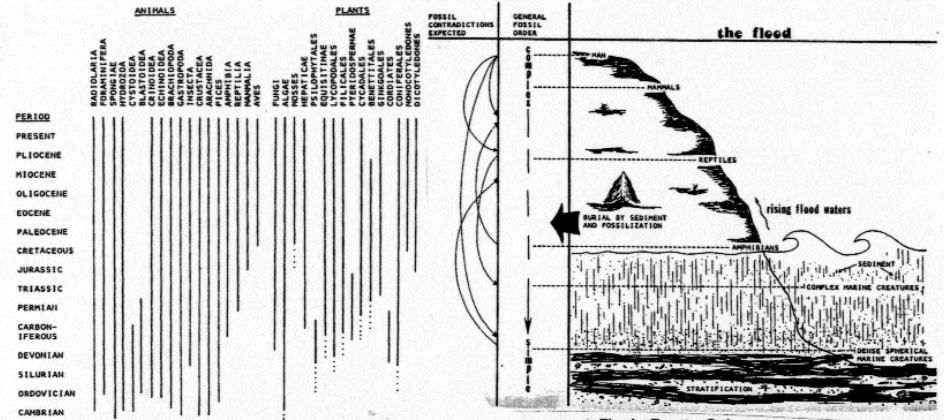
**Answer:** No! The sediment and tree were moved into place at the same time.

This fossil tree spans 20 feet of strata at Tennessee. Slow deposition of rock (uniformity) would not allow a tree to be fossilised before it would rot and fall over.

4. **Simple to Complex by Flood Fossil Sorting.**

We observe a general sorting of fossils from simple, spherical, dense sea creatures to less dense, irregular shaped, complex creatures higher up.

- a) **Evolutionists** interpret this to mean that simple creatures lower down evolved to complex creatures higher up over time.
- b) **Creationists** match these observations with the sorting effect produced by Noah's Flood, as follows:
  - i) Initial effects of the Flood would be to trap **smaller, simple, spherical, dense** sea creatures like **trilobites** in sediment.
  - ii) Then **plants** and **trees**, being immobile, would be swept off the earth and deposited, becoming coal of today.
  - iii) **Amphibians**, living close to the water's edge and being relatively slow moving would be deposited next.
  - iv) **Reptiles** and **Dinosaurs** living further inland and being relatively slow moving (eg. brontosaurus) would be trapped next.
  - v) **Land mammals** and **birds** being faster-moving and living further inland would be next deposited (eg. lions).
  - vi) Finally, **man**, being more intelligent at fleeing to higher ground would be the last ones overcome by the Flood, and therefore appear on top of the rock strata. The final effect would be simple organisms lower in the sediment to complex organisms higher up in the sediment, although contradictions to this order would be expected due to randomness of the flood action. This is precisely what we see as predicted by Noah's Flood.



**Fossil Record**  
The above vertical lines depict the existence of fossil forms of each of the major groups of plants and animals as they exist in the various geological strata. There is a noted absence of inter-connecting forms (evolutionary tree branches), and the fossils appear "suddenly" as the Cambrian. (From W. Barland: THE FOSSIL RECORD)

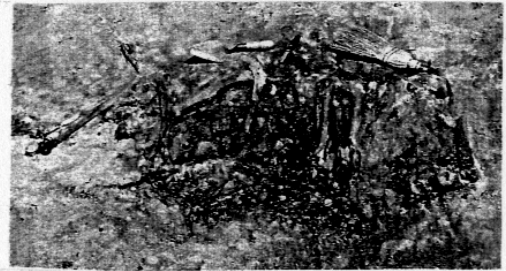
**Flood Fossil Order**  
A flood would create, in general, a fossil order from simple to complex due to hydrodynamic selectivity, ecological zonation, and attempts to flee to higher elevations. A flood might also explain the frequent contradictions to this general order.



**Squashed Trilobites**  
This shoe impression, showing heels, has trilobites squashed in the toe and heel. Actually, there is only one imprint that has split in half like a book. The arrow points to the trilobite in the heel. (Courtesy C. Swick)

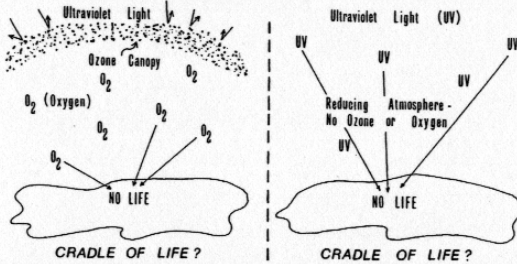
**Fossil human and dinosaur footprints along the Paluxy River in Glen Rose, Texas. This shows that man and dinosaurs lived at the same time.**

- HOUSE (ORDERED EFFECT).....DEMANDS.....A COMPETENT CAUSE-- INTELLIGENCE
- COMPUTER SYSTEM (MORE.....DEMANDS.....A COMPETENT CAUSE-- ORDERED EFFECT).....MORE INTELLIGENCE
- LIFE (A VASTLY ORDERED.....DEMANDS.....A COMPETENT CAUSE-- EFFECT).....VAST INTELLIGENCE
- CHAOS AND DEGRADATION.....DEMANDS.....A COMPETENT CAUSE-- (AN EFFECT WITH NO ORDER).....NATURAL, MINDLESS SPONTANEOUS PROCESSES



**Bones in 100 Million Year Old Rock**  
This is one of two skeletons found in rock that is age-dated at 100 million years old. Note articulations. (F. Barnes, Moab, Utah)

Thus we have the conundrum: If oxygen were in the primitive atmosphere, life could not have arisen because the chemical precursors would have been destroyed through oxidation; if oxygen were not in the primitive atmosphere, then neither would have been ozone, and if ozone were not present to shield the chemical precursors of life from ultraviolet light, life could not have arisen. The evolutionist is in the position of "not being able to live with it, and not being able to live without it!"



Atmospheric Puzzle



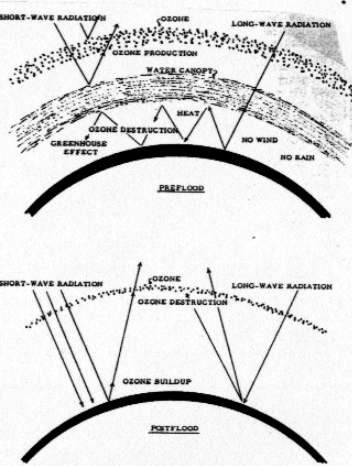
(Photo by C. L. Burdick)

CONTEMPORANEOUS FOOTPRINTS OF MAN AND DINOSAUR.

These tracks were both cut from the Paluxy River Bed near Glen Rose, Texas, in supposedly Cretaceous strata, plainly disproving the evolutionist's contention that the dinosaurs were extinct some 70 million years before man "evolved."

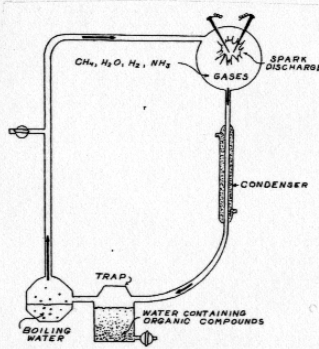
| CRITERION                    | SIMILAR                 | DISSIMILAR       |
|------------------------------|-------------------------|------------------|
| EYE ANATOMY                  | MAN-OCTOPUS             |                  |
| HEART ANATOMY                | MAN-PIG                 |                  |
| PRONATOR QUADRATUS           | MAN-JAPANESE SALAMANDER |                  |
| FLAGELLUM                    | MAN-RODENT              |                  |
| ACETYLCHOLINE                | MAN-PLANT               |                  |
| HISTAMINE                    | MAN-PLANT               |                  |
| BLOOD SPECIFIC GRAVITY       | MAN-FROG                | MAN-MONKEY       |
| RED BLOOD CELL CONCENTRATION | MAN-FISH                | MAN-SHEEP        |
| HEMOGLOBIN                   | MAN-RODENT NODULES      |                  |
| ABO AND RH BLOOD FACTORS     | MAN-RODENT              | MOTHER-CHILD     |
| CALCIUM-PROSPHORBUS          |                         |                  |
| CARBONATE                    | MAN-TURTLE              | DOG-CAT          |
| CYTOCHROME C                 | MAN-SUNFLOWER           | HOLD-SUNFLOWER   |
|                              | MAN-BULLFROG            | RATTLESNACK-FROG |

Similarity Contradictions  
There are many similarities that can be used to support proposed evolutionary relationships. However, the argument from similarity cannot be consistently applied since some similarities and dissimilarities contradict evolutionary relationships.



Canopy Implications

These two drawings depict hypothetical atmospheric conditions before and after the flood. In pre-flood times the water canopy would be expected to: (1) shield the earth from short-wave radiation; (2) trap long-wave radiation near the earth; (3) thicken the ozone canopy due to the entrapment of ozone-destroying long-wave radiation under the canopy; (4) level temperatures—greenhouse effect; (5) high longevity due to decreased mutations. With the loss of the canopy after the flood we would expect (bottom): (1) ozone buildup on earth; (2) increased short-wave radiation on earth; (3) temperature differentials yielding winds, rain, freezing and baking; (4) a drop in longevity due to increased ozone, radiation and mutations.



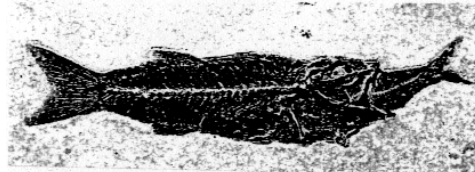
Spark Discharge Apparatus

In the Miller-Urey apparatus, the gases, methane, water, hydrogen and ammonia are subjected to spark discharges. These gases were supposedly the major gases of the primitive earth's atmosphere. The spark discharges are suggested to simulate lightning bolts. The products of the spark move into a trap as it is believed the early organic chemicals would have fallen into the oceans.

|                       | MAN TRANSGRESSES | DIVINE DESTRUCTION | FAVORED FAMILY | ARC PROVIDED | WATER DESTRUCTION | HUMAN SEED SAVED | ANIMAL SEED SAVED | UNIVERSAL DESTRUCTION | LANDING ON MOUNTAIN | SEEDS SENT OUT | SURVIVORS WORSHIP | DIVINE FAVOR ON SAVED |
|-----------------------|------------------|--------------------|----------------|--------------|-------------------|------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|----------------|-------------------|-----------------------|
| ASSYRIO-BABYLONIA (A) |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| ASSYRIO-BABYLONIA (B) |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| PERSSIA (A)           |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| PERSSIA (B)           |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| STYRIA                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| ASIA MINOR            |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| GREECE                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| EGYPT                 |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| LITHUANIA             |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| WALES                 |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| SCANDINAVIA (A)       |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| SCANDINAVIA (B)       |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| LAPLAND               |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| RUSSIA                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| CHINA                 |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| INDIA (A)             |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| INDIA (B)             |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| ALASKA                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| ESQUIMAUX(CANADA)     |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| THLINIKUT (A)         |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| THLINIKUT (B)         |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| CREE                  |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| CHEROKEE (S. S.)      |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| HAWAII                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| LENHI LENAPE          |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| PAPAGOS(MEXICO)       |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| PIMAS                 |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| TOLTECS               |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| AZTECS                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| HIDOGGAN              |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| NICARAGUA             |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| PERU                  |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| BRAZIL                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| LEWARD ISLANDS        |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| FUJI ISLANDS (A)      |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| FUJI ISLANDS (B)      |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| ANDAMAN ISLAND        |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| HAWAII                |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |
| SUMATRA               |                  |                    |                |              |                   |                  |                   |                       |                     |                |                   |                       |

Flood Legend Features

The above chart depicts principle ideas from flood traditions of some cultures around the world that hold non-Biblical accounts. The "X's" represent either partial or full representation of Biblical features. (Modified from B. Nelson, (Ref. 22) p. 188)



Fossil perch preserved in the act of swallowing a herring. Found in Eocene varves of Fossil Lake Wyoming. Rapid burial must have occurred to preserve this act.



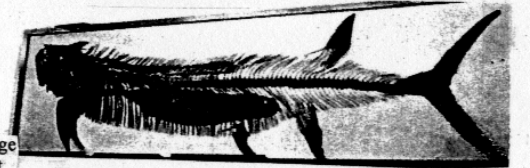
Niagara Falls today showing part of the 7 mile gorge that has, until recently, been cut at about 4 to 5 feet a year. Dotted lines show the position of the Falls at the time of Lyell's visit in 1841. (Ontario Ministry of Tourism and Recreation).



Fossil Graveyards: The Agate Springs, Nebraska fossil Graveyard contains about 9000 fossil animals in one hill (Rhinoceroses, camels, pigs, etc appear here).

SCIENTIFIC DISCIPLINES ESTABLISHED BY BIBLE-BELIEVING SCIENTISTS

| Discipline                   | Scientist                        |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Antiseptic Surgery           | Joseph Lister (1827-1912)        |
| Bacteriology                 | Louis Pasteur (1822-1895)        |
| Calculus                     | Isaac Newton (1642-1727)         |
| Chemistry                    | Robert Boyle (1627-1691)         |
| Comparative Anatomy          | Georges Cuvier (1769-1832)       |
| Computer Science             | Charles Babbage (1792-1871)      |
| Dimensional Analysis         | Lord Rayleigh (1842-1919)        |
| Dynamics                     | Isaac Newton (1642-1727)         |
| Electronics                  | John Ambrose Fleming (1849-1945) |
| Electrodynamics              | James Clerk Maxwell (1831-1879)  |
| Electromagnetics             | Michael Faraday (1791-1867)      |
| Energetics                   | Lord Kelvin (1824-1907)          |
| Entomology of Living Insects | Henri Fabre (1823-1915)          |
| Field Theory                 | Michael Faraday (1791-1867)      |
| Fluid Mechanics              | George Stokes (1819-1903)        |
| Galactic Astronomy           | William Herschel (1738-1822)     |
| Gas Dynamics                 | Robert Boyle (1627-1691)         |
| Genetics                     | Gregor Mendel (1822-1884)        |
| Glacial Geology              | Louis Agassiz (1807-1873)        |
| Gynecology                   | James Simpson (1811-1870)        |
| Hydraulics                   | Leonardo da Vinci (1452-1519)    |
| Hydrography                  | Matthew Maury (1806-1873)        |
| Hydrostatics                 | Blaise Pascal (1623-1662)        |
| Ichthyology                  | Louis Agassiz (1807-1873)        |
| Isotopic Chemistry           | William Ramsay (1852-1916)       |
| Natural History              | John Ray (1627-1705)             |
| Non-Euclidean Geometry       | Bernhard Riemann (1826-1866)     |
| Oceanography                 | Matthew Maury (1806-1873)        |
| Optical Mineralogy           | David Brewster (1781-1868)       |
| Paleontology                 | John Woodward (1645-1728)        |
| Pathology                    | Rudolph Virchow (1821-1902)      |
| Physical Astronomy           | Johann Kepler (1571-1630)        |
| Reversible Thermodynamics    | James Joule (1818-1889)          |
| Statistical Thermodynamics   | James Clerk Maxwell (1831-1879)  |
| Stratigraphy                 | Nicholas Steno (1638-1686)       |
| Systematic Biology           | Carolus Linnaeus (1707-1778)     |
| Thermodynamics               | Lord Kelvin (1824-1907)          |
| Thermokinetics               | Humphrey Davy (1778-1829)        |
| Vertebrate Paleontology      | Georges Cuvier (1769-1832)       |



The smaller six-foot ingested fish, Gillicus, shows no Sign of digestion by the larger 14 footfish, Portheus. Was burial rapid or slow?

**CREATION - EVOLUTION EVIDENCE**

1. BIOCHEMICAL STEREOSPECIFICITY
2. PROTEIN AND DNA PROBABILITIES
3. DNA AND INFORMATION SCIENCE
4. EFFECT OF MUTATIONS
5. GENETIC AND FOSSIL FIXITY
6. LACK OF TRANSITIONS
7. REVERSION TO TYPE
8. BIOCHEMICAL BIAS
9. COMPLEX ORGANS AND RELATIONSHIPS
10. SELFISH NATURAL SELECTION VS SELFLESS REPRODUCTION
11. MASS ACTION VS AGOUROUS SYNTHESIS
12. SECOND LAW OF THERMODYNAMICS
13. NEED FOR INTELLIGENT MANEUVERINGS IN EXPERIMENTS
14. REDUCTIONISM
15. LAW OF BIOGENESIS
16. EFFECT OF TIME
17. LIFE VERIFIED TO ONLY ABOUT 3000 BC
18. FOSSILS LOOK LIKE MODERN FORMS
19. PRE-CAMBRIAN VOID
20. FIRST LAW OF THERMODYNAMICS
21. EFFECT CANNOT BE GREATER THAN CAUSE
22. PRESENT-DAY UNIFORMITY
23. FOSSIL GRAVEYARDS SUGGESTING CATASTROPY ETC. . . .

| CREATION: | EVOLUTION: |
|-----------|------------|
| 1.        | 1.         |
| 2.        | 2.         |
| 3.        | 3.         |
| 4.        | 4.         |
| 5.        | 5.         |

- |                      |                  |
|----------------------|------------------|
| 1. Glycine           | L-Alanine        |
| 2. D-Alanine         | L-Valine         |
| 3. D-Valine          | L-Leucine        |
| 4. D-Leucine         | L-Isoleucine     |
| 5. D-Isoleucine      | L-Serine         |
| 6. D-Serine          | L-Threonine      |
| 7. D-Threonine       | L-Cysteine       |
| 8. D-Cysteine        | L-Cystine        |
| 9. D-Cystine         | L-Methionine     |
| 10. D-Methionine     | L-Glutamic Acid  |
| 11. D-Glutamic Acid  | L-Aspartic Acid  |
| 12. D-Aspartic Acid  | L-Lysine         |
| 13. D-Lysine         | L-Arginine       |
| 14. D-Arginine       | L-Histidine      |
| 15. D-Histidine      | L-Phenylalanine  |
| 16. D-Phenylalanine  | L-Tyrosine       |
| 17. D-Tyrosine       | L-Tryptophan     |
| 18. D-Tryptophan     | L-Proline        |
| 19. D-Proline        | L-Hydroxyproline |
| 20. D-Hydroxyproline |                  |

There are about 20 different amino acids. Each amino acid, except glycine, can exist in both D and L stereoisomer forms. Did all these form by chance and fit together perfectly in DNA?

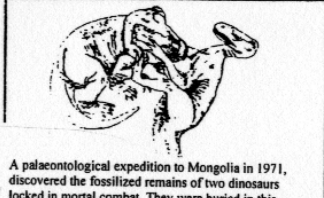
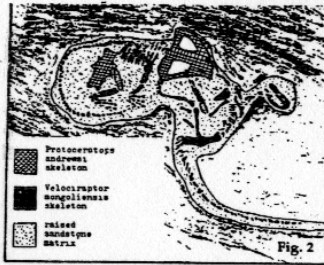
To decide between evolution and creation, we list the evidence supporting each model. We accept the model with the greatest evidence, and reject the model contradicted by the data.



The hammer pictured above was found in limestone rock dated by evolutionists at 300 million years old. It was found near London, Texas. The hammer is man made. What does this prove? It proves that man lived when limestone was laid down. Was it 300 million years ago? No. It was laid down in the Flood.

**Odd, lumpy universe disturbs cosmologists**

The universe is out of shape. It should be symmetrical and smooth with an occasional wrinkle, but a new portrait reveals unsightly bulges which have cosmologists scratching their heads. "It looks like God made the universe and then dropped it", cosmologist Paul Davies said of the image or "map". Specifically, the lopsided shape doesn't fit with the idea that the universe expanded abruptly and symmetrically in the instant after the big bang. 13.7 billion years ago. The troublesome map was produced by a team led by University of Pennsylvania astrophysicist Max Tegmark. They created it using data collected by the Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe, launched in 2001. But what's going on has Professor Tegmark baffled: "It's very bizarre" he said. Weekend Australian, March 8, 2003.



A palaeontological expedition to Mongolia in 1971, discovered the fossilized remains of two dinosaurs locked in mortal combat. They were buried in this position when they both perished in a sudden watery catastrophe. That both creatures died while fighting was confirmed by the clawed hands of Velociraptor – a meat eating dinosaur – were still grasping the armoured skull of a plant-eating Protoceratops. Even the claws on one foot of Velociraptor were positioned on top of the other animal's skull to gain better leverage to attack its victim. The huge, powerful beak of Protoceratops had buried itself within the soft underbelly of Velociraptor.

5. **Flood Traditions.** Every ancient culture has a Flood tradition. A survey of 120 tribes in North, South and Central America found every one to have a flood tradition. A post-Flood population would carry Flood ideas with them as they scattered across the world. Flood accounts of isolated groups would change over time, but the basic ideas of a universal Flood, safety in a ship, with few people surviving would survive. Noah's ark would have been almost impossible to capsize, having a length to width ratio of 6 to 1 (ie. 300:50 cubits).

Consider these Flood traditions, so similar to the Bible:

- a) **Babylon:** Berosus (300 BC) tells of the archives of the temple of Marduk: Xisuthros, a king, was warned by one of the gods to build a ship, and take into it his friends and relatives and all different kinds of animals, with all necessary food. Whereupon he built an immense ship, which was stranded in Armenia. Upon subsidence of the Flood, he sent out birds; the third time, they returned not. He came out, built an altar, and sacrificed.
- b) **Egyptians** had a legend that the gods at one time purified the earth by a great Flood, from which only a few shepherds escaped.
- c) **Greek** tradition: Deucalion, warned that the gods were going to bring a flood upon the earth, for its great wickedness, built an ark, which rested on Mount Parnassus. A dove was sent out twice.
- d) **Hindu** tradition: Manu, warned, built a ship, in which he alone escaped from a Deluge which destroyed all creatures.
- e) **Chinese** tradition: Fa-He, founder of Chinese civilization, is represented as having escaped from a Flood sent because man had rebelled against heaven. He and his wife, 3 sons and 3 daughters were spared.
- f) **England:** Druids had a legend that the world had been re-peopled from a righteous patriarch who had been saved in a strong ship from a Flood sent to destroy man for his wickedness.
- g) **Polynesians** have stories of a Flood from which 8 people escaped.
- h) **Mexicans:** One man, his wife and children, were saved in a ship from a worldwide Flood.
- i) **Peruvians:** One man and one woman were saved in a box that floated on the flood waters.
- j) **American Indians:** Various legends, in which 1, 3 or 8 persons were saved in a boat above the waters on a high mountain.
- k) **Greenland:** The earth once tilted over, and all men were drowned, except one man and one woman, who re-peopled the earth. (International Standard Bible Encyclopaedia.) Calculations show that Noah's Ark only needed to be half-full to carry pairs of all kinds of land animals and food.
- l) **The Epic of Gilgamesh:** George Smith of the British museum found in tablets from the library of King Assurbanipal at Nineveh, Flood accounts very similar to the Bible's. These accounts were copied from tablets of the First Dynasty of Ur (2200 BC), which when later found contained expressions such as: "the age before the Flood". Gilgamesh, living about 200 years after the Flood, tells how he visited Noah on the island of Utnapishtim, who tells the story of the Flood and his escape, as follows:  
*"The assembly of the gods decided to send a Deluge. They said, On the sinner let his sin rest. O man of Shuruppak, build a ship, save your life. Construct it with six stories, each with seven parts. Smear it with bitumen inside and outside. Launch it upon the ocean. Take into the ship seed of life of every kind. I built it. With all that I*

*had I loaded it, with silver, gold, and all living things that I had. I embarked upon the ship with my family and kindred. I closed the door. The appointed time arrived. I observed the appearance of the day. It was terrible. All light was turned to darkness. The rains poured down. The storm raged like a battle charge on mankind. The boat trembled. The gods wept. I looked out upon the sea. All mankind was turned to clay, like logs floating about. The tempest ceased. The flood was over. The ship grounded on Mt. Zazir. On the seventh day I sent out a dove; it returned. I sent out a swallow; it returned. I sent out a raven; it alighted, it waded about; it croaked; it did not return. I disembarked. I appointed a sacrifice. The gods smelled the sweet savour. They said, Let it be done no more."*

## 5. EFFECTS OF THE FLOOD

It is impossible to understand anthropology and geology without understanding the effects of the Flood. Evolution is based on uniformitarianism. Creation explains geological features on the basis of Flood catastrophism. Evolutionary uniformitarianists declare that all geological features were caused by gentle processes and natural forces that are operating today.

Uniformitarianists find difficulty in explaining the causes of:

- 1) mountain building
- 2) geosynclines
- 3) petroleum
- 4) coal measures
- 5) glaciation
- 6) world wide warm climates especially at the poles.
- 7) mineral deposits
- 8) penepains (mountains flattened by erosion)
- 9) saline deposits, nor can they explain the nature of
- 10) overthrusting
- 11) vast volcanic terrains
- 12) continental uplift processes
- 13) metamorphism
- 14) granitization
- 15) extinction of whole faunas.

Evolutionary Uniformitarianists have difficulty explaining the cause of:

- 1) **Immense fossil graveyards.** 75% of land is covered by sedimentary rocks which contain many billions of fossils of plants and animals that died suddenly. Yet fossilization does not normally occur today, because it requires sudden death, immediate burial and great pressure. This is exactly what happened in the Flood. Fossil deposits like the 800 billion vertebrate fossils in the Karro Beds off Africa are not forming today. Immense fossil beds such as dinosaur graveyards in the Gobi Desert, Agate Springs Quarry in Nebraska, the Rockies, Black Hills, Sicilian hippopotamus beds, etc, being thrown together in disorderly masses can only be explained by a worldwide Flood.

As with many animals, dinosaurs gathered together in times of danger. The rising floodwaters finally overtook and buried them in "dinosaur graveyards". In the Dinosaur National Monument in Utah and Colorado, over 300 dinosaurs have been excavated.

- 2) **Dinosaur Extinction.** Most species are already extinct. What caused all the dinosaurs to become extinct so quickly? The worldwide Flood explains this perfectly.

- 3) **No Transitional forms** between species in the past or today. If evolution was true, we'd expect millions of transitional fossils, but we find none. Why? Because evolution never happened. Each twig on the imaginary plant and animal "family trees" is a distinct plant or

animal type, with no intermediate life forms to connect the twigs. There are no branches, no trunk, only twigs. The rest of the tree is imaginary.

- 4) **PreCambrian Void of Fossils.** Beneath Cambrian strata, we find no fossils at all because the Precambrian void was the Pre-Flood basement rocks. This is astonishing and disappointing to evolutionists.

- 5) **Sudden Explosion of Life in Cambrian Strata.** The lowest stratum with fossils is called "Cambrian", having at least 1500 species of complex invertebrates, all marine of which 60% are trilobites and 30% are brachiopods. Why did so much complex life suddenly appear?

Answer: They didn't evolve, but being the slowest moving creatures, they were buried first in the rising flood waters.

- 6) **Fossil Placement** is from slow moving creatures in the lowest strata to faster moving creatures in higher strata, and not from simple to complex creatures. This, along with many misplaced fossils show that the Creation/Flood model better explains fossil placement.

- 7) **Polystrate Fossil Trees** extending vertically through up to 20 feet of multiple rock strata. These trees were quickly covered by the strata, otherwise each tree would have decomposed while waiting 100,000 years for strata to form around it. From top to bottom, these trees sometimes span "millions of years" of strata. Obviously, both the trees and sediments around them were deposited at the same time. The Flood easily explains this, but evolutionary uniformitarianism cannot possibly explain it. In May 1980, the explosion of Mount St. Helens filled Spirit Lake with vertically floating logs due to the weight of their roots. In the Flood, as vertically floating logs washed into an area, they were covered rapidly by sediment, thus forming polystrate fossil trees.

- 8) **Coal and Oil Formation.** Most geologists agree that coal came from ancient plants and oil came from ancient marine animals. Neither coal nor oil is being formed naturally today. No coal or oil is found in Pleistocene (ice-age) deposits, but instead was quickly laid down during the Flood.

"Petroleum occurs in rocks of all ages from the Cambrian to the Pliocene, but no petroleum has been formed naturally since the Pliocene." (Ben B. Cox, Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists, May 1946, p. 647).

Question: Why did no petroleum form after the Pliocene era?

This is a mystery to evolutionary geologists, but it is no problem to Flood geology.

Answer: From the beginning of the Cambrian to the end of the Pliocene was when the Flood produced all the oil and coal reserves. Because of Flood conditions, other things were also deposited in those coal strata, such as boulders, fossil trees, and shale and sandstone strata in between coal deposits.

- 9) **Overthrusts.** Evolution requires that strata with fish fossils (of "older evolutionary age") will be underneath strata with land animal fossils (of "younger evolutionary ages"). Instead, we find examples of what evolutionists call "overthrusts" with "older fossil bearing strata" on top of "younger fossil bearing strata". Evolution is totally baffled by this reversal of strata sequence.

Question: How can the Swiss Matterhorn and North American Appalachians rest on top of what evolutionists think is younger strata?

Answer: The Flood turbulence explains this easily as follows:

At some point, some land animals and plants (evolutionary younger) were covered by Flood-borne sediments. Then, during the Flood, waters with fish (evolutionary older) were carried in from some distant location and deposited in a pile of sediment above the land creatures.

- 10) **Worldwide Flood Legends.** Races and tribes from all over the world have traditions about a great Flood that covered the whole earth.

- a) One survey of **120 tribal groups** in North, Central and South **America** revealed Flood traditions in each group. (International Standard Bible Encyclopedia, Vol. 2, p.822).
- b) Another survey of ancient literature lists **41 nations with Flood legends**, including: Assyria, Babylon, Alaska, Asia Minor, Aztecs, Brazil, Cherokee, China, Egypt, Eskimo, Fiji, Greece, Hawaii, India, Italy, Lithuania, Nicaragua, Mexico, Persia, Peru, Russia, Scandinavia, Sumatra, Syria, Wales, etc. ("The Deluge Story in Stone", B. Nelson (1968)).
- c) Sir James G. Frazer in "Folklore in the O.T." (1919), Vol. 1, p.146-330 lists **143 ancient Flood records**, including: 11 from ancient Greece, 6 from Europe, 29 from Persia and India, 31 from Australia, Southeast Asia and the Pacific, 63 from North, Central and South America and 3 from Africa. ("Symposium on Creation IV, (1972), p.36-38, Donald W. Patten).

**11) Chinese language characters** record ancient Biblical Flood and Creation details, such as:

- a) **Boat** in Chinese, combines the words vessel and eight (Genesis 7:7,13; 8:13).
- b) **Rebellion** and **Confusion** in Chinese, combine the words tongue and walking, reminding us of the scattering of mankind at the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11:4-9).
- c) **Devil** in Chinese, combines the words man, garden and private, reminding us of the temptation of man in the garden of Eden (Genesis 3:1-7). ('God's Promise to the Chinese', Nelson, Chock, Broadberry, 1997).

## II. PRE FLOOD CONDITIONS

**12) Warmer climate.** "And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were UNDER the firmament (ocean) from the waters which were ABOVE the firmament: (water vapour canopy)." (Genesis 1:6,7).

The firmament separated the water canopy above the earth from the ocean below on the earth.

A great pre-flood water canopy would imply several things, much of which is scientifically verifiable:

- a) **Greenhouse Effect** world-wide. The water canopy would have captured long-wave radiation (heat) to heat the earth. Similarly, the dense clouds of Venus give it an even temperature. We have pole to pole evidence that the pre-flood world was subtropical. Under the ice caps we find palm leaves, fruit trees, vast subtropical forests, tropical marine creatures, and coal beds, all explained by a pre-flood water canopy. Fossil-bearing rocks from all "ages" were laid down during a warm climate worldwide, with none of today's climate zones.
- b) **Arctic fossils** are similar to those of low latitudes. (W.J. Miller, An Introduction to Historical Geology (1952), p. 116).
- c) **Large coal deposits** are found in Antarctica, proving that it once had a warm climate with much vegetation and large trees.
- d) In **Alaska** and the **Arctic Circle** have been found fossilized mangroves, palm trees, a 90 foot high plum tree with green leaves and ripe fruit, mammoths, sabre tooth tigers, etc.

**13) Lower Sea Levels.** In the past, the ocean basins filled up with water, as seen by extinct volcanoes hundreds of feet under today's sea level with their tops flattened off (seamounts). What caused them?

Answer: Volcanic activity began before the Flood ended. These volcanoes in the ocean basin had their summits eroded away by storm and wave action as sea levels reached their summits. The oceans kept filling and rising, and the horizontal tops became submerged.

**14) Coral Atolls** are also explained by rising Flood sea levels. Coral only grows within 200 feet of the ocean surface, yet the remains of earlier coral are found much deeper in the ocean. As oceans neared their present level, coral atolls were built above seamounts.

**15) Similarities between plants and trees** in Brazil and West Africa imply that the South Atlantic did not exist as a broad ocean before the Flood.

## III. POST FLOOD EFFECTS

**16) Submarine Canyons** are found just where our major rivers enter the oceans. Many of these V-shaped canyons are extensions of major rivers, such as the Amazon Canyon, the Hudson Canyon, the Ganges Canyon, the Indus Canyon and the Congo Canyon. What forces could gouge out canyons that are sometimes 15,000 feet below sea level? These canyons could only have formed if the ocean level was then **lower**, and was gradually filled by floodwaters pouring from the skies through these rivers, then the ocean floors sank.

**17) Underwater River Channels** on the ocean floor. Modern sounding equipment has revealed thousands of river beds extending from the continents on the ocean floors, e.g. the Congo river runs 145 miles under the Atlantic ocean, the Hudson river has dug a channel 90-300 miles under the Atlantic Ocean.

**18) Large River Gorges** with small streams. In the past, these rivers carried a far greater volume of water, as seen by the many **large boulders** left in these gorges. Evolutionists think a little stream cut through solid rock over millions of years to produce these gorges. These rocks were not hard rock when first laid down by the flood, but **soft mud** and **loose sand**. The gorge was created by great quantities of this **soft mud being washed away** by enormous volumes of floodwaters receding in the few years after the Flood.

**19) Sedimentary rock strata** worldwide were all laid down during and after the Flood by its immense wave and storm erosion.

**20) Mountain Building.** There were no high mountains before the Flood. "all the **high hills**, that were under the whole heaven, were **covered**. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered. And all flesh died." (Genesis 7:14-21). Mountain building includes the production of our present folded and volcanic mountains and ranges, as well as raising of continental masses and sinking of ocean basins.

On the basis of fossil evidence, most scientists believe that most of our mountain ranges uplifted during the Pleistocene or late Pliocene periods (both of which occurred shortly after the flood). E.g. Alps, Andes and Himalayas mountains rose and sea basins sank. Water flowed into these basins, and under its great weight they sank even further.

Rock strata being water-logged and pliable folded up, down, sideways or was overturned, giving rise to our present great, non volcanic mountain ranges.

Most of the floodwaters (now in the oceans) came from underground, not from the skies (Genesis 7:11). This up-swelling of water in giant geysers caused violent upheavals underground. The ground became folded, crunched and twisted as it adapted to the huge forces unleashed, leading to continents rising and seafloors sinking.

**21) Vulcanism.** Flood water coming from underground, most likely would have been accompanied by volcanic eruptions. The volcanic ash shooting up into the water canopy would have provided the dust necessary to condense the water canopy into rain drops, thus causing the 40 days of rain.

Genesis 7:11 gives this as the order of events: "the same day were all the **fountains** of the great deep broken up, and the **windows** of heaven were opened".

Vast volcanic action would produce huge lava flows. This would explain the origin of today's Indian Deccan Plateau containing volcanic rock two miles deep, as well as the Igneous American Columbian plateau in NW USA covering 200,000 square miles and averaging 3000 feet deep.

When water came out of the ground, rocks shifted to fill these gaps, leaving huge cracks down which water flowed and contacted molten magna. The release of so much water from deep underground caused immense low and high pressures within the earth. Rocks shifted to fill these gaps, leaving huge cracks down which water flowed, hitting the molten rock. This caused exploding jets of lava to pour out of the earth's surface, producing thousands of volcanoes. For example, in 1883, the volcanic island of Krakatoa developed a sideways crack, through which seawater poured, flowing down the main vent hole. This caused the explosion which was heard 4800 kilometres away, produced tidal waves 130 feet high and drowned 36,000 people on nearby islands. It caused a worldwide temperature drop lasting 5 years. There are thousands of extinct volcanoes at Pleistocene (Flood) levels worldwide. Oozing lava built India's Deccan Plateau which in some places is 3 km deep. No ancient volcanic lava beds are ever found below the Cambrian level, because the Cambrian marks the beginning of the Flood.

Volcanic action occurred during and after the Flood as seen from pillow lavas formed when lava ejects from underwater volcanoes. Pillow lava is the most abundant volcanic rock on earth.

**22) Ice Age.** There are over 10,000 extinct land and underwater volcanoes worldwide. During the Flood they poured out so much smoke that they darkened the sky, resulting in rapid cooling of the earth. These pollutants would have remained 16-50 km high for many years, triggering the Ice Age.

A four-fold increase in atmospheric dust could decrease average surface temperature by 3 °C. Rapid cooling caused by thousands of volcanic explosions during and after the Flood, brought on the Ice Age.

**23) Animals frozen at the Poles** implies catastrophe, not uniformitarianism. In Siberia and Alaska, millions of mammoths and other animals have been snap-frozen in ice in some areas, and deposited in watery graves in other areas. These mammoths died suddenly, in intense cold and in great numbers. Death came so quickly that the swallowed vegetation is yet undigested in their stomachs and mouths. The Bereskovia Mammoth of Siberia had edible flesh. Its stomach contained 30 pounds of undigested subtropical vegetation, and its mouth was full of partly chewed food. The time between death and freezing can be determined accurately by the extent of water separation within the cell. Water begins to separate within the cell at death, and ceases to separate at freezing. The small extent of separated water indicates that they were rapidly frozen at temperatures below -150 F.

**Question:** What dropped the mammoths so quickly with such unearthly cold?

**Answer:** Frozen food experts say that these mammoths must have been frozen at well below -150F. Sled dogs have been in Arctic blizzards under -80F for days without freezing. Even the centre of these mammoths were snap frozen and undecomposed. These cold temperatures exist in Jupiter's satellites Callisto, Ganymede, Io and Europa, as well as in Saturn's icy rings, crust and satellites, along with Uranus and Neptune. If icy particles nearing -200F were deposited on earth from such a cosmic visitor, this could produce a great icy avalanche of supercooled ice that would immediately asphyxiate these animals, freezing their lungs solid. They would drop immediately followed by death and freezing within minutes. Wrangel, the explorer, observed on Bear Island (Medvizhi Ostrova) that the soil consisted of only sand, ice and so many mammoth bones that this seemed to be the chief substance on the island. Ice is conically stacked in places at 15,000 feet deep in the Arctic and 10,000 feet deep at Byrd Station in Antarctica. The Catastrophism model would suggest that:

a) the ice was transported across the solar system in a comet-like orbit to the Earth-moon region.

b) the second phase was a deflection of the cold, icy particles by earth's Van Allen radiation belts. These electrically charged particles of ice were redirected over the magnetic polar regions, reducing their velocity, causing them to descend over a vast magnetic polar area and concentrate in different locations during their descents, thus forming the centres or nodes of the ice mass and the snap freezing of all living things in the area. The effect of this was to:

- i) completely condense the pre-flood **water vapour canopy** that allowed tropical climates at the poles.
- ii) increase the earth's inclination from perpendicular to **23 ½ degrees**.
- iii) ultimately **raise sea levels** by 350 ft to 450 ft.
- iv) flood the **continental shelves**.
- v) cause **orogenic uplift** in the Pacific rim and Himalayas.
- vi) cause a bleeding of lava, forming new **basalt plateaus** on several continents.
- vii) cause a rash of over **10,000 new volcanoes** which further **reduced temperatures** worldwide.
- viii) cause **glacial scouring**.
- ix) increase **ocean salinity** due to increased rainfall and water running off continents and rivers.
- x) Bury billions of animals and trillions of plants, many being preserved today as **fossils**.
- xi) cause **early human civilization** to develop in glacier free areas such as Egypt, Mesopotamia, India and China. As the Ice Age retreated, civilization spread further.
- xii) Make human survivors and their early generations very **catastrophe-minded**.
- xiii) Ice sheets moved southward down the continents causing the **Ice Age and glaciation**.
- xiv) **Reduced human longevity**. See graph.

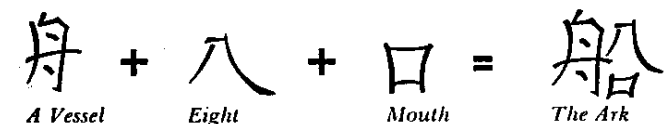
**24. Glaciation.** There is abundant evidence that northern Asia, all of Canada, and about 25% of USA were once covered by glacial ice. These were caused by:

- a) The darkening of the skies by volcanic dust,
- b) The loss of earth's thermal blanket, the water vapour canopy, which gave the pre Flood world a greenhouse effect. These glaciers scoured solid granite and left dumps of sediments and boulders at their sides and ends.

**25. Sudden Warming.** After the Flood, volcanic activity declined, the volcanic dust settled back to earth, and much of the earth warmed up again, causing a rather rapid receding of the glacial sheets. Sudden warming quickly increased the melting of ice, draining of glacial lakes, and water runoff through rivers and deltas into the oceans.

**26. Radiation, Size, Longevity.** The pre-Flood water canopy and great ozone canopy would have greatly shielded the earth from short-wave (high frequency) gamma, x-rays, and UV radiation. (This would have invalidated C-14 production and hence C-14 dating before the flood). These harmful rays cause mutations, and ageing. If these rays were largely kept out, we would expect greater health, lifespan and possibly size of pre-flood creatures. Some pre-Flood insects had 2 foot wing spans. Some birds had 30 foot wing spans. Some dinosaurs weighed 50 tons, some humans had feet 20 inches long. Today we are seeing larger squids in some areas due to higher carbon dioxide levels associated with global warming.

**Conclusion:** The facts taken as a whole point to a world-wide Flood and not to long ages of sedimentary strata production and evolution through transitional species.



The Chinese ideographs prior to the simplification of the written language in 1948, showing how the symbols were combined to form the specific word "Ark" in the context of the Genesis Flood. (Kang and Nelson 1979)



## 6. ASSUMPTIONS IN RADIODATING.

Evolutionists rely heavily on radiometric dating to give them the billions of years required for evolution to have any chance of happening. Major radiodating methods are:

- i) **Uranium – Thorium – Lead dating**, based on the decay of Uranium and Thorium into Radium, Helium and Lead.
- ii) **Rubidium – Strontium dating** based on the decay of Rubidium to Strontium.
- iii) **Potassium – Argon dating** based on the decay of Potassium into Argon and Calcium.

These dating methods are only accurate if certain assumptions **always** apply to **every** specimen tested, these assumptions being:

- i) Each system must be **closed** from any **contamination** of the parent or daughter products, from water, chemicals, changing radiation from space or rock pressure.
- ii) In the beginning there were **no daughter products in the sample**, only elements at the top of the radioactive chain were present. For example, all the U238 had no lead 206 in it; and no lead 206 existed anywhere else.

At creation, all things were created with the appearance of age. Radioactive minerals would be partially decayed on the first day. How far decayed? No one knows.

Evolutionists think that Polonium only occurred as a daughter product of Uranium decay, yet Robert Gentry's studies show that Polonium 218 was in granite when it was created in solid form.

It is impossible to know what was initially in any given sample of radioactive mineral.

- iii) The **decay rate must** have **always been the same**, and never have changed.  
The decay rate of any radioactive mineral can be altered:
  - a) If the mineral is hit by **high energy particles** from space (such as cosmic rays, neutrons, etc)
  - b) If there is, for a time, a **nearby radioactive mineral emitting radiation**.
  - c) If **physical pressure** is applied to the radioactive mineral.
  - d) If certain **chemicals** contact it.
- iv) If any **changes** occurred in the past in earth's **atmospheric protecting blanket**. Cosmic rays, photons, high energy mesons, etc. enter our atmosphere continually, some travelling up to 100 metres underground and 1400 metres underwater. If our atmosphere was more heavily water saturated than today, it would produce a major change in radioactive minerals decay rates. Before the Flood, there was much more water in the air.
- v) The **Van Allen radiation belt** encircling the earth about 450 miles above us is intensely radioactive. It emits 3000-4000 times as much radiation as cosmic rays entering the earth.  
Any **change in the Van Allen belt** would greatly affect the decay rate of radioactive minerals. But we know little about this belt or **whether it has changed in the past**, since it was only discovered in 1959.
- vi) John Joly of Trinity College, Dublin found evidence that the **long half-life minerals** have **varied in their decay rate in the past**. This would invalidate all possibilities of age calculation by radioactive methods. (A.F. Kovarik, Bulletin 80, National Research Council, June 1931, p. 107).

### **Why we cannot trust Uranium – Thorium – Lead Dating Methods.**

3 types of U/Th dating are:

- a) Uranium 238 decays to Lead 206, with a half-life of 4.5 billion years.
- b) Uranium 235 decays to Lead 207, with a half-life of 0.7 billion years.
- c) Thorium 232 decays to Lead 208, with a half-life of 14.1 billion years.

- 1) **Contamination:** Lead could be **mixed in** with the Uranium or Thorium. (Faul, Nuclear Geology, 1954)

- 2) **Leaching:** Some of the **Uranium** and its **daughter products** could have **leached out**. Lead can be leached out by **weak acid solutions**.
- 3) **Neutron capture:** **Lead 207** (thought to have been formed only by decaying Uranium 235), could have been formed from Lead 206 by capturing free neutrons from neighbouring rocks. Also **Lead 208** (thought of as forming only by Thorium 232 decay) could have been formed by capturing free neutrons from Lead 207. Lead 208 could have formed by capturing free neutrons from Lead 207. Cooke extensively checked this, and discovered that almost all radiogenic lead in the earth's crust could have been produced by **neutron capture** instead of by Uranium or Thorium decay. This alone totally invalidates Uranium and Thorium dating methods.

- 4) **Intense heat damages radiodating clock settings.**

Evolutionists think the earth was originally molten, yet molten rocks produce wild variations in radioactive materials clock settings.

**Question:** "Why do the radioactive ages of lava beds, laid down within a few weeks of each other, differ by millions of years?" (Electromagnetics and the Appearance of Age, Glen R. Morton).

### **Why we cannot trust Potassium Argon dating:**

Radioactive potassium decays into calcium and argon gas.

- 1) **Argon gas** has been found to quickly leave the mineral, escaping into other rocks and the atmosphere. (G.W. Wetherill, Science, Sep. 20, 1957, p.545).
- 2) **Potassium** can be **leached out of rocks**.  
Rancitelli and Fisher found that 60% of potassium can be leached out of an iron meteorite by distilled water in 4.5 hours. (Planetary Science Abstracts, 1967, p.167). Heavy rainfall transfers potassium from one location to another.  
It is unbelievable – but true – that potassium-argon dating is a key dating method used to date sea floor spreading from ocean bottom basalt lava.  
**Key:** Submerged volcanic rocks, produced by lava flows in 1800-1801 off the coast of Hawaii near Hualalai were dated using potassium-argon dating to range from 160 million years to 2960 million years (Science, Oct.11, 1968; Journal of Geophysical Research, July 15, 1968).  
**Note:** Just one major catastrophe – such as a worldwide Flood would have ruined the usefulness of all our radiodating methods because of:
  - i) **Massive contamination** problems as water, chemicals and radioactive substances moved from one place to another.
  - ii) **Major Radioactive rate changing activities** (such as atmospheric, magnetic and radioactivity changes) would have reset the radiodating clocks.
  - iii) Redistributing of **rock pressure** above radiogenic rocks would have reset their clocks.
  - iv) **Reversals** of the **earth's magnetic core** was caused by shock waves from surface events such as earthquakes, volcanoes, giant geysers, seafloor shrinking, and massive mountain building.  
**Note:** H.C. Dudley, in laboratory tests, changed the decay rates of 14 different radioisotopes by varying the pressure, temperature, magnetic field strength, stress, etc. (H.C. Dudley, "Radioactivity Re-examined", Chemical and Engineering News, April 7, 1975, p2).

All these forces operated during and after the Flood. They would have dramatically affected rocks radioactive clocks, thus invalidating all radiometric dating methods used today.

## 7. REFUTING EVOLUTIONARY EVIDENCE

Many High School and University Biology textbooks continue to give evidences of evolution which have been disproved years ago. Examples include:

1. **False Transitional Forms.** There are no examples of any species changing to another species, but evolutionists claim 6 examples hoping that people will be ignorant enough of scientific discoveries to believe evolution's claims. Remember that changes within a species is not evolution.

a) **The Horse Series.** Evolutionists have selected a variety of different sized animals, arranged them from small to large, and called them a "horse" series. A leading evolutionist says:

"The uniform continuous transformation of Hyracotherium (Eohippus) into Equus, so dear to the hearts of generations of textbook writers, never happened in nature."

(G.G Simpson, Life of the Past, (1953), p. 119). Note these problems with the "Horse Series":

i) The **number of rib bones does not agree with the sequence.** The 4 toed Hyracotherium has 18 pairs of ribs, the next creature has 19 pairs, the next has 15 pairs, and Equus has 18 pairs of ribs.

ii) **Never found in consecutive strata.** Nowhere in the world are the horse series fossils found in successive strata.

iii) **Recent fossils below earlier fossils.** In South America, the "more recent" one-toed animal is found **below** the "more ancient" three-toed creature.

iv) Evolutionists **call a badger a horse.** The first horse (Hyracotherium or Eohippus) is like our modern rock badger (hyrax) now living in Africa, with a suction cap on its feet to climb trees.

v) There are over **20 different fossil horse sequences** in different museums worldwide.

vi) You could show **the same size increase by comparing small to large dogs**, which we know do not show transitional forms across species.

b) **Archaeopteryx** is a **bird**, not a transitional form between a reptile and a bird. Archaeopteryx occurs in only 2 clear fossils found in 1861 and 1877 in Solnhofen quarry, Germany in Jurassic limestone (supposedly 150 million years). 2 possibilities about Archaeopteryx are:

A) It is a **bird**, not a transitional half reptile, half bird, because:

i) **Scientists declared it a bird** at the International Archaeopteryx Conference in Eichstatt, Germany in 1982, and not a reptile or half reptile/half-bird, and not the ancestor of modern birds.

ii) **How could reptile scales turn into feathers?** Evolutionists cannot explain how this could happen.

iii) **Bones like a bird.** It had thin, hollow wing and leg bones as a bird.

iv) **Not earlier than birds.** It does not predate birds because other bird fossils have been found in the same Jurassic strata as archaeopteryx.

v) **It has modern bird feathers.** (Science 203 (1979), p. 1020, A. Feduccia and H.B. Tordoff).

vi) **It has no intermediate feathers from scales to feathers**, nor have these ever been found.

vii) It has **well developed wings designed for flight**, with asymmetric feathers. Flying birds have more feather on one side of the shaft than non flying emus, ostriches, etc.

viii) **No prior transitional forms** from reptile to archaeopteryx. It has fully developed bird wing bones and flight feathers.

ix) **Other birds had teeth** as well as Archaeopteryx. (P. Moody, Intro. to Evolution (1970), p.196-197).

x) **Modern birds below it.** 2 crow sized birds were discovered in the Triassic Dockum Formation in Texas, which according to evolution, would be 75 million years older than Archaeopteryx.

(Nature, 322, Aug.21, 1986, p. 677; Science, 253, July 5, 1991).

B) **Archaeopteryx may be a hoax.** In 1985 some of the leading scientists in England (Fred Hoyle, R.S. Watkins, N.C. Wickramasinghe, J. Watkins, R. Rabilizirov and L.M. Spencer) declared Archaeopteryx to be a carefully contrived hoax (British Journal of Photography, March-June 1985) because of slab mismatch, cement blobs being left on the fossil during the feather etching process, and the feather markings had been carefully imprinted on the fossil by an unknown hand.

c) **Domestic Animals** like **dogs** and **pigeons**. Scientists acknowledge that all dogs descended from a common dog ancestor and that all dogs are still dogs. All biologists classify dogs as being in the same species, yet there are far greater differences among dogs than there are among Darwin's finches. There are many sub-species of domestic animals such as dogs, cats, cattle, sheep, pigeons and chickens due to selective breeding.

Man cannot cross-breed different species, including apes. Pigeon fanciers have bred many colour variations of pigeons, but all these pigeons can still interbreed and are still pigeons.

All pigeons are sub-species of the basic species type known as the rock dove.

d) **Flies** and **Bacteria resistant to DDT** are claimed to be evolutionary changes by "natural selection" (really "natural variation"). Some flies have become resistant to DDT, and some bacteria have become resistant to antibiotics. But here again, the flies are still flies, and the bacteria are still bacteria. No species change occurred. When DDT is stopped, soon the various strains return.

e) **Peppered Moths in England** are the most often discussed evolutionary "proofs" of natural selection. If this is the best example of evolution, then surely evolutionists have no case.

There can be light and dark peppered moths, but they are still peppered moths. They are just variations within a species (Biston Betularia).

This is not evolution, but simply a change in the ratio of black and white moths within a stable species. No new species results. "Since it begins and ends with peppered moths and no new species is formed, it is quite irrelevant as evidence for evolution". (On Call, July 2, 1973, p.9).

Note: Variation within a species is not evolution.

When Harrison Matthews wrote the introduction for the 1971 edition of Darwin's "Origin of Species", he denied evolution in several respects, especially of the peppered moth:

"The (peppered moth) experiments beautifully demonstrate natural selection – or survival of the fittest – in action, but **they do not show evolution in progress**, for however the populations may alter in their content of light, intermediate, or dark forms, all the moths remain from beginning to end (Biston betularia)." (page xi).

Anyhow peppered moths do not normally land on the sides of trees. Evolutionary photos were made of dead moths pasted onto the sides of trees.

f) **Galapagos Finches.** The DNA gene pool within a given true species can be broad enough to produce hybrids, varieties or sub-species. This is why Darwin's finches on Galapagos Island, can produce bills of different length. When Darwin visited the Galapagos Islands, 600 miles from the South American mainland, he found several different finches, which had developed some different habits and diet. Little

crossbreeding between these 14 finch varieties occurred. Yet they were still all finches (Geospizinae). These finches had blown in from South America, adapted to their environment, and produced several sub-species. Darwin was certain that this showed cross-species evolution (change into new species). But they were still finches. This was his main evidence of evolution that he brought back to England. Darwin, knowing nothing about genetics and the DNA boundary to changes across basic types, imagined a new species had occurred. In reality they were sub-species of single parent species that in the past, had reached the island from South America, yet Darwin called them different species, and therefore claimed them to be a proof of evolution.

## 2. Comparative Anatomy or Similar Structures.

A major problem for evolutionists is that evolution is not occurring now, and the fossil record shows that it has not occurred in the past. Similarities in plants and animals show that:

- a) A single Designer made creatures with similar designs, because of the purpose they must fulfil.
  - b) Not because they are related or evolved from each other, eg.
    - a) Similar designs of big spoons, little spoons and ladles do not prove they evolved from each other, but that they were designed to fulfil a similar purpose.
    - b) Similar designs of automobiles such as Ford, Toyota, General Motors, BMW do not prove they evolved from each other but that they were all designed to travel along roads, be sat in, carry engines and luggage.

Key: Similarities only show that we have the same Creator.

Evolutionists use these examples of similar structures to prove evolution.

**i) Xylem:** “Ferns, conifers and flowering plants all have vascular tissue, including conducting vessels (xylem) which transport water throughout the plant. This suggests that these plant groups had a common ancestor”. (High School Biology textbook, K. Mudie, J. Brotherton).

Answer: This similarity arises because it is the best way for these types of plants to grow, so the Designer used this basic pattern for nearly all trees. Plants do not have the intelligence to decide how they shall be structured.

**ii) Pentadactyl limb:** This is the “5-boned” arm and leg found on most land vertebrates. Evolutionists think that they inherited this from aquatic ancestors, lobe-finned fish.

Question: Why would all vertebrate arms and legs have a pentadactyl limb?

Answer: Because it is the best design.

There is no better way to design a simpler limb with such a wide range of movement. The same Designer made them all.

**iii) Aortic arches:** All blood flowing out of the heart first flows up through the aortic arch, then branches into 4 main arteries to produce 5 aortic arch patterns. If evolution were true, then all animals in each of these 5 aortic arch types would be closely related to each other, but this is not the case as is seen from animals in each group, such as:

- a) Animals with the first type of aortic arch are: horse, goat, donkey, zebra, cow, sheep, pig, deer.
- b) Animals with the second type of aortic arch are: whale, mole, shrew; porpoise, hedgehog.
- c) Animals with the third type of aortic arch are: skunk, bear, kangaroo, rat, raccoon, dog, possum, squirrel, beaver, mouse, wombat, porcupine, cat, weasel.
- d) Those with the fourth type of aortic arch are: dugong, some bats, sea cows, platypus, echidna, man.
- e) Animals with the fifth type of aortic arch are: walrus and African elephants.

Question: Do these show any coherent evolution? No.

Question: Does this prove that humans evolved from echidnas? No.

**iv) Other similarities which disprove evolution:**

- a) The eye of man and octopus are very similar.
  - b) The heart of man and pig are very similar.
  - c) The concentration of red blood cells of man and fish are very similar.
  - d) The specific gravity of blood of man and frog are very similar.
  - e) The structure of hemoglobin of man and root nodules are very similar.
  - f) The cytochrome C in the cell of man, sunflower and bullfrog are very similar.
- v) Blood Serum test for antibodies** is used to support evolution but other inconclusive tests are ignored. Blood serum tests of man and animals give varying percentages of precipitation. Kangaroo is 0%, and man is 100%. According to this evolutionary “proof”, man descended from apes, which descended from sheep, which descended from deer, which descended from horses, which descended from kangaroos, which descended from nothing.

**vi) DNA count in relation to size.** Surely the DNA count of various creatures will increase in relation to their size. Consider these examples:

Colon bacteria 0.0047; yeast 0.07; snail 0.67; sea urchin 0.90; chicken/duck 1.3; carp 1.6; green turtle 2.6; cattle 2.8; man 3.2; toad 3.7; frog 7.5; lungfish 50; amphibian 84.

Man is not at the top of the list as evolution would require.

Note: By calling an impossibility “evolution”, does not make it possible.

## 3. Comparative Embryology (Haeckel’s Theory of Recapitulation).

Definition: “Comparative Embryology is the study of different animals’ embryos, looking for similarities that suggest a common ancestry. All chordates have embryonic gill pouches. Only in fish and amphibian embryos do these develop into gills. Why do human embryos possess gill pouches? Evolutionists think that we inherited them from an aquatic ancestor”. (High School Biology Textbook K. Mudie, J. Brotherton, p.278, (2000)).

i.e. Human embryos are said to repeat or “recapitulate” various stages of their ancestors evolution, such as “gill slits” representing the fish stage, the “yoke sac” representing the lizard/reptile stage.

Answer: **a)** The human embryos “yoke sac” makes the blood until bones develop to make blood, whereas a bird “yoke sac” is the food source a chick lives on until it hatches. Human and bird “yoke sacs” have completely different functions. They only look alike.

**b)** The human embryos “3 small folds” are not gills or slits implying human evolution from fishes, but the upper fold will develop into the middle ear canals, the middle fold will become the parathyroids, and the bottom fold will become the thymus gland.

**c)** The human embryos “tail” is not a tail implying human evolution from reptiles, but the forming spine from which muscles attach.

Yes, it is true that we were once small round things, but this does not prove we evolved from marbles or ball-bearings.

Comparative embryology just looks at the outside appearance instead of finding the real reason these structures are there. Ernest Haeckel in 1866 first championed this false idea calling it the “Law of Recapitulation” or “Biogenetic Law”. Haeckel in 1868 and 1874 published fraudulent charts to prove his “law”. Haeckel had drafting ability, and he carefully redesigned embryo pictures so they would look alike. Haeckel faked human embryos to look like a dog embryo, when they are quite different. The following scientists exposed Haeckel’s frauds:

**i) Wilhelm His,** a German embryologist and father of modern embryology, exposed Haeckel’s hoax in a detailed 1874 publication (Unsere Korperform), concluding that Haeckel was dishonest and discredited.

ii) **F. Keibel**, professor of anatomy at Freiburg University (1915), said, “it clearly appears that Haeckel has in many cases freely invented embryos or reproduced illustrations in a substantially changed form”.

iii) At Jena, 5 professors at **Haeckel’s University** charged him with fraud. He was convicted by a university court.

iv) His deceit was thoroughly exposed in a book by **J. Assmuth** and **Ernest Hull**, entitled “Haeckel’s Frauds and Forgeries” (1915). They quoted 19 leading authorities of the day opposing Haeckel.

v) In 1997, **Dr. Michael Richardson**, an embryologist at St. George’s Medical School in London, assembled a scientific team that photographed the growing embryos of 39 different embryo species.

In a 1997 interview in the London Times, Richardson said this about Haeckel: “This is one of the worst cases of scientific fraud. It is shocking to find that somebody one thought was a great scientist was deliberately misleading. He copied a human embryo, pretending that the salamander, pig and all the others looked the same at the same stage of development. They don’t.....these are fakes.” (Michael Richardson, quoted in “An Embryonic Liar”, The London Times, August 11, 1997, p.14).

In spite of such full disclosure, Haeckel’s “biogenetic law” and fraudulent drawings continue to be printed in school textbooks to today, deceiving millions of teens. Embryonic similarities point to a single Creator, not to a common ancestor.

vi) In 1921, **Professor Walter Garstang** in a famous paper destroyed Haeckel’s unsound theory of recapitulation. Those educational institutions that continue to teach comparative embryology are not educational institutions, but are institutions for miseducation.

#### 4. **Chemicals of Life formed on Primitive Earth.**

Evolutionists have tried to guess what chemical conditions on a primitive earth would spontaneously generate life from non-life.

In 1953, at the University of Chicago, Miller and Urey mixed ammonia, hydrogen, methane and water vapour to simulate earth’s early atmosphere. After one week of subjecting this to electrical discharges they found that some amino acids had formed. Later if Hydrogen Cyanide was added, more amino acids formed.

Question: Does this prove evolution of amino acids to living creatures?

Answer: No, for these reasons:

1) Evolution is teaching spontaneous generation, a Dark Ages error that life came from non-life, which was refuted over 140 years ago by Louis Pasteur (1860). Evolutionists change the name to “biopoiesis” so students won’t suspect anything.

2) Urey and Miller only produced dead chemicals, not life. Just because amino acids are in living things, does not make them living.

3) There are over 2000 complex enzymes required for a living organism, yet not one of these could have been formed on earth in 20 billion years. (Fred Hoyle, New Scientist, 19 Nov. 1981). Urey and Miller only produced a few small amino acids, and no enzymes.

4) If by remote chance a living creature was formed, it had to have all its parts working perfectly on day one of its existence, or it would have died and killed any evolutionary process. Its reproductive organs would have to have been working perfectly.

5) It would have had to find a mate who by chance had also evolved that same day with all its parts also working perfectly on Day one of its existence, including reproductive organs.

6) Both living creatures would have wanted to reproduce and their offspring would have had to have both the ability and desire to reproduce.

7) Urey and Miller’s amino acids were formed in million dollar, well-equipped laboratories, by highly intelligent, skilled staff using purified chemicals, not in an impure, oxygen rich, seashore environment.

8) The Law of Mass Action (that chemical reactions move from high to low concentration), would have water hydrolysing any proteins formed, back to the original amino acids, which would then break down to separate chemicals. A research team, at Barlian University in Israel, said that this complication would make synthesizing only one protein totally impossible at one chance in  $10^{157}$ . They concluded that no proteins were ever produced by chance on earth.

9) Not just a few, but hundreds of thousands of amino acids would have to exist long enough and know how to form themselves into correct sequences of complex DNA and proteins.

10) Chemical compounds in living creatures were meant to be inside them, not outside them where they would be quickly destroyed.

11) Without water loss, proteins cannot form in water. Lab technicians do not use seawater or freshwater to prepare dead amino acids.

12) It is well known that chemicals of life will decompose if oxygen is in the air. Oxidation causes these amino acids to break down to individual chemicals again.

“With oxygen in the air, the first amino acid would never have gotten started:

without oxygen, it would have been wiped out by cosmic rays.”

(Francis Hitching, the Neck of the Giraffe” (1982), p.65). Because oxygen will break down amino acids, evolutionists are forced into deciding that earth’s primitive environment had no oxygen, (called a “reducing atmosphere”), and that later on oxygen entered the atmosphere so that life could breathe.

A “reducing atmosphere” could have had carbon dioxide, methane, hydrogen, ammonia and nitrogen.

An “oxidizing atmosphere” such as now exists, has carbon dioxide, water, nitrogen and oxygen.

Here are some reasons against a primitive reducing atmosphere:

i) If life evolved in a reducing atmosphere, it would immediately die from lack of oxygen.

Plants would die from lack of CO<sub>2</sub>. No chlorophyll or food would be produced.

ii) Oxidized iron (ferric oxide) occurs in early rocks, proving the atmosphere had oxygen back then.

iii) No ozone layer. With no atmospheric oxygen (O<sub>2</sub>), there would be no ozone (O<sub>3</sub>) either, which would allow solar UV light to destroy any life that may be formed.

iv) Deadly Peroxides. A reducing atmosphere would produce peroxides through photolysis of water, which would kill any evolving life. (Abelson, “Some Aspects of Paleobiochemistry” in “Annals of NY Academy of Science”, 69, 1957, p.275).

v) Water means oxygen. There is much oxygen in water and in the atmosphere. Electricity will dissociate water to oxygen and hydrogen. This disproves the origin of life by evolution.

(R.T. Brinkman, “Dissociation of Water Vapour & Evolution of Oxygen in the Terrestrial Atmosphere”. Journal of Geophysical Research, 74, 1969, p.5366).

Do evolutionists think that ancient earth had no water?

Conclusion: Evolution by spontaneous generation of life from chemicals could not occur with oxygen or without oxygen.

13) There is more to a living organism than chemical compounds, proteins and fatty acids in a typical animal. There are thousands of very complicated, very different enzymes which scientists do not know how to produce. There are also massive DNA and other coding problems which no scientist has ever synthesized.

**14)** One minute after an animal dies, it still has all its chemicals, proteins, fatty acids, DNA & codes, but it no longer has life. Scientists **cannot produce life**. How do they expect rocks and seawater to do so?

**15)** Amino acids **do not occur naturally in rich enough concentrations**. For example, phosphorus is needed to form DNA, and nitrogen is needed to form amino acids, but phosphorus and nitrogen concentrations are too low in nature.

**16)** Even if evolution could produce an animal, it would need its living food source made just as rapidly.

**17)** Most evolutionists do not understand how complex life really is. How could all these features happen by **accident**, when intelligent scientists cannot reproduce them by **design** in laboratories?

- i) **Q1:** Have you ever tried to synthesize in a lab just one complex molecule found in an average tree? The tree makes large quantities of it in hours, at room temperature and pressure, but intelligent scientists using high Temp. & Pressure cannot make some tree molecules in 1 year.
- ii) For evolution to succeed, the total organic and cellular complexity of a species had to be invented by chance - and it had to do it fast-within seconds, or the creature would immediately die.
- iii) A cell has a nucleus, which contains chromosomes, which contains genes, which contain DNA, which contains the genome (or gene pool of all a species traits). A human adult contains about 100,000 billion cells. DNA contains phosphate, deoxyribose and 4 types of bases called adenine, guanine, thymine and cytosine. The number and **order** of these bases are unique for each species. DNA divides at about 1000 base pairs per second. DNA is a massive databank, with indexes, electrical polarity, and instructions when and where to switch between cellular processes.

**Q2:** What is the mathematical possibility of just one DNA molecule forming by chance?

**Answer:** An average protein may include 300 amino acids. The DNA gene controlling this has about 1000 nucleotides. There are 4 kinds of nucleotides in a DNA chain. A DNA chain of 1000 links could exist in  $4^{1000}$  different forms ( $10^{600}$  forms).

**Q3:** How could random action produce the right combination out of  $10^{600}$  possibilities for error?

In addition, proteins, enzymes, fats, carbohydrates, etc would have to instantly form at the same time in an organism – and then be endowed with life. Without life, none of these raw materials, even if arranged in correct order, would function. Then this “evolved animal” would need **food, air, water, reproductive** organs and a **mate** to propagate life.

Consider this example: Each haemoglobin molecule contains protein with the correct sequence of 574 left-handed (L) amino acids. In living tissues, the L form of amino acids is found. In lab synthesis, equal amounts of left handed (L) and right handed (D) forms of amino acids are formed. There is no way to synthesize the L form in a laboratory by itself.

**18) Enzyme systems** do not work in the body, until they are **all there**. Did all enzymes of an organism evolve at once? No way!

**19)** Before advanced computers were developed in the 1970s, evolutionists could glibly say, “Given enough time and enough chance, living creatures could form from seawater and lightning.” Today, computer scientists can program into computers all the factors involved in evolving life and conclude that regardless of how much time was allotted for the processes, evolution could not produce life forms.

The probability of forming 124 specifically sequenced proteins of 400 amino acids each is 1 chance in  $10^{64,489}$  ie: 1 with 64,489 zeros after it. Hence it is impossible to randomly form proteins, DNA, amino acids or cells.

## **8. DID HUMANS EVOLVE FROM APE-LIKE ANCESTORS?**

Evolution’s gift to mankind is the lie that we are just animals, only slightly removed from apes, with no moral standards, no laws worth obeying, no future, no hope & no God to comfort us in sorrow or death.

From first grade of school, children are taught that we evolved from cavemen, their “proof” being supposed half-man/half-ape remains.

**Question:** Is it true that these skeletal remains have been found? Is man really related to apes?

**Answer:** a) Man’s DNA is different from apes and monkeys.

b) Man’s number of vertebrae are different from apes and monkeys.

c) Man’s cranial (brain) capacity is very different from apes. Compare orang-utans and chimpanzees (275-500cc), gorillas (340-752cc), with man (1100-1700cc).

d) Man walks habitually upright. Great apes do not.

**Question:** If man is the same as 1 million years ago, why did he only leave writings, buildings and artefacts since 3000 BC?

**Key:** Early civilizations were advanced, but occasionally, groups would migrate to new areas and for a time live in “stone age cultures” until they could build cities. Cavemen wandered from warm to colder climates and chose to live in caves for a time before building homes in their new land.

Diodorus Siculus (in 60 BC) wrote of primitive people living in caves along the shores of the Red Sea. That both advanced civilizations and primitive cave cultures lived at the same time, does not prove human evolution from another species. This coexistence of advanced & primitive peoples occurs today.

**Question:** Were these bones belonging to human ancestors via evolution? Consider the following:

**1) Neanderthals.** In 1856, workers blasted a cave in the Neander Valley, near Dusseldorf, Germany to discover limb bones, pelvis, ribs and a skullcap inside. Virchow, a German anatomist, said that the bones were those of modern men afflicted with rickets and arthritis, because of bowed legs caused by lack of sunlight.

a) Neanderthals apparently lived at a time when there was not as much sunlight. The Ice Age came due to volcanic dust pollution worldwide which reduced sunlight. European weather at the time was cold enough to force people to stay in caves so they received even less sunlight.

b) In 1973, H. Israel showed that modern humans living to extreme age develop Neanderthal features such as heavy eyebrow ridges and an elongated cranial vault (1600cc). There is definite evidence that they were several hundred years old. This correlates well with Bible records in Genesis 11 of long human lifespans from the Flood to Moses. (Arphaxad lived 438 years, Salah 433, Eber 464, Peleg 239, Reu 239, Serug 230, Nahor 148, Terah 205, Abram 175).

c) In 1908 a Neanderthal skeleton was found in Poland, buried in a suit of chain armour not yet fully rusted. (“Neanderthal in Armour”, Nature. April 23, 1908, p. 587).

d) They had well developed art, culture and religion. Most scientists agree that Neanderthals were just humans who lived in caves for a time. School textbooks have not yet caught up with this.

**2) Cro-Magnon Man.** Some Cro-Magnon skeletons have been discovered since 1868 in France in a cave. Some were over 6 feet tall, with slightly larger cranial volume than humans today. Some were excellent artists. They kept astronomy records. They were normal humans, not apes, nor transitions from ape to man.

Q1: Why is it that each time, only one specimen is found? Why not hundreds? If these are our ancestors, there should be millions of such specimens.

Q2: Why are only small pieces of bone found for each specimen – never a complete skeleton? The less that is found, the easier it is to make unfounded extrapolated claims for it.

Q3: If these bones are supposed to be “1 million years old”, why did they not decay in damp Europe, Kenya and China? How could million year old bones possibly be found in damp earth?

**3) Java Man.** Found by Eugene Dubois in 1891 consisted of a skullcap, a femur 50 feet away and 3 teeth some distance away. Dubois assumed that:

**a)** All these bones were from the same individual, **b)** They were 1 million years old, **c)** So he told people it was “half human/half ape”, and called it “Pithecanthropus erectus” (erect ape man). Humans were found buried nearby. The small skullcap portion could fit a human or a gorilla. Most scientists think it was a human skull portion, but school textbooks still cite it as about 500,000 years old.

**4) Piltdown Man,** found in 1912, fooled the scientific world for 40 years until 1953 when Weiner and Oakley showed it to be a hoax. Someone had put an ape jaw with a human skull, filed the teeth and stained them to appear as an ancient matching set.

**5) Australopithecus,** and **Ramapithecus** is the name given to some ape bones found in Africa.

They are all apes. Oxnard and Zuckerman concluded that Australopithecus is an ape, not human, nor a transition between the two. “Lucy” (an Australopithecus) found in Ethiopia in 1975 had a chimp-sized skull (450cc) and “was surprisingly short-legged”. (Time, 7 Nov. 1979, p.68).

**6) Nutcracker Man** (Zinjanthropus) was found in 1959 by Lois Leakey in Olduvai Gorge, East Africa.

Its jaw was much larger than its skull. This was probably another case of mismatched skull parts. Its skull was ape-like. Because tools were found nearby, Leakey decided it was half-human. A human skeleton was found above it in 1913. In 1961, its skull was dated by the inaccurate Potassium-Argon method at 1.75 million years. In 1968, the same skull was dated by the more accurate Carbon-14 method at 10,100 years. Eventually Leakey conceded that it was just another ape skull.

**7) Peking Man** was found in 1927-1936 in a Peking garbage dump with thousands of animal bones. These human bones totalled 14 skulls, 11 jawbones, 147 teeth and a couple of small arm bone and femur fragments along with stone tools. These were human bones with smaller brain capacity (1000cc, which some people have today). They had prominent Neanderthal brow ridges, which some people have today. The openings of the skull bases had been widened and smashed, as if someone had wanted to scoop out the brains. No pelvis or ribs were found. All the skulls disappeared during WWII in 1941. In the 1950s, Ernst Mayr renamed them as **Homo Erectus** and grouped them with Java Man.

Conclusion: All these bones look only like ape bones or human bones, but never transitional forms.

## 9. THE MAN - ANIMAL GAP

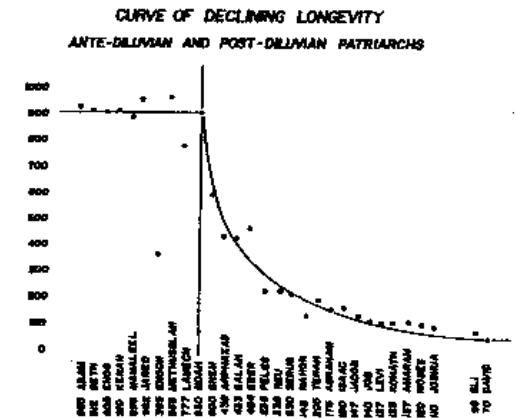
Evolutionists say that man is just another animal because we have evolved from other animals.

The Bible says that man is specially created in the image of God to have dominion over the animals. Little is discussed about the differences between man and animals. Consider these differences:

1. Only man can benefit from accumulated knowledge passed on to the next generation as history.
2. Only man is religious.
3. Only man has an innate sense of morality, of right and wrong, of violated conscience.
4. Only man makes and uses fire and tools.
5. Only man produces art.
6. Men sing, apes don't.
7. Only man communicates abstract thoughts in sentences, writes, invents and composes.
8. Only man conceptualises eternity.
9. Only man surrounds death with ceremony and funerals.
10. Man is unique physically, biochemically, neurologically, postural with an upright heel-toe walk.

How could these have evolved? Man is so far above animals that he could not have evolved from them.

This graph shows how human lifespans dropped from about 900 years before the Flood to today's lifespans after the Flood, as depicted in Genesis chapters 5, 11.



## 10. WAS ANCIENT MAN PRIMITIVE as EVOLUTION CLAIMS?

Evolution pictures modern man as very smart, and ancient man as an unintelligent primitive animal-like creature. This is flattering to the ego of modern man and makes evolutionists proudly feel that they are at the top of an advancing evolutionary chain. But is this true? Was ancient man unintelligent? Evolution incorrectly pictures ancient man as an ape-like creature called Australopithecus, Cro-Magnon, Neanderthal, Homo Habilis, Homo Erectus etc. who did nothing significant for 3 million years, then around 2500 BC suddenly began to build cities and be civilised. Maybe man never was around for 3 million years if he left nothing behind to show for it.

Archaeology shows ancient man as very intelligent, even able to do things that we cannot do today.

**Question: Why the sudden explosion of intelligence and culture around 2500BC?**

**A.** Because this represented early post-Flood civilisation. The pre-flood civilisation was destroyed in Noah's Flood of 2418 BC, according to Bible chronology.

**Question: What about cavemen?**

**A.** Primitive tribes of men have existed in the past just as they do today. They were not the first humans, but degenerate off shoots of mainline human culture.

Job 30:5-8 discusses cavemen: “They were driven forth from among men.....

To dwell in the cliffs of the valleys, in caves of the earth, and in the rocks.”

Many ancient civilisations peaked in culture, but they were destroyed after violence, gross immorality, human sacrifice (abortion) and demonism (occult) appeared.

**Question: Where did Cain get his wife?**

A. He married one of his sisters. "Adam ...he begat sons and daughters". (Genesis 5:4).  
The law forbidding marrying a sibling was not given until Moses in 1500 BC.

**Question: How intelligent and capable was ancient man?**

A "Nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do". (Genesis 11:6).

**Question: What artefacts did he leave to show his intelligence?**

1. **Metallurgy.** "Tubal-cain, an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron". Genesis 4:22.

At the foot of Mount Ararat in Turkey, Russians have found hundreds of ancient ruined smelting furnaces for bronze, copper, tin etc.

Source: K. Megertchian, Bible Science Newsletter, February 1978, page 3.

Some metal Egyptian artefacts of 2000BC have been electroplated with gold.

Source: "Ancient Electroplating", 1933 Annual Log, Scientific American Publishing Co., New York 1933, p.85.

2. **Corrosion Resistant Chinese Sword**

Metal swords buried for 2200 years in a Chinese Emperor's Tomb had been treated with a preservative that had prevented any corrosion. These swords were alloys of tin, copper, magnesium, nickel, cobalt and 10 other elements. Source: National Geographic, April, 1978.

3. **Diamond Tipped Iron Cutting Tools**

"The sin of Judah is written with the pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond". Jeremiah 17:1 (601 BC). 20th Century industry was not the first to discover diamond cutting tools.

4. **Printing a Book using Iron or Lead Letters**

"Oh that my words were now written! Oh that they were printed in a book!

That they were graven with an iron pen and lead in the rock forever." (Job 19:23,24).

Sceptics once doubted Moses' (1500 BC) ability to write. Here we see Job (maybe 2000 BC) thinking of printing a book using iron or lead letters, which is what we use today.

The evolutionary idea that ancient earthlings were too primitive to develop technology on their own, gave rise to Erik von Daniken's book "Chariots of the gods" where he suggests that superior aliens brought this technology to earthmen from outer space.

Solomon tells us that there is nothing new under the sun. "There is no new thing under the sun. Is there anything whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. There is no remembrance of former things..." (Ecclesiastes 1:9-11).

He is saying that our new inventions have already existed in ancient times, and that we have forgotten them. Job said a similar thing: "For inquire, I pray thee, of the former age..." (Job 8:8).

Long lifespans allow for greater knowledge. Job 12:12 says:

"With the ancient is wisdom; and in length of days is understanding".

How much science, technology, commerce and industry could develop if people like Einstein, Getty, Isaac Newton, and Da Vinci, lived for 900 years?

If the Flood occurred in 2418 BC, this date compares well with man's oldest civilised records going back to about 3500 BC. These ancient civilisations appear in an advanced state, without any trace of primitive generations leading up to them. This contradicts evolution.

5. **The Great Pyramid of Cheops.** This is one of the oldest buildings on earth. Imagine the engineering technology required to mine and transport such heavy stones (2 million x 2<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> tons each block), as well as have no movement in the foundation over 4000 years.

6. **Pyramid of the Sun**, near Mexico City is 216 feet high. Its base is 720 feet x 760 feet (Cheops is 750 x 750 feet). Some think that there may be 100,000 pyramids in Mexico.

7. **Mayan solar year.**

The ancient Mayans of Central America calculated a solar year to be 365.2420 days long. Only recently have astronomers calculated it to be 365.2422 days.

Source: National Geographic, December 1975, v.148:6, P.783.

8. **The Piri Reis Map** of 1513.

This map was copied from more ancient maps going back to before Christ. The curious thing about this map is that it outlines the actual land coastline of Antarctica. Today the south pole ice pack permanently covers the Antarctic coastline so that the land coastline is not visible. Only in 1953 by modern technical methods was Antarctica's land coastline charted. How could they chart the coastline in 1513? Source: Ancient Man: A Handbook of Puzzling Artefacts. W.R. Corliss p.88.

9. **Phoenician Language Stone in West Virginia USA.**

This stone found in 1838, had Phoenician writing inscribed on it used in Spain before Christ. How did it get to the USA? Source: "America B.C." Barry Fell, Simon and Schuster, N.Y. 1976 p.21.

10. **Ancient Polynesians had colonised every habitable island in the Pacific Ocean by 30 AD.**

They knew how to navigate by the stars and by ocean currents. Modern man had only discovered these navigation techniques recently. These Polynesians had methodically covered over 15 million square miles of open sea. Source: National Geographic, "Polynesians", December 1974.

11. **Easter Island.**

The early Polynesians who settled Easter Island carved over 600 smoothly sculptured heads out of iron hard volcanic rock, some weighing 90 tons. Most are 12 to 15 feet high, one being 40 feet tall. How were they carved and moved several miles from their quarry? What was their purpose as they look over treeless plains?

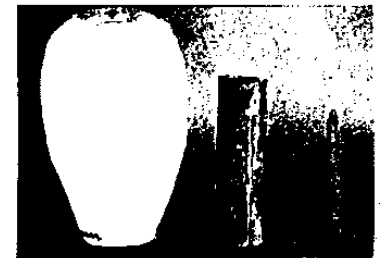
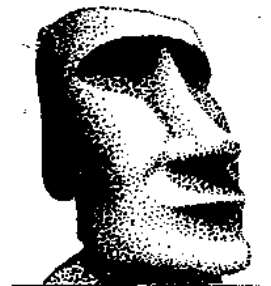
"World's Last Mysteries", Readers Digest, 1967, p.94.

12. **Solomon's 3 Year Ship Voyages.** 1 Kings 10:22 in 1000 BC.

Solomon joined with King Hiram of Phoenicia to send ships on 3 year voyages to bring imports from distant lands. Where did they go to? Was it Africa, America, or India? If the Polynesians mastered the Pacific ocean by 30 AD, why couldn't the Phoenicians cross the Atlantic, which was a shorter distance?

13. **Ziggurat at Ur**, about 2100 BC, in Iraq. The tower of Babel built just after the Flood was a pyramid or Ziggurat Structure.

14. **Ancient Ceramic Battery**, in the Baghdad Museum. This ceramic jar contains a copper cylinder suspended in the jar. This copper cylinder had an iron core inserted in it. When grape juice was put in the jar containing the copper cylinder and iron core, it produced an electric current of 1<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> volts. Ancient people used electricity because electroplated relics have been found dating back to 2400 BC, just after the Flood. "Electric Batteries of 2000 Years Ago", H.M.Schwab, Science Digest, V.41, p.17, April, 1957.



15. **Giant Stones of Tiahuanaco** in Bolivia.

In Bolivia, high in the Andes mountains at 13,000 feet, are the ruins of Tiahuanaco, containing massive stone stairways built seemingly to accommodate a race of large people. Some walls are 16 feet x 26 feet x 1 foot thick. Other stones weigh from 10 tons to 100 tons each. The stones were quarried and moved from 60 miles away without wheels or roads. How did they do it?

Natives in the time of the Spanish conquistadors state that: "The great stones one sees at Tiahuanaco were carried through the air to the sound of a trumpet".

Source: "The Worlds Last Mysteries," p.138

16. **2000 Ton stone at Baalbek, Lebanon.**

70 foot high columns at Baalbek dating from Roman times were quarried in Egypt, moved across the Mediterranean Sea, then over mountainous regions to Baalbek. The foundation stones are much larger. One stone measuring 14 feet x 16 feet x 66 feet, weighs about 2000 tons. Even with modern equipment we could not move it. Source: National Geographic, April, 1985.

17. **6000 Terracotta Statues of China's First Emperor.**

These statues of soldiers and horses cover 500 acres dating back to 200 BC. Every soldiers' face has a different expression. Imagine the kilns needed to fire thousands of life sized horses.

This emperor, Chin Shih Huang Ti, codified China's laws, standardised Chinese writing, and built canals and public roads. Source: National Geographic, April 1978.

18. **Perfectly Preserved Woman for 2100 Years.**

A Chinese noblewoman was perfectly preserved wrapped in 20 layers of fine silk. Her skin is still pliable, her hair was still firmly rooted in her scalp, and X-rays can identify her last meal eaten and internal organs. How did they halt natural decay processes immediately, and for so long? Printed cloth was also discovered in her burial chamber; not painted, but printed. Gutenberg simply re-discovered printing in 1450. Source: National Geographic, May 1974.

19. **Glass lens** from ancient Egypt was also discovered.

20. **Wooden carving of an aeroplane** with a vertical tail fin, and streamlined wing design was tested and found to be aerodynamically ideal for mechanised flight. Ancient people may have used flying machines. Source: "Ancient man: A Handbook of Puzzling Artefacts". W.R.Corriss, Vol.5, p.88, 1972.

**11. SCIENTIFIC DEVELOPMENTS UNKNOWN TO DARWIN, that Refute Evolution.**

Had Darwin foreseen the coming scientific developments, he would have seen his theory to be in error. These include:

1. **Gregor Mendel** had not yet established or published his work on the laws of heredity and genetics, showing that characteristics passed from parent to offspring according to precise mathematical ratios. They do not derive by chance random processes in what Darwin called "blending inheritance."
2. **First law of Thermodynamics** stating that energy can neither be created or destroyed, was only just being developed by Joule and Lord Kelvin. This showed that the universe could not have created itself.
3. **Second law of Thermodynamics** states that the universe is degenerating to more disorder. This shows that things do not of themselves become more organised with time, as evolution requires.
4. **Louis Pasteur** was just beginning his famous experiments showing that all life comes from life, never from non-life.

5. **Mathematical laws of probability**, showing that the chances of life occurring by chance are effectively zero, had not yet been applied to the theory of evolution.

The total probability of forming the proteins and DNA for the smallest self-replicating entity, given astronomically large quantities of reagents and time, is one change in  $10^{167,626}$ . This is 1 chance in 1 followed by 167,626 zeros.

6. **Molecular biology**, showing that the cell is so enormously complex (like the entire city of Sydney), that it could not possibly have formed by chance, had not yet commenced as a science.

7. The **Fossil record** had not yet been studied sufficiently for palaeontologists to be able to say, as they now do, that intermediate links between species do not exist.

Any one of these concepts or laws, if known to Darwin and the world in 1859 would have been enough to destroy Darwin's evolution theory.

These 6 counter evidences show that evolution **could not** have taken place, while the fossil record shows that evolution **did not** take place.

Today, many scientists modify evolution in any way they can to get around the proofs against it.

**Question: Why is evolution still popular?**

**Answer:** Because of what the alternative involves. If the Biblical account of Creation is true, then man has sinned against God, and there will be a Day of Judgment for sinful man for rejecting Christ as Saviour and Creator. Acts 17:31 says:

"He (God) hath appointed a day, in which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man (Christ) whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead."

**12. BAD EFFECTS OF EVOLUTION**

Human conduct is modelled on the philosophy that is accepted at the time.

Few people realise the evil far reaching social effects of the Evolution theory.

1) A **New Code of Ethics**. Evolution claims that **people are just animals**, so there is **no right, no wrong, no morality**, just the law of the jungle that the fittest, most ruthless, aggressive animals survive. So by evolutionary reasoning, humans may behave ruthlessly or aggressively, or any way they please. It has given society a **new code of ethics** of survival of the fittest, might is right and the law of the jungle, which replaces God's law of love and service. Evolution claims that whatever enables the individual to survive is right and good for the individual and society, be it cunning or cruelty, cowardice or deceit. Huxley believed that it was cunning and ruthlessness (violence) that enabled man to evolve from the beasts. The law of the jungle directs human progress, he thought.

This twisted thinking has resulted in the increase of youth crime today. Evolution is the greatest curse in today's **education** system. This supposed beastly nature of man leads to people behaving worse than animals, broken homes, increased divorce, increase in crime and violence, all resulting from the acceptance and practice of evolution. Jesus Christ on the other hand said: "By love serve one another".

2) **Spread of Atheism** among the **educated masses**. Evolution is **atheistic, anti-Christian** and **anti-Bible**. Evolution and Christianity are totally incompatible opposites. If evolution be true, then the **Fall of Man** is false, **sin** is necessary to survive, **Christ's death** and **salvation** are not needed. Millions of young people have lost their faith in God by studying Evolution theory. Huxley said: "Evolution, if consistently accepted, makes it impossible to believe the Bible". Evolution leads a person to a state of defiance against God as Creator and Saviour. If evolution was true, then the Christian faith is a mass of error. Sin is not evil, it is only the method evolution uses to progress. Nietzsche said: "Neither crime, cruelty, sexuality, nor



intoxication need be matters of shame or repentance". To him, Christian morality was the chief obstacle preventing the emergence of a superman. Some foolish clergy endorse evolution through ignorance.

**3) On Western Culture.** Darwinism unleashed a moral holocaust on the world, teaching a most vicious set of moral principles that man is an animal and that the most successful animals are those that are the first to attack and destroy. Darwinism **broke man's link with God** and set him adrift in a purposeless cosmos, altering how men viewed themselves, from morally accountable creations of God to vicious animals accountable to nobody. Evolution provides no uplifting standards, values or morality. Darwinism is **brutalising mankind** today, by giving scientific sanction to bloodthirsty selfish desires. Evolution has entered every sphere of behaviour, such as business, science, education and government. The Satanist Anton La Vey, said that Satan gave him the message that, "We are only animals, and we should do as we please". This is evolution's message. In order to make atheists of everyone, Julian Huxley taught that the **schools** must be controlled by evolutionists. Evolution is the greatest curse in our education system. Evolution is the social basis for intensified war, immorality, divorce and criminality, which has brought anguish to millions.

**4) Marxism and Communism.** Karl Marx who wrote "Das Capital", the basis of Communism, saw Darwinism as a scientific basis for his theory of social progress. Marx wrote to Engels on 16 Jan. 1861, "Darwin's book is very important and serves me as a basis in natural selection for the class struggle in history." (C. Zirkle, "Evolution, Marxism Biology and the Social Scene", 1959 p.88). Marx wished to dedicate his book "Das Capital" to Darwin, but Darwin politely declined the offer.

Yeroslavasky, a friend of Joseph Stalin wrote of him:

"Comrad Stalin began to read Darwin and became an atheist". (Landmarks in the Life of Stalin, 1940, p.8). Stalin killed millions of his own countrymen in World War II by confiscating the Ukrainian's food. Evolution is a founding principle of communism. Communists oppose and persecute Christians.

Both Lenin and Stalin were ardent evolutionists, as are the Chinese Communists.

**5) World Wars I and II. Militarism** is based on evolution. Nietzsche, the German militarist and Haeckel helped lay the evolutionary foundations for German militarism which led to WWI and WWII. Inspired by Darwin's writings, they pioneered Nazi violence. While Lenin and Marx applied evolution to the class struggle for supremacy, Haeckel and Nietzsche applied evolution to permit Germany as the "super race" to conquer inferior races. Hitler's book titled "Mein Kampf" (1925) meaning "My Struggle", was taken from Haeckel's German translation of Darwin's phrase, "the struggle for existence". Nietzsche, the German militarist extended Darwin's principle of "survival of the fittest" to inspire his nation, as the "fittest nation" to subjugate the world by war.

Hitler applied evolution, claiming that his German race with its superior intellect and Aryan blood was best fitted to survive and control the world. He said: "The whole of nature is a continuous struggle between strength and weakness, an eternal victory of the strong over the weak". This false theory led to his and Germany's shameful defeat in 1945, thus showing the world that his philosophy was a lie, and proved the truthfulness of God's Word: "The race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong". Ecclesiastes 9:11.

Jesus said: "The meek (not the aggressive) shall inherit the earth". Matthew 5:5.

Evolution influenced Hitler's views on the master race, genocide and human breeding experiments. (R. Clark, "Darwin, Before and After", 1948, p.115). "Mussolini's attitude was completely dominated by evolution. In public utterances, he repeatedly used the Darwinian catchwords while he mocked at perpetual peace, lest it hinder the evolutionary process." (R. Clark, p.115).

**6) Racism.** The full title of Darwin's 1859 book is: "On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the **Preservation of Favoured Races** in the Struggle for Life". Leading racists have been evolutionists. Darwin and Thomas Huxley were both evolutionists and racists: "Looking to the world at no very distant date, what an endless number of the lower races will have been eliminated by the higher civilized races throughout the world". (Charles Darwin, Life and Letters, p.318). In the 1910's, the war was against nations; in the 1930s and 1940s, the war was against races, and in the 1970's onward, the war has been against the unborn. "Whites are higher up the evolutionary scale than blacks" is a false claim of some evolutionary thinkers.

**7) Abortion and Crime.** Evolutionist abortionists say to women considering an abortion: "Don't worry, the foetus is only in the fish stage". They rarely say how **abortion increases breast cancer**.

According to evolution, there is no right, no wrong, no God, no devil, only evolution which makes all things right. Murder, lawlessness, robbery, abortion, lying, cheating, hedonism and exploitation is acceptable to evolution. By offering evolution in place of God as a cause of history, Darwin removed the theological basis of **the moral code of Christendom**.

### **13. DARWIN'S MYSTERY ILLNESS**

Darwin called his book "The Origin of Species" published on November 24, 1859, "my accursed book." He thought of himself as a Devil's chaplain.

His son Francis recalled him saying, "I never gave up Christianity until I was forty years of age."

In the year before publication he was rarely able to write for more than 20 minutes at a time without stomach pains. He finished the proof in between fits of vomiting. He said to his friend J.D. Hooker 10 days before the proofs were bound:

"I have been very bad lately; one leg has swelled like elephantiasis, eyes almost closed up, and covered with a rash and fiery boils. It was like living in hell. In 1864 he wrote to Hooker: "I suppose few human beings had vomited so often during the last 5 months." He lived in self doubt, fearing that he had devoted his life to a fantasy. He was too sick to attend his book launch, or to attend the debate between Thomas Huxley and Bishop Samuel Wilberforce at Oxford on June 30, 1860, or to attend the awarding of his Copley medal in 1864.

Darwin knew that his idea would destroy the faith of millions of people in God as their Creator. But what if he was wrong? How could he accept the responsibility of what effect his theory of "no accountability to God" would have on others? Symptoms of his illness included vomiting, headache, giddiness, twitching muscles and spots before the eyes. This is an anxiety-caused psychoneurosis.

### **14.WHY DO EVOLUTIONISTS HOLD SO STRONGLY to Theory so Lacking in Evidence?**

1) Some **don't want to be responsible** to God for their actions. They don't like God judging them for their sins.

2) **Sexual freedom**. "We objected to the morality because it interfered with our sexual freedom". (Aldous Huxley, "Confessions of a Professed Atheist", Perspectives on the News, Vol.3 June 1966, p.19).

3) **A Way to hide from God**. "Darwinism removed the whole idea of God as the Creator of organisms from the sphere of rational discussion." (Julian Huxley).

4) It will **help destroy religion**.

## 15. Carbon-14 Dating Assumptions

Willard Libby (1908-1980) at the University of Chicago discovered the Carbon-14 dating method in 1946 to date remains of plants and animals. It is summarised as follows:

- Cosmic rays enter earth's atmosphere and collide with an atom to create an energetic neutron, which in turn collides with a nitrogen atom to produce a carbon-14 atom and a hydrogen atom.
- The radioactive carbon-14 atom combines with oxygen in the atmosphere, to form carbon dioxide, which plants and trees absorb and incorporate into plant fibres by photosynthesis.
- Animals and humans eat plants and take in carbon-14. The ratio of normal carbon-12 to radioactive carbon-14 in the air and in living things is constant until it's death when it stops taking in new carbon.
- After death the carbon-14 decays with a half life of 5700 years while the amount of carbon-12 remains constant in the sample. By measuring the ratio of carbon-12 to carbon-14 in the sample and comparing it with the ratio in the living organism, the age of a formerly living thing may be estimated.

Note: "Fewer than 50 percent of the radiocarbon dates from geological and archaeological samples in north eastern North America have been adopted as "acceptable" by investigators." (J.Ogden, "The Use and Abuse of Radiocarbon" in the Annals of New York Academy of Science, Vol. 288, 1977, p.167-173).

### Assumptions and Errors in Radiocarbon dating:

- Atmospheric Carbon:** For the past several million years, earth's atmosphere is assumed to have had the same amount of atmospheric carbon that it now has.  
Answer: We know atmospheric conditions were different in ancient times, but we do not know to what degree this would invalidate ancient dates determined by C-14 analyses.
- Cosmic rays** have reached earth in the same amount as that now.  
Answer: Less cosmic rays would have entered earth's atmosphere before the Flood due to the earth's stronger magnetic field then and due to the water vapour canopy. This would have resulted in less C-14 forming before the Flood than is being formed now, thus giving the appearance of greater age of pre-flood plant and animal specimens.
- Magnetic Field Strength** is assumed to be constant. This assumption is false, because earth's magnetic field strength is decaying with a half-life of 1400 years. A stronger magnetic field before the Flood would lessen the cosmic rays entering earth, lessen the amount of C-14 being formed, and give C-14 dates older than the true age.
- Amount of Carbon-14 at death** is assumed to be known.  
Answer: How can we know exactly how much C-14 an organism possessed at death? No one can know this for sure.
- Water vapour canopy.** If earth was warmer or contained more water in the atmosphere (caused by a water canopy, surrounding earth), then less C-14 would be produced, thus giving C-14 dates of pre-flood organisms older than their true age.
- Volcanic activity** during and after the Flood would have blocked out much cosmic rays, thus reducing the amount of C-14 being formed. Post-Flood organisms would have received less C-14 than those today, thus making those animals and civilizations appear to be much older by C-14 dating methods than their true age. With the passing of time, C-14 levels would have increased until about 1000BC, where they would have been close to today's levels.

Key: This is why radiocarbon dates back to 600BC correlate better with historically proven dates over the last 2600 years. Discrepancies still exist since 600BC. Prior to 600BC, dates given by radiocarbon analysis begin lengthening out excessively.

- Loss of Carbon-14** from a specimen by the flood, rainfalls, oceans and below ground moisture will invalidate its C-14 age. If there is less Carbon-12, there'll be less C-14 in a specimen.
- Sunspot effect on C-14 production.**
  - From 1100-1240AD there was high sunspot activity (cool spots) giving less C-14 production.
  - From 1420-1530AD and from 1639-1720AD there was low sunspot activity, no aurora seen, an increase in solar wind, and higher C-14 production.
- Libby's C-14 Discrepancy.** Libby found a serious discrepancy at a certain point in past history that indicated his assumed build up of atmospheric C-14 was inaccurate. ("Evolution or Degeneration?", H.R Seigler, 1972, p.80-81). Seigler suggests that the catastrophic effects of the Flood would explain this discrepancy along with the vast water canopy shielding earth from C-14 buildup. Before 1600BC radiodating tends to go wild. The Flood (2418BC) and abnormal post-Flood conditions explain this.
- C-14 Data points to the Flood.** Millions of plants and animals died during the Flood. We would expect that C-14 dating should produce many specimens that died at about the same time.  
In 1970, R. Whitelaw of Virginia Polytechnic Institute carefully compiled 25,000 C-14 dates from the research literature, of people, animals and vegetation. He charted his results which showed that deaths peaked at about 4500 years ago (about 2500BC).  
This agrees well with the Bible's date for the Flood as 2418BC. 15,000 out of 25,000 C-14 dates peaked around 2500BC. (R.Whitelaw, CRS Quarterly, 7. (1970):56).
- Amino Acid Dating by Decomposition.**  
Traces of amino acid still exist all through the fossil strata. This means that no fossils are millions of years old as evolution requires.

## 16. Big Bang Baloney- EVIDENCE DISPROVING THE BIG BANG THEORY

Did the Universe begin with a super explosion of a small mass 10 billion years ago?

Briefly, the following problems are observed in our solar system that defy the Big Bang explanation:

- Uranus and Venus rotate in the opposite direction to the other planets.
- Some planets have eccentric or tilted orbits.
- Some planet's satellite moons move in retrograde (backwards) motion.
- Our moon has a lower density than earth. If it was thrown out from earth, it's density would be more.
- The sun's angular momentum is  $1/200$ th of the planets.  
This small angular momentum makes it unlikely that the planets could be thrown out of the sun.

Source: "Unlocking the Mysteries of Creation". D.R. Peterson, p.45.

Big Bang theory says that a large quantity of nothing condensed by gravity into a single tiny spot and then exploded outward into hydrogen and helium to eventually form stars, galaxies, planets and moons.

Question: What is wrong with this theory? A lot!

- Nothingness cannot pack together.
- There would be no ignition to explode a speck of nothingness.
- The theoretical explosion would fall back on itself giving a theoretical black hole. R L St. Peter, 1974.

4. There is not enough anti-matter in the universe. A Big Bang would produce equal amounts of matter and anti-matter, but only small amounts of anti-matter exists. (Asimov's New Guide to Science, p.343).
5. The anti-matter from the Big Bang would have destroyed all the regular matter.
6. There is no way to unite all the outward rushing particles from the central explosion, because they would keep getting farther apart over time travelled. (See Novotny's research).
7. The particles would maintain the same speed and direction forever, with no way for them to begin circling each other as gas clouds. Linear motion would not change to angular momentum.
8. Neither hydrogen or helium in outer space would clump together, because gases on earth push apart, but never clump together. Gas clouds in space expand, and don't contract to form anything.
9. Careful analysis has revealed that there is not enough matter in gas clouds to produce stars.
10. If the Big Bang theory were true, instead of a universe of evenly mixed stars and galaxies, there would only be an outer rim of fast moving matter.
11. There is not enough matter in the universe to explain the origin of matter and stars. The universe is 100 times less dense than the Big Bang theory requires. Where is this "missing mass"? This too little matter could not form stars.
12. The Big Bang would only produce hydrogen and helium, not the other 90 elements.
13. The nuclear gaps at atomic mass 5 and 8 make it impossible for hydrogen and helium to produce any heavier elements, because neither a proton or neutron can be attached to a helium nucleus of mass 4. If it were not for this important "helium mass 4 gap", the sun would radiate uranium towards earth. There is no stable atom of atomic mass 5 or 8. So a hydrogen fusion reaction (bomb) combines hydrogen to form deuterium, which doubles to form Helium 4 and stops there. Hence a hydrogen explosion (even in a star), does not cross mass 5 gap (E.g. H=1.008; Deuterium=2.016; He=4.006; Lithium=6.939; Beryllium=9.012; Boron=10.811, etc.).
14. There are no first-generation stars (containing only hydrogen and helium) in the sky, which supposedly exploded to give second-generation stars, as the Big Bang theory requires.
15. Random explosions do not produce intricate orbits of suns, binary stars, galaxies, star clusters, planets and moons.
16. There are not enough supernova explosions to produce the heavier elements. We can see stars up to 15 billion light years away, but why are we not seeing many stellar explosions far out in space? Because the Big Bang theory is wrong. The stars are doing fine.
17. The most distant stars, which evolutionists date to the time of the Big Bang, are not exploding, and yet contain heavier elements.
18. According to the Big Bang theory, older stars should have more heavy elements because they are continually making them. But all stars, from 'young' to 'old', have similar amounts of heavy elements
19. Why do some stars spin backward to other stars? The Big Bang theory can't explain this.
20. Why do stars turn? Why do galaxies rotate? Why do planets orbit stars? Why do binary stars circle one another? How could super fast straight line motion from a Big Bang change to rotating and orbiting motion with angular momentum?
21. Why is the universe so "lumpy" with galaxies grouped into galaxy clusters, which are grouped into larger super clusters?
22. Evolutionists claim that background radiation in space is the best evidence that the Big Bang occurred as the last remnant of a Big Bang explosion. This is wrong because:
  - a) It comes from all directions except one direction being the Big Bang source.
  - b) The radiation is too weak to fit the theory. (Fred Hoyle).
  - c) It lacks the required 2.7K black body spectrum required for the Big Bang theory.
  - d) The spectrum should be a much hotter 100°K black body spectrum than its 2.73K spectrum.
  - e) It is too smooth.
 Instead, this background radiation is what we'd expect from the billions of stars in the universe.
23. According to Big Bang theory, the further we look out into space, the further back into time we see. This means that the furthest stars and galaxies should be the youngest. Yet research shows that furthest away stars are just like those nearby.
24. If Big Bang theory were true, all stars would be moving in the same direction, but stars, clusters and galaxies are moving in various directions opposite to one another.
25. Every star is redshifted to some extent. The further a star or galaxy is from us, the more its light is shifted. Big Bang theory concludes that this proves that the universe is expanding outward from the source of the Big Bang. They base this on the hypothesis that the "speed theory" of redshift is the only cause of the redshift. (If light is travelling towards us, the wavelength is compressed or blueshifted. If it is moving away from us, the wavelength is stretched out or redshifted.)
 

Other explanations for this redshift are:

  - a) Gravitational redshift. In 1915, Einstein predicted that gravity could bend light and thus cause a redshift. This was later proven correct. As light travels towards us from distant stars, it passes other stars, which slightly slows the beam, causing its spectrum to be shifted towards the red.
  - b) Second-order Doppler shift: A light source moving at right angles to an observer will always be redshifted. This would be explained by the universe moving slowly in a vast circle around a centre.
  - c) Energy loss redshift: Light waves may lose energy as they travel across long distances.
 Big Bang theory maintains that the speed redshift is the only cause of the redshift, so they can say that the universe is expanding outwards as a result of the Big Bang.
 

**Speed redshift is not the only cause of redshift because:**

  - a) Nearly all stars and galaxies are redshifted. If Big Bang theory really occurred, the universe would be rushing out from where the explosion occurred, not away from earth. If there was a Big Bang we could locate its origin by measuring redshifts.
  - b) The closest stars and galaxies are the least redshifted. The further away a star is, the more would gravitational and energy loss redshifts slow it.
  - c) Quasars strongly disprove the speed theory of redshift. Some quasars have redshifts of 300% which equals speeds over 90% of the speed of light. Some quasars have redshifts of 400%.  
Three quasars, according to the speed theory are moving faster than the speed of light. One quasar appears to be moving 8 times faster than light, which is impossible.

26. Most binary stars circling one another are of different composition. Big Bang theory can't explain this.
27. Stars within globular clusters ought to be all crashing into one another if any nonthinking force brought them together, but they are not.
28. Stars never get closer than 3.5 light years apart. Would randomness produce this? No.
29. Stellar evolution is non-observable. Stars are not evolving in space. Plants and animals are not evolving on earth.
30. The sun would have to spin extremely fast to hurl off planets and moons, yet it rotates very slowly.
31. Big Bang theory cannot explain where stars, planets and moons originated, nor how they arrived at their present precise, intricate orbits. How could every moon be located at the precise distance to keep it from flying into or away from its planet, from a Big Bang explosion?
32. Uranus and Venus rotate backward compared to all the other planets. The other 7 rotate forward.
33. One third of the 60 moons rotate opposite to the rotational direction of their planets. Why?
34. Our planets and moons are so strikingly different that they could not have originated from the same Big Bang source. "If you look at all the planets and the 60 or so satellites (moons), it's very hard to find two that are the same." (Ross Taylor of ANU Canberra, in "The Solar Systems New Diversity", Richard Kerr, Science 265, 2 Sep 1994, p.1360).
35. The chemical makeup of Earth's moon and Earth are distinctly different, implying that the moon formed under different conditions.
36. Nearly all of Saturn's 17 moons are extremely different. It has 3 sets of moons sharing the same orbit. Some moons travel clockwise, others travel anti-clockwise. The surface of Iapetus is 5 times darker on one side than the other. Hyperion is potato shaped. Enceladus has an extremely smooth surface, whereas other moons are much rougher. Why? Titan's atmosphere is thicker than earth's. How could all these moons originate by chance?

#### **Elemental Forces of the Universe.**

37. **Gravity Force** is perfectly balanced.
- a) If gravity were stronger, smaller stars could not form.
- b) If gravity were weaker, bigger stars could not form, no heavy elements could exist, only dwarf stars would exist, which would radiate light too feebly to support life.
38. **Proton/Neutron mass ratio**  
The neutron mass can only exceed the proton mass by twice the electron's mass (About 1 part per 1000).
- a) If the proton to neutron mass ratio were less, atoms would fly apart.
- b) If the proton to neutron mass ratio were greater, atoms would crush together, quickly decaying into a neutron, positron and neutrino, thus destroying hydrogen, the main element in the universe.  
The Master Designer planned that the proton's mass would be slightly smaller than a neutron's mass, otherwise the universe would collapse. If protons decayed, the universe would collapse.
39. **Photon mass** to **Baryon mass ratio**.  
If this ratio were higher, stars and galaxies could not hold together by gravitational attraction.
40. **Nuclear force** holds an atom together.
- a) If it were smaller, there would only be hydrogen and no heavier elements.

b) If it were larger, there would be no hydrogen but only heavier elements. With no hydrogen there would be no stable stars, and no life.

c) If it were 1% weaker or stronger, carbon could not exist, nor could life exist.

d) If it were 2% stronger, protons could not exist.

41. **Electromagnetic Force** in an atom binds negative charged electrons to a positively charged nucleus
- a) If it were smaller or larger, no chemical bonds could form.
- b) If the electron charge were 3 times larger, no element could exist other than hydrogen.
- c) If the electron charge were one-third as large, all neutral atoms would be destroyed by the lowest heat-such as is found in outer space.

**Conclusion:** It would be impossible for evolution to produce the correct balance of these forces. They were planned. These 4 basic forces (gravitational, electromagnetic, weak and strong nuclear forces) differ so greatly in strength, that the strongest is 10<sup>40</sup> times stronger than the weakest of them. Yet Big Bang theory mathematics requires that all basic forces had to be the same strength before and just after the Big Bang Explosion occurred. Evolutionists cannot claim that these precise, delicate balances of forces occurred by "natural selection", or "mutations", for we are here dealing with the basic properties of matter. There is no room for gradual "evolving". The proton-neutron mass ratio has always been the same. It will not change. It began just right. There was no second chance. This applies to all the other forces and balances in elemental matter and the laws of physics governing them.

If you open a typical science book on astronomy, you will find theories about the origin of the universe and stars stated with great certainty to the public.

By 1970, so much scientific data had repudiated the basic aspects of various cosmologies, that in April 1972, the top minds in stellar physics, chemistry and astronomy gathered at the Nice Symposium to resolve: a) How did the first cloud break apart and change into stars?

b) How did the gas clouds whirl to form stellar objects to solve the angular momentum problem?

c) How did the gas push itself into solids?

d) How did the planets, with their present properties and solar distances form?

If you attend such a closed-door conference, you will find worried men, desperate theories, scientific facts condemning these theories, a lack of alternative explanations, an atmosphere of hopeless despair in the face of unproven ideas, and no solutions or scientific experiments to alleviate the situation.

**Key:** The problem is that evolutionists do not want the public to know that scientists cannot figure out how galaxies, stars and planets originated.

#### **17. SCIENTISTS SPEAK AGAINST EVOLUTION**

1) "In spite of nearly a century of work and discussion there is still no unanimity in regard to the details of the means of evolution". R. Goldschmidt, "Evolution viewed by one Geneticist", "American Scientist, Vol. 409, Jan 1952, p.84

2) "Evolution is baseless and quite incredible". (Ambrose Flemming, President of British Association for Advancement of Science).

3) "Today our duty is to destroy the myths of evolution. Some refuse to acknowledge the inadequacies and falsity of their beliefs". (Pierre-Paul Grasse).

4) "Scientists who go about teaching that evolution is a fact of life are great con men, and the story they are telling may be the greatest hoax ever." (T.N. Tahmianian, Physiologist for the Atomic Energy Commission, quoted in Fresno Bee, 20 Aug. 1959).

- 5) "The naked truth and human nature travel in opposite directions. We have no reliable evidence as to the evolutionary sequence of invertebrate phyla". (John Bonner, American Scientist, June 1961, p.240).
- 6) "Throughout the past century there has always existed a significant minority of first-rate biologists who have never accepted the validity of Darwinian claims." (M. Denton, "A Theory in Crisis", 1986, p.327).
- 7) "When men cling to an outworn theory with no supporting evidence, the problem is within the mind."  
(Norman Macbeth, Darwin Retried, (1971), p.77).
- 8) "The German zoologist, Berhard Rensch (1959) provided a long list of leading authorities who have been inclined to the view that macroevolution (changes across species) cannot be explained in terms of microevolutionary processes (changes within species), or any other currently known mechanisms. These dissenters cannot be dismissed as cranks, creationists or vitalists, for among their ranks are many first-rate biologists."  
(Michael Denton: A Theory in Crisis (1985), p. 86).
- 9) "Science positively demands creation". Lord Kelvin.
- 10) "The theory of evolution is a scientific mistake."  
(Louis Agassiz, Harvard Univ. Professor, 'Evolution or Creation' (1986) p.139 by H. Enoch).
- 11) "Evolution not only conveys no knowledge but it seems to convey anti-knowledge."  
(Colin Patterson, Address at the American Museum of Natural History, 5 Nov. 1981).
- 12) "That a theory (of evolution) so vague, so insufficiently verifiable ....has become a dogma can only be explained on sociological (not scientific) grounds." (G.R. Taylor, Great Evolution Mystery, 1983, p.232-3).
- We need to stop letting this sacred cow (of evolution) walk through our halls of science.

**Key:** Scientists are disadvantaged by holding to evolution, because **they try to make everything fit the theory of evolution, and ignore the mass of evidence which does not fit evolution.**

Darwinism is a belief in the meaninglessness of existence.

13) "Evolutionism is a **fairy tale for grown ups.** It is useless." (Bounoure, La Monde et La Vie (Oct. 1983), Director of Research at the National Centre of Scientific Research in France).

14) Darwin in his later days became aware of the lack of real evidence for his evolutionary speculation and wrote: "As by this theory, innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in the crust of the earth? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of being, as we see them, well-defined species?"  
(H. Enoch, Evolution or Creation (1968), p. 139).

**CONCLUSION:** Reject evolution as an unproven, unscientific, dangerous lie. Questions to ask an evolutionist:

**Q1:** How does evolution occur? **Answer:** By beneficial mutations giving rise to a new species.

**Q2:** Give some examples of beneficial mutations that have given a new species? I can't, there are none.

**Q3:** Then why do you believe a theory when there are no examples of it happening?

**Q4:** If evolution has not been proven since 1859, why do you believe and trust it?

**Q5:** Did man sit around and do nothing for one million years, leaving no records, artifacts or buildings, then suddenly, around 2,500 BC build the pyramids?

**Note:** Evolution by random processes cannot occur due to the lack of "information" which is needed to direct unintelligent systems! A computer cannot run without software. God put intelligence into life.

Source: "The Evolution Cruncher", Vance Ferrell, 2001. evolution-facts.org Phone 931-692-5777.

## 93. JESUS CHRIST KEEPS US SAVED FOREVER

**Bible Reading:** John 10:22 -30.

**Aim:** To prove from the Bible that when Jesus Christ saves us, He keeps us saved forever. We cannot lose Christ's salvation.

**Introduction:** Many religions that teach works for salvation, also teach that we can lose salvation. This follows logically because if we are saved partly or wholly by our works, then we can fail to keep up the good works and hence lose salvation. The truth is that if we call on Christ to save us, and He saves us, then He keeps us saved forever. The following scriptures show this:

- "I give unto them eternal life; and they shall **never perish**." John 10:28.
  - This is an unconditional guarantee.
  - Eternal life means saved for eternity.
  - What does "never perish" mean?
- "Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you **will perform it** until the day of Jesus Christ." Philippians 1:6.
  - Christ will perform His work in us to the Second Coming.
- "The steps of a good man are ordered by the **LORD**... Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the **LORD** upholdeth him with his hand ... The **LORD** .. forsaketh not his saints; they are **preserved for ever**." Psalms 37:23-28.
  - Four times God tells us that He keeps us saved.
- "For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to **separate** us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." Romans 8:38,39.
  - For a born again believer to be lost, he must somehow be separated from the love of God, and become an object of God's wrath. Paul says that this is impossible.
- "Wherefore he is able also to save them **to the uttermost** that come unto God by him, seeing he **ever liveth to make intercession** for them." Hebrews 7:25.

"to the uttermost" means "forever."
- "By his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained **eternal redemption** for us." Hebrews 9:12.
  - Redemption means to buy back by paying a price. Since we have an eternal redemption, we are redeemed for all eternity.
- "... receive the **promise** of **eternal inheritance**." Hebrews 9:15.
  - Our inheritance is for eternity.
  - Our eternal inheritance is promised by God.
- "And as we have borne the image of the earthy, **we shall also bear the image of the heavenly**." 1 Corinthians 15:49.
  - "Shall" means that it is a certainty that we will bear the heavenly image.
- "To an inheritance **incorruptible**, and **undefiled**, and that **fadeth not away, reserved in heaven** for you, who are **kept** by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time." 1 Peter 1:4,5.
  - Six times God tells us that we are secure forever.
  - "Fadeth not away" means perpetual.
- "I am persuaded that He is able to **keep** that which I have committed unto him against that day." 2 Timothy 1:12.
  - Paul had committed the keeping of his soul to Christ. He was sure that Christ would keep him saved to his heavenly kingdom.
- "The Lord **shall deliver me from every evil work**, and will **preserve me** unto his **heavenly kingdom**..." 2 Timothy 4:18.
  - The Lord will deliver us and preserve us.
- "Who **shall also confirm** you unto the **END**, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. God is faithful ..." 1 Corinthians 1:8,9.
- "When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then **shall ye also appear with him in glory**." Colossians 3:4.
  - Ye shall appear with Christ in glory, no if's or but's.
- "This is the **promise** that he hath promised us, even eternal life." 1 John 2:25.

"In hope of eternal life which **God, that cannot lie, promised..**" Titus 1:2.

  - God has promised eternal life to us, and He cannot lie.
- "Him that cometh to me I will in **no wise cast out**." John 6:37
  - If we come to Jesus Christ for salvation, He will not cast us out of salvation.
- "If our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, **we have a building of God**, an house not made with hands, **eternal** in the **heavens**." 2 Cor. 5:1.
  - We know that if our body dies, we go to heaven for eternity.

17. "And this is the record, that God **has given** to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. "He that has the Son has life ... that ye may **KNOW** that ye have eternal life." 1 John 5:11,12,13.
- God has recorded that we may know that we have eternal life in Christ.
18. "Whosoever believeth in him **should not perish**, but have eternal life."  
 "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him **should not perish**, but have everlasting life.  
 "He that believeth on the Son **hath everlasting life** ..." John 3:15, 16, 36.
- Twice God says that we will not perish.
  - Three times God says that we have eternal life.
19. "There is **joy** in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repents." Luke 15:10.
- If we could lose salvation, angels would not rejoice at salvation, but when we enter heaven.
  - If we could lose salvation, we could not know for sure, as 1 John 5:13 says we can
20. "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that **not of yourselves**: it is the gift of God: not of works lest any man should boast." Ephesians 2: 8, 9.
- God is very zealous for us to know that God alone is responsible for man's salvation. Every argument against the eternal security of the believer is based on the human element. As God definitely excludes all human element in salvation, every one of these arguments is thereby ruled out.
21. "Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the **promise** might be **sure** to **all the seed** ..." Romans 4:16.
- Eternal life is promised,
  - it is sure,
  - it is to all believers.
- Question:** If we receive salvation by faith and not by the works of the law (good works), then why is it necessary to keep the law (to keep up good works) in order to keep salvation?
22. "Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but **fellowcitizens** with the saints, and of the household of God." Ephesians 2:19.
- All who truly know Christ as their Saviour, are already "citizens" of heaven, enrolled and registered in heaven.
23. Six times God says that we can **KNOW** that we have eternal life:
- i) "that believe in the name of the Son of God; that ye may **KNOW** that ye have eternal life." 1 John 5:13.
  - ii) "**now** are we the sons of God,... we **KNOW** that, when he shall appear we shall be like him." 1 John 3:2.
  - iii) "we **KNOW** that ... we have ... an house eternal in the heavens." 2 Corinthians 5:1.
  - iv) "**KNOWING** that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you." 2 Corinthians 4:14.
  - v) "Do ye not **KNOW** that the saints shall judge the world?  
**KNOW** ye not that we **SHALL** judge angels? 1 Corinthians 6:2,3.
  - vi) "be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye **KNOW** that **your labour is not in vain in the Lord.**" 1 Corinthians 15:58.
- If we lead a person to Christ, then they lost salvation, our labour would be a waste of time, in vain. However, it is not in vain, because God keeps them saved, even if they backslide.
24. "I will **never leave thee**, nor forsake thee." Hebrews 13:5.
25. "For by one offering He hath **perfected forever** them that are sanctified." Hebrews 10:14.
26. Eleven things that "**SHALL BE**", prove that Christ keeps us saved. There is no question about whether or not certain things will be so. It is plainly stated that they "**SHALL BE**".
- i) "Then **shall** ye also appear with him in glory." Colossians 3:4.
  - ii) "Being now justified by His blood, we **shall** be saved from wrath through him." Romans 5:9.
  - iii) "They which receive the gift of righteousness **shall** reign in life." Romans 5:17.
  - iv) "He that raised up Christ from the dead **shall** also quicken your mortal bodies." Romans 8:11.
  - v) "The glory which **shall** be revealed in us." Romans 8:18.
  - vi) "Who **shall** also confirm you unto the end." 1 Corinthians 1:8.
  - vii) "We **shall** also bear the image of the heavenly." 1 Corinthians 15:49.  
 Written to those at Corinth and "in every place." 1 Corinthians 1:2.
  - viii) We **shall** all be changed." 1 Corinthians 15:51.
  - ix) "**Shall** raise up us also by Jesus, and **shall** present us with you." 2 Corinthians 4:14.
  - x) "When he **shall** appear, we shall be like Him ..." 1 John 3:2.
  - xi) "We **shall** judge angels." 1 Corinthians 6:3.

27. "The gifts and calling of God are **without repentance.**" Romans 11:29.
- Eternal life is a gift from God. Romans 6:23.
  - Holy Spirit is a gift from God. 1 Thessalonians 4:8.
  - Righteousness is a gift from God. Romans 5:17.
- God will not take back His gifts.
28. Sin is not charged against us.  
 "Their sins and iniquities will I **remember no more.**" Hebrews 10:17.  
 "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself, **not imputing their trespasses unto them.**" 2 Corinthians 5:19.
29. **Chastening** proves salvation's permanency.  
 Chastening is a corrective discipline to purify our life, like "child training".  
 God chastens us now in this life, in love when we sin to return us to His will.  
 "My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him. For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the Father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof ALL are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons." Hebrews 12:5-8.
- **Three results** of chastening in Hebrews 12:9-11 are:
    - i) we give God reverence;
    - ii) for our profit - we learn holiness;
    - iii) yielding the peaceable fruit of righteousness.
  - **Two methods** of chastening in I Corinthians 11:29,30 are: i) sickness; and ii) death.  
 "When we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world." 1 Corinthians 11:31,32.
30. Our **destiny** is to be **conformed to the image of His Son**, not to be lost.  
 "For whom he did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son .. called ... justified ... glorified." Romans 8:29,30.
31. We are **indwelt** and **sealed** by the Holy Spirit **unto the day of redemption.**  
 "Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are **sealed unto the day of redemption.**" Ephesians 4:30.  
 "I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that he may **abide with you forever**; even the Spirit of truth." John 14:16.  
 Question: Did Jesus promise that the Holy Spirit will abide with them until they became lost? NO! Forever.

32. Christ is our **Advocate** and Intercessor.  
 Question: If sin in a believer's life will cause him to be condemned, then for what purpose is Christ our Advocate or Intercessor?  
 "Christ who also maketh intercession for us." Romans 8:34.  
 "He **ever** liveth to make intercession for us." Hebrews 7:25.  
 "If any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous." 1 John 2:1.
33. Our union with Christ, means we are in Christ.
- i) Now ye are the body of Christ, and **members** in particular." I Corinthians 12:27.  
 Question: Will Christ permit his body to be dismembered? No.
  - ii) Our sin was counted as Christ's, now we have Christ's righteousness.  
 "He hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." 2 Corinthians 5:21.
  - iii) "If children, then heirs, ... joint heirs with Christ." Romans 8:17.  
 Because I am "in Christ", my eternal future is linked to Christ's as a joint heir.  
 If Christ can be lost, so can I.

### **Conclusion**

Security, not fear, produces Godly living. Romans 12:12; 1 Corinthians 6:15.  
 Loss of salvation is never threatened.



## 94. A CLOSER STUDY OF PASSAGES THAT SOME USE TO TEACH LOSS OF SALVATION

Some Bible passages may appear on the surface to teach that a saved person may be lost. However, on closer study they perfectly harmonize with the overwhelming weight of Scripture which teaches the security of the believer.

The basic principle of Bible study and interpretation is that the Bible is one great, harmonious presentation of truth, and that each part agrees with every other part. If an apparent meaning contradicts the vast body of Scripture, then we must seek another meaning.

**Question:** Why do people misunderstand verses of this kind?

**Answer:** 1. Some verses concern chastening of believers.  
2. Some are taken out of context.  
3. Some refer to unbelievers.

**Note:** You must not throw out 1,000 clear verses on security of the believer and hold on to two or three unclear verses that require deeper study that on the surface seem to teach loss of salvation.

Let us consider answers to these passages:

1. Ezekiel 3:20; 18:4 and 33:13,18 teaches about **physical death** as a **punishment for the sin** of Israelites under the Law dispensation, not loss of salvation.
  - a) *“Again, When a righteous man doth turn from his righteousness, and commit iniquity, and I lay a stumblingblock before him, **he shall die**: because thou hast not given him warning, **he shall die in his sin, and his righteousness which he hath done shall not be remembered**: but his blood will I require at thine hand.”* (Ezekiel 3:20).
  - b) *“Behold, all souls are Mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is Mine: the **soul that sinneth, it shall die.**”* (Ezekiel 18:4).
  - c) *“When I shall say to the righteous, that he shall surely live; if he trust to his **own righteousness**, and commit iniquity, all his righteousness’ shall not be remembered; but for his iniquity that he hath committed, **he shall die for it.**”* (Ezekiel 33:13).
  - d) *“When the righteous turneth from his righteousness, and **committeth iniquity, he shall even die thereby.**”* (Ezekiel 33:18).
- a) Ezekiel 3:20. “**he shall die** in his sin”. If a righteous person had left the path of righteousness, he was in danger of **physical death**. This does not refer to a person losing salvation. The one who obeyed God’s Law was to be protected during the approaching Babylonian judgment, but those who broke the Law **could expect death**.
- b) Ezekiel 18:4 “The soul that sinneth, **it shall die.**” Check the context: A proverb in Israel was “The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children’s teeth are set on

edge.” Ezekiel 18:2. This meant that people thought that they were suffering, not because of their sins, but because of their parent’s sins. They were blaming God for punishing them unjustly. God saw that this false proverb had to be refuted. It is true that the effects of sin are serious and long lasting, but **God does not punish innocent children for the parent’s sins**. **In blaming others**, they were **denying their own guilt**, and **charging God with injustice**. God replies: “The soul that sinneth, it shall die.” (18:4), meaning that **those who are guilty will receive their own deserved punishment**; in some cases “**death**.”

- c,d)Ezekiel 33:13,18 is Ezekiel’s second commissioning as a **watchman** with a different message (587 BC). *“for his iniquity that he hath committed, **he shall die for it**”*. It was still an **individual accountability and responsibility**, but the message’s thrust was on God’s restoration of Israel. His first commissioning in 3:1-21 in 595 BC was a ministry of judgments, which was now completed.

**Conclusion:** These passages are not referring to spiritual death of a righteous man losing salvation, but to a righteous man who **turns to sin**, and his sins bringing the punishment of **physical death** upon him.

2. *“But he that shall **endure unto the end**, the same shall be **saved**.”* (Matthew 24:13).

Some say that we must endure to keep ourselves saved until we die, or we will lose salvation. The Bible never says that salvation from the penalty of sin is by enduring. It is by believing on Christ, not by our works. Believers in the seven year Tribulation period must endure the Antichrist’s persecution until the seven years are finished. It is not referring to the spiritual salvation of a believer’s soul, but refers to people being rescued by Christ returning to defeat the Antichrist.

3. *“And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which **had not on a wedding garment**: And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away and **cast him into outer darkness**; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”*(Matthew 22:11-13).

This parable is about a king who prepared a wedding (marriage feast) for his son (Matthew 22:1-4).

1. Marriage feast = the Millennial age, beginning when Christ returns to earth.
2. Man without a wedding garment = someone not clothed in Christ’s righteousness, and is therefore unsaved.
3. Outer darkness = he is cast into darkness outside Christ’s kingdom. At the beginning of Christ’s 1,000 year kingdom, all who are not saved are taken from the earth in judgment as represented by this man. (Matthew 13:41,49; 3:12; 25:30, 41-46; 24:37-41).
4. **Five wise and five foolish virgins**  
*“And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I **know you not**”*(Matthew 25:10-12).

Some say the five foolish virgins who took no oil represent Christians who have lost their salvation. Not so!

1. Marriage feast = the 1,000 year kingdom age of Christ on earth.
2. Five wise virgins = those saved.
3. Five foolish virgins = unsaved people, because:
  - a) They took no oil. Oil is a symbol of the Holy Spirit.  
"If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His." Romans 8:9.
  - b) The Lord says: "I know you not." See Matthew 7:21-23.

5. **Parable of three servants**

*"And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matthew 25:30).*

The earthly kingdom set up by Christ will be a place of light and blessing. To be cast into "outer darkness" means to be cast out of the kingdom into the darkness of death outside. The word "servant" does not always refer to believers. All men are responsible to serve God. eg: rulers are the ministers of God (Romans 13:4), as are ungodly kings (Jeremiah 25:9). The servant cast into outer darkness represents an unbeliever who is on the earth at the time of Christ's return who is taken from the earth in judgment.

6. *"Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, **fall from your own stedfastness.**" (2 Peter 3:17).*

It does not say "fall from your salvation", but from "your own stedfastness." "Stedfastness" in Greek means: "firm condition of mind." A person may be saved, but be unstedfast in his mind. It is not discussing loss of salvation, but losing one's mental convictions on various issues.

7. *"Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth **take heed lest he fall.**" (1 Corinthians 10:12).*

The context here is a warning to Christians about the possibility of falling into sin or backsliding. It does not teach that a believer may fall out of salvation.

8. **The Vine**

*"I am the true vine, and My Father is the husbandman. Every branch in Me that beareth not fruit **He taketh away**: and every branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in Me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in Me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without Me ye can do nothing. **If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and, they are burned.**" (John 15:1-6).*

This passage is an illustration and the problem is that it is possible to stretch an illustration far beyond its intended meaning.

- a) Abiding in the vine = a Christian abiding or remaining in close, unbroken fellowship with Christ. Fruit is produced.
- b) Abiding not in the vine = broken fellowship with Christ and fruitlessness.

This refers **not** to our "**standing**" before God of **salvation**, but to our "**state**" of **not living in close fellowship with Christ**. We are faced with three problems in this passage:

- 1) "**He taketh away**" (15:2), means that those believers who do not bear fruit are taken away or lifted up out of their place. Taketh away = lifted up from the ground. The Father reserves the right to remove an unfruitful believer to heaven. This is maximum discipline of physical death. Fruitful branches are pruned or pruned to bear more fruit. Therefore, both fruitful and unfruitful branches are under the immediate care of the Father (the Husbandman).

**Purging** means to cleanse a branch from filth and impurity by washing off insects, parasites and moss. The **washing** is by the Word of God. (15:3).

- 2) "He is **cast forth** as a branch, and is **withered.**" (15:6).

If a believer does not abide in Christ, he is out of fellowship with Christ, his public testimony is rejected by men, and his **spiritual vitality** is **diminished** or **withered**. He is like the castaway in 1 Corinthians 9:27 who is disapproved but not lost. All backsliders have a withered, reduced spiritual vitality.

- 3) "Men gather **them**, and **cast them into the fire, they are burned.**" (15:6)

Notice the plural pronouns "them" and "they". It is not "men gather **him**, and cast **him** into the fire, and **he** is burned", as it would have been if it referred to losing salvation or to a professor. The "**them**" and "**they**" are what issues from the one who has been cast forth as a branch - dead works: wood, hay, stubble, which will be burned at the Judgment Seat of Christ, as 1 Corinthians 3:15 tells us: "If any man's work shall be burned (the same word as in John 15:6), he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire."

Key: Hence "them" and "they" refer to the **believers dead works** which are burned up at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

9. *"Let **that** therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. **If that** which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, **ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.** And this is the promise that He hath promised us, even eternal life." (1 John 2:24-25).*

If believers resist the lies of antichrists, and let the **Bible truth** that they had heard from the beginning "**abide**" in them, they would continue to **abide in unbroken fellowship** with God the Father and God the Son. "**That**" refers to **Bible doctrine**, which, if it remains in us will keep us in unbroken, close fellowship with the Son and the Father.

10. "What is meant by "**overcometh**"?"

*"He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; **He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.**" (Revelation 2:11). See Revelation 2:7,17,26; 3:5,12,21 where "overcometh" is used in a similar way.*

Some feel that this verse means that a believer must do good works, or not do certain sins in order to "overcome" or he will lose his salvation. "Overcomes" is explained in 1 John 5:4,5.

*"For whatsoever is born of God **overcometh** the world: and this is the victory that **overcometh** the world, even **our faith.** **Who is he that overcometh** the world, but **he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?**" "He that overcometh", then, is **every born-again believer**. These verses in Revelation 2 and 3 are really **verses of security**, for the things promised to "overcomers" are for **all believers**.*

11. **"He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment: and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before My Father, and before His angels."** (Revelation 3:5).  
Some think that this verse implies that God may blot some people's names out of the book of life. The verse says nothing about blotting out any name, but it is a promise that God will not blot out the name of him "that overcometh". According to 1 John 5:4,5 "He that overcometh is "he that **believeth that Jesus is the Son of God.**" This is a verse of assurance to all believers that we are eternally secure. "Him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out." John 6:37.
12. **"If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire."** (1 Corinthians 3:15).  
This passage refers to the Judgment Seat of Christ, for Christians only. Christian's works are judged. Some receive rewards (1 Corinthians 3:14). Some suffer loss of reward (3:15), but all believers are saved.
13. **"Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life."** (Revelation 2:10).  
Some people think that those who are faithful unto death will receive eternal life. This verse **does not say eternal life**, it says "crown of life", which is one of the rewards given to Christians at the Judgment Seat of Christ. It is given to those who endure temptation, and hence prove their love for Christ. (James 1:12).
14. **"Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown"** (Rev. 3:11)  
Crown does not refer to eternal life, but to a **reward** given to Christians for **faithful service**. They **may lose rewards** if they don't hold fast to sound Bible doctrine, and fall into deception, sin, and false doctrine.
15. **"But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body."** (1 Corinthians 11:28-29).  
**Damnation** seems to imply eternal punishment in hell. "**Judgment**" is an alternative word, as seen from v.30,31,32. "For this cause many are weak and sickly, ... many sleep." Judgment here is God "chastening" His own. It does not discuss loss of salvation.
16. **"Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith."** (1 Timothy 5:12).  
**Damnation** again means "**judgment**" taking place in this life, not in eternity in hell, as seen by "having", which is present tense, not future in hell. Wuest paraphrases it: "incurring (the reproachful) judgment (of their fellow Christians) because they have nullified their first faith." The passage is about younger Christian widows who vow not to remarry, but change their mind and marry again, and may therefore incur the judgment of others for breaking their vow.
17. **"For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia."** (2 Timothy 4:10).  
Demas was saved, but a **backslidden** fellow worker of Paul's. Colossians 4:14, Philemon 24. There is no mention here of losing salvation. All too often, the pleasures of this world lure Christians to forsake the work of Christ, and to become unfruitful.

18. **"If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it."** (1 John 5:16).  
Some sins are **not** punished by a believer being quickly put to death by God. Sometimes a Christian may sin so seriously that **God judges** that sin with **swift physical death**, eg: Ananias and Sapphira. We don't need to pray for it. Loss of salvation is not being discussed here.
19. **"But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway."** (1 Corinthians 9:27).  
**Castaway** means disapproved (Greek is "adokimos"). It means that by sin and disobedience, a believer is put on the shelf and is of no use to God. (Like an athlete left off the team). "Dokimos", in Greek means "approved", and is used in Romans 14:18; 16:10; 1 Corinthians 11:19; 2 Corinthians 10:18; James 1:12 and 2 Timothy 2:15.
20. **"Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law."** (Galatians 5:1-3).  
The "**yoke of bondage**" is not a lost condition, but a condition of being under the law, of attempting to keep the law as a necessity for salvation. If the Galatians were to put themselves under the law, and submit to the rite of circumcision, they would **deprive** themselves of the effects of the ministry of the risen Christ. Hence "Christ shall profit you nothing."
21. **"Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace."** (Galatians 5:4).  
**"Fallen from grace"**, does not mean loss of salvation, but by insisting on works to remain saved, they have put themselves in a position under the law where **grace is unable to continue working**. Galatian's theme is not salvation from the penalty of sin, but an appeal to live in the liberty of grace, instead of law bondage. This teaching by Judaizers deprived these Galatian Christians of their **dependence** on the **Holy Spirit's work of grace in their lives**. This is what is meant by "fallen from grace."  
The context is the sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit, not salvation. The cure is to: "walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lusts of the flesh." Galatians 5:16. Galatians 5:22,23 describes the result of walking in the Spirit, which is to exhibit the Fruit of the Spirit.  
**Key:** These Galatian Christians had fallen from grace in the sense that **they had deprived themselves of the Holy Spirit's ministry** of giving them **daily grace for daily living**. (2 Corinthians 12:9).
22. **"Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward; How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard Him."** (Hebrews 2:1-3).

We cannot **neglect our salvation** until it is ours. This is speaking of Christians who neglect their salvation. A man may be married and **neglect his wife**, but she is still his wife. Christians do not lose their salvation by neglecting it, but they do **lose their joy and fellowship with the Lord**. They are also chastened in this life by God (“receive a just recompense of reward.”)

23. “Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an **evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.**” (Hebrews 3:12). This verse is written to Christians (“brethren”) as a **warning against backsliding**. We must guard against a **sinful, unbelieving heart**, as shown by the wilderness generation, whose heart turned away from God. The preventative remedy is to **“exhort one another daily ... lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.”** Hebrews 3:13. No loss of salvation is meant.
24. “Let us therefore **fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into His rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.**” (Hebrews 4:1). Israel at Kadesh-Barnea failed to enter the “rest” of the land of Canaan because of their **unbelief in God’s promises** to safely bring them into the land.
- Many Christians today **wander spiritually**, not knowing the **faith-rest life** of blessings that is rightfully theirs by **believing the Bible’s promises for joyful living**. They fail to possess the blessings already theirs (Ephesians 1:3) because of unbelief.
25. “For it is impossible for those who were **once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost. (5) And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, (6) If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame. (7) For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God (8). But that which beareth thorns and briars is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned.**” (Hebrews 6:4-8).

This is a warning to Christians that **unless they go on to spiritual maturity, God may not let them**. They will not lose their salvation, but they will lose the blessings and rewards that could have been theirs if they had claimed them. They will become unfruitful and produce works fit only to be burned. Notice the context in which this passage is found.

In **Chapter 3** of Hebrews we have an **illustration** of the **Children of Israel hardening their hearts and refusing** to enter the promised land (Canaan) because of **unbelief**. God had promised to give them the land and to drive out the inhabitants from before them, but they **refused to believe Him**. Because of this, God would not let them enter the land *even when they desired to do so* and they wandered for forty years until their “carcasses fell in the wilderness”. (Hebrews 3:17).

In **Chapter 4** the writer of Hebrews shows that there is a **“rest” for believers**, but that **some may not enter** into that rest because of unbelief. The land of Canaan is an illustration of that rest. Canaan does not illustrate Heaven, for even though it was a place of victory it was still a place of conflict. It illustrates for the believer that place of **spiritual maturity** where there is **victory, blessing and rest**.

In **Chapter 5**, the writer of Hebrews points out to the believers that **they need to grow up spiritually**. There are many things that he would like to say to them but he cannot because they are still babes in Christ. This thought is continued into **Chapter 6** where he says in **verse 1** that they should **leave the basic things** of the “doctrine of Christ” (the milk) and **go on to “perfection”** (spiritual maturity). In verse 3 he says, “And this we will do, if God permit.” There is, evidently, the **possibility that God will not permit some to go on to spiritual maturity**. Then follows the awful warning of verses 4-8.

Lance B. Latham writes: “**The repentance that can no longer be effected is toward their perfection!** These Christians, ‘dull of hearing’, ‘milk’ Christians, and ‘babes’ need this fearful warning - just as we need it today. There comes a time, in God’s infinite knowledge and wisdom, when they cannot go on to perfection. ‘It is impossible - to renew them again unto repentance’ (not justification).”

God did not abandon the Israelites when He refused to let them enter Canaan but continued to watch over them and care for them. He continued to feed them with manna and to deliver them from their enemies. God will not abandon His own today even though He refuses them the blessings that could have been theirs if they had gone on to spiritual maturity. Notice that those to which this passage refers:

1. “**were once enlightened.**” (v.4). Enlightened (□□□□□□) is translated “illuminated” in Hebrew 10:32, where it refers to all believers. See Eph.1:18 “your understanding being enlightened.”
2. They “**have tasted of the heavenly gift.**” This goes beyond the idea of just **sampling salvation** or coming to the threshold of salvation without really believing. The Greek word translated “tasted” in Hebrews 6:4,5 (□□□□□□□) is the same word used in Hebrews 2:9 where it says concerning Jesus, “**That He should taste death for every man.**” Did Jesus just sample death or did **He enter thoroughly into it?** The latter for certain. The same word is translated “eat” in Acts 10:10; 20:11; 23:14. The word may also be translated “**experience**”. “They have experienced the heavenly gift.” “They have experienced the good Word of God, and the powers of the world to come.” See Matthew 16:28.
3. They “**were made partakers of the Holy Ghost.**” **Partakers** is used in:
  - i) Hebrews 3:1 “partakers of the heavenly calling.”
  - ii) Hebrews 3:14 “partakers of Christ.”
  - iii) Hebrews 12:8 “chastisement, whereof all are partakers.”“If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His.” Romans 8:9.
4. They “**have tasted the powers of the world to come.**” 6:5. This implies that there had been at least some fruit in their lives due to the Holy Spirit working. **Verse 6 does not state from what the believer is falling away.** Therefore this must be determined by the **context**. The writer is speaking of **going on to perfection (spiritual maturity)** in verses 1 to 3 and this is evidently still the subject here (the “for” at the beginning of verse 4 ties the passages together). They are **falling away from going on to spiritual maturity**. The cares of this world are choking their fruitfulness.
5. “**It is impossible ... to renew them again unto repentance.**” 6:6. The word “**repentance**” is used, not salvation. Repentance means a “change of mind.”

- i) When the **unsaved** repent, they change their mind about the person and work of Christ.
- ii) When the **saved** repent of their misdeeds, **restoration** results, not fresh justification. When a believer fails to repent, he **fails** to receive the restoration of fellowship he needs, God will **judge** him now (1 Corinthians 11:31-32), and he will **lose rewards** at the Judgment Seat of Christ. (2 Corinthians 5:10).

**There is evidently a point in the life of a Christian, who repeatedly refuses to go on to spiritual maturity**, at which God will no longer allow him to go on to spiritual maturity even **though the Christian desires to do so**, a point at which God will no longer allow him to have the blessings that could have been his if he had only fully believed. He is still the Lord's own and he will watch over him but he cannot enter into the rest illustrated by Canaan.

In Hebrews 12:16-17 Esau is given as an example of one who did not value his birthright and sold it for a morsel of meat (food). Because of this he lost out on the blessing that could have been his and **"found no place of repentance**, though he sought it ... with **tears**." Some **Christians today do not really value their spiritual birthright** and as a result of **worldliness** lose out on the blessings that could have been theirs, and though they later seek it, they find "no place of repentance."

In Hebrews 6:7-8 the writer uses the earth (soil) that **"bringeth forth herbs"** as an illustration of a Christian whose life is **fruitful**. The writer uses the **earth (soil) which "beareth thorns and briars"** to illustrate a Christian whose life is **unfruitful**, but bears only **that which is worthless**. This is similar to the two kinds of ground in the parable of the **Sower** (Matthew 13:1-23; Mark 4:1-25; Luke 8:4-15). The good ground brought forth much fruit (Matthew 13:23) but the ground with the **thorns**, was **unfruitful** because of the **"care** of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches." (Matthew 13:22).

- 6. **"They crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame."** 6:6.

Those who renounce their Christian faith are taking a step that amounts to a fresh public rejection of Christ. They are agreeing with Jesus' enemies that He deserved to die on the cross. Backslidden Jewish believers going back to Judaism are particularly referred to here. They have a deeply hardened heart against all efforts to win them back, not to Christian conversion, but to Christian commitment.

- 7. **"That which bears thorns and briars is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned."** 6:8.

**Question 1:** What bears thorns and briars? Answer: The soil.  
The soil (believer) is not destroyed by fire, but the unwanted thorns and briars are.

**Question 2:** What is to be burned? Answer: Thorns and briars.  
"Rejected" is "adokimos" in Greek, and means castaway (1 Corinthians 9:27) or disapproved or loss of rewards in heaven. Every Christian's works will be tried by fire (1 Corinthians 3:13). If his works are burned up, he loses rewards. If his works remain, he is rewarded.

John 15:6 speaks of useless works of believers being burned:  
"men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned."

In Hebrews 6:9 the writer does not believe that his readers have gone as far as those in 6:4-6. He is persuaded better things of them, and things that accompany salvation.

#### **Conclusion:**

Hebrews 6:4-8 was written to Jews at a time when many, due to persecution, were giving up the Christian faith, and returning to the old Jewish faith. It was also written to Jews when Temple worship was still going on. Judaism in effect crucified Christ again by their continued sacrifices. These Jewish believers who were going back to Judaism were crucifying Christ afresh. It says nothing about loss of salvation.

- 26. **"For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins. But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries."** (Hebrews 10:26,27).

The warning here is against defection from the faith. Most sin is deliberate, but the writer here is influenced by the Old Testament teaching about sins of presumption (Numbers 15:29-31) which lay outside the sacrificial provisions of the Law. Apostasy from the faith is such a wilful act that for those who commit it, no sacrifice for sins is left.

**Key:** If the sacrifice of Christ should be renounced, there remained no other available sacrifice which could shield an apostate from God's judgment by raging fire.

**Hebrews 10:28-31.** If defiance of the inferior Mosaic covenant brought such punishment, the punishment for defying the superior New Covenant would be much greater.

- To **tread** under foot the Son of God, and
- to **count** the sanctifying blood of the covenant an unholy (common) thing, and
- to **insult** the Spirit of grace who wooed him to Christ, this kind of spiritual rebellion calls for a much worse punishment than the death penalty under the Mosaic Law.

The writer was **not** thinking of hell. Many forms of divine punishment are much worse than immediate death:

1. Jeremiah said "The punishment ... of my people is greater than the punishment of the sin of Sodom that was overthrown in a moment." Lamentations 4:6.
  2. "They that be slain with the sword are better than they that be slain with hunger ... the hands of the pitiful women have sodden their own children..." Lamentations 4:9,10.
  3. King Saul's last days were burdened with such mental and emotional trouble that death by suicide was a release. Don't regard this punishment as an idle threat. God has claimed the right to take vengeance and to judge His people. Hebrews 10:30.
- 27. **"Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward."** (Hebrews 10:35). A Christian may lose his confidence, without losing salvation.

28. "Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man **draw back**, My soul shall have no pleasure in him." (Hebrews 10:38).

If a Christian **draws back** (backslides) he will be chastened by the Lord in His displeasure. This verse does not say that he is lost, as v.39 proves: "But we are not of them who **draw back** unto **perdition**; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul." God may be displeased with believers, but this does not mean or say that salvation is lost.

29. "And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall **take away** his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book." (Revelation 22:19).

**Question:** Does a person who gets his part taken from the book of life lose his salvation? Not so. Consider the following:

What is the book of life?

1. Exodus 32:32-35 "Yet now, if thou wilt forgive their sin -; and if not, blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book which thou hast written. And the Lord said unto Moses, **Whosoever hath sinned against me, him will I blot out** of my book."
2. Psalm 56:8 "... put thou my tears into thy bottle: are they not **in thy book**?"
3. Psalm 69:28 "Let them be blotted out of the book of the living, and not be written with the righteous."
4. Psalm 139:16 "In thy book **all my members are written**."
5. Daniel 12:1 "... there shall be a time of trouble, ... at that time **thy people shall be delivered**, every one that shall be found written in the book."
6. Malachi 3:16 "Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that **feared the Lord**, and that **thought upon his name**."
7. Philippians 4:3 "**My fellowlabourers**, whose names are in the book of life."
8. Revelation 3:5 "**He that overcometh**, the same shall be clothed in white raiment and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name..."
9. Revelation 13:8 "All that dwell upon the earth shall **worship him**, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."
10. Revelation 17:8 "They that dwell on the earth shall **wonder**, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast."
11. Revelation 20:12 "another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the **dead were judged out of those things** which were written in the books, **according to their works**."
12. Revelation 20:15 "And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was **cast into the lake of fire**."
13. Revelation 21:27 "They which are written in the Lamb's book of life (shall **enter the New Jerusalem**.)"
14. Revelation 22:19. "And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book."

**Note:** 1. We never read of names being entered into the book of life during a person's life.

- a) For believers today, our names are in the Book of Life. Philippians 4:3.
  - b) Believer's names are written in heaven. Luke 10:20.
  - c) As the church of the firstborn, our names are written in heaven. Hebrews 12:23.
  - d) Tribulation overcomer's names are written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world. Revelation 17:8.
2. Names may be blotted out of the Book of Life.
- a) Moses prayed, "blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book." Exodus 32:32.
  - b) "Let them be blotted out of the book of the living..." Psalms 69:28.
  - c) Sardis overcomers names will not be blotted out. Revelation 3:5.

Therefore, many names (if not everybody's names) are in the Book of Life originally, but names are eventually blotted out for a final rejection of Christ and His Word, from which Christ can see no repentance. There is no reference to believer's names being written in the book at the moment of conversion.

3. These names in the Book of life **will be confessed by the Lord** before His Father. "Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father..." Matthew 10:32; Luke 12:8.

**Conclusion:** Revelation 22:19 assumes that a true child of God will not tamper with the Scriptures. Revelation 3:5 says that a believer's name will not be blotted out because of his faith in Christ, which all overcomer's have (1 John 5:4,5). Some have seen the Book of Life, not as the roll of those who are saved, but a list of those for whom Christ died, that is, all humanity who ever had physical life. As they come to maturity, they have the responsibility of receiving or rejecting Christ. Those who reject Christ find their names blotted out of the Book of Life. Those who accept Christ as Saviour are confirmed permanently in the Book of Life. This viewpoint is to be preferred.

30. "Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: For if God spared not the natural branches, **take heed lest He also spare not thee**." (Romans 11:20-21). Read all of Romans 11.

**Question: Who is this spoken to? "take heed lest He also spare not thee."**

**Answer:** Romans 11:13 reads "For I speak to you **Gentiles**." The natural branches are the Jews, broken off because of unbelief (11:20). Through the Jews fall, salvation is offered to the Gentiles (11:12). **The warning here is to the Gentiles, not to individual believers** that they will be cast out. In the millennium, Gentiledom will be cut off, as was Israel, and Israel will be restored to its former place as the channel of God's blessings to earth.

31. "Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and **will remove thy candlestick** out of his place, except thou repent." (Revelation 2:5). This warning of **removing thy candlestick** is to the local church at Ephesus (1:20), not to an individual Christian. When churches become lazy and compromising, and allow unbelievers to control it, they lose their candlestick and cease to be one of God's churches.

32. "I will spue thee out of my mouth." (Revelation 3:16).  
This warning is to the lukewarm Laodicean church, not to any individual believer. Rev. 3:20 is an invitation to individuals. Eternal security does not apply to local churches, only to individuals.
33. "Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye **stand**; By which also ye are saved **if ye keep in memory** what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain." (1 Corinthians 15:1-2).
- Nowhere in the Bible is anyone said to be saved from hell **by keeping anything in their memory**. Salvation from the **penalty** of sin is an already accomplished fact for the believer, not a process now going on. However, each day the believer is being saved from the power of sin, as a continuing process in his life. How? By keeping Bible preaching in his memory.
- 1 Corinthians 15:1 is the **past** tense of salvation "which they **had received**" (Greek: aorist, active, past, indicative) in which they stand. This shows that they were already saved from the **penalty of sin**.
  - 1 Corinthians 15:2 is the **present** tense of salvation "By which also ye are saved" (literally: are being saved daily; Greek: present, passive, indicative - indicating action now going on). They are "being saved" from the **power of sin**, they are growing in grace, maturing as Christians, if they were keeping in memory (holding fast) what Paul preached to them.
  - "**Unless ye have believed in vain**" means unless your belief was "unreal" - unless they had never really been saved.
34. "Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more **in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.**" (Philippians 2:12).  
This command is in the **present** tense of salvation, being saved from the **power** of sin in their daily lives, growing in grace, growing in Christlikeness, in sanctification. "**Work out your own salvation**" is urging Christians to **mature spiritually**. There is no hint here of an unsaved person doing good works to earn salvation because:
1. Those addressed were already saved: "my beloved".
  2. The Bible clearly teaches that nobody is saved by works. When Paul was with them, he taught, inspired, and encouraged them to grow in grace. Now in Paul's absence they were responsible to grow in grace. They have justification. Paul speaks about their sanctification. Carry your growth to Christlikeness. 1 John 3:3 commands each believer to "purify himself".
- "Work out your own salvation" means to cultivate a field that you already own.  
"Work out" means to "put into practice in their daily living."  
They were not told to work **for** their salvation, but to work **out** their salvation. It means to work out the details of your salvation, applying it to daily living.
35. "Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in so doing thou shalt both **save thyself**, and them that hear thee." (1 Timothy 4:16).  
Again, salvation here is in the **present** tense. This is not talking about salvation from the **penalty** of sin (past), but of salvation from the power of sin (present). Timothy was already saved, but continuing in sound doctrine would save him and others from false doctrine, unbelief and error. Hence "save thyself" means to save yourself from false doctrine and carnality.
36. "While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me have I **kept**, and **none of them is lost, but the son of perdition**: ..." (John 17:12).  
Some say that this verse shows that Judas was once saved, but that he lost his salvation.  
**Answer:** Jesus says that He kept those that the Father had given Him.  
"This is the Father's will ... that of all which He hath given me I should lose nothing." John 6:39.  
"...of them which thou gavest me have I lost none." John 18:9.  
Judas was never given by the Father to Jesus.  
"Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that **believed not**, and who should **betray** Him." John 6:64.  
"Have I not chosen you twelve, and one of you is a **devil**? He spake of **Judas Iscariot** ...for he it was that should betray him..." John 6:70,71.  
Judas was chosen as one of the twelve, not chosen to be saved. In John 17:12, Judas is not listed as an exception to those that Jesus had kept, but **in contrast** to those that He kept. None of those that the Father gave to Jesus was lost, but Judas was lost.  
"That he may take part of this **ministry** and **apostleship**; from which Judas by transgression fell..." Acts 1:25.  
Judas fell from an **official position of ministry and apostleship**, he did not fall from salvation, because he was never saved.
37. "From that time many of His disciples (followers) went back, and **walked no more with Him.**" (John 6:66).  
Even a true believer may backslide and walk out of fellowship with the Lord. Loss of fellowship is not loss of salvation.
38. "Fight the good fight of faith, **lay hold on eternal life**, whereunto thou art also called..." (1 Timothy 6:12).  
"**Lay hold on eternal life**," means that Paul wanted Timothy to experience more of what eternal life is about in his daily life. Seek and seize the crown of victory as eagerly as competitors at the Greek games sought the winner's prize.
39. "Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may **lay hold on eternal life.**" (1 Timothy 6:19).  
Rich people need to use their riches to win people to eternal life in Christ in heaven. They must not live only for this life, but **live for eternity, laying hold of the issues of eternal life**. Use what God has given you for eternal blessings and the salvation of others.
40. "Follow **peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.**" (Heb 12:14)  
We who believe already have holiness.  
"Ye are a chosen generation, a holy nation ..." 1 Peter 2:9.  
Hebrews 2:14 tells us to "**follow holiness**." This means that we should seek, through yielding to the Holy Spirit, to cultivate true holiness in our daily lives. We should seek to cultivate that which is already true of us in our eternal standing before God. Since no sin can stand in God's presence, Christians will be sinless when we see the Lord (1 John 3:2). In view of this, let us pursue holiness here and now.

41. *“Looking diligently lest **any man fail of the grace of God**: lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.” (Hebrews 12:15).*  
After we have been saved by grace, grace continues to work, teaching us to live “soberly, righteously and godly.” Titus 2:11,12. Some believers can be so controlled by sin and envy, that they can no longer respond to some people with the grace of God, but with envy, bitterness, anger and nervousness. They react in carnality, not in grace. They have failed of the grace of God. They, by bitterness, cut themselves off from the grace of God operating in their lives. They constantly act ungraciously.
42. *“To present you **holy and unblameable**<sup>299</sup> and **unreproveable**<sup>410</sup> in His sight: if ye **continue in the faith** grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard ...” Colossians 1:22,23.*  
Some say that salvation is ours only **IF we continue in the faith**. Here “IF”(1489) means “that which is taken for granted.”  
**Answer 1:** v.22,23. We will be presented holy, unblameable, and unreproveable in his sight: IF (or since, or it is taken for granted):  
a) ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and  
b) be not moved away from the hope of the Gospel.  
It is taken for granted that these two conditions will be fulfilled, “IF” means **certainty**. This passage is not looking to the future, but speaks of the Christian’s present condition as a test of the **reality** of his salvation.  
**Answer 2:** If we continue in the faith (sound Bible doctrine) we will be presented, holy, unblameable, and unreproveable in his sight at the Judgment Seat of Christ. We will be approved, we will have confidence, and not be ashamed at his coming if we abide in Christ (1 John 2:28), and continue in the faith of sound doctrine (Colossians 1:22,23). If we don’t abide or continue in the faith, we will be disapproved, ashamed and lose rewards at Christ’s coming. The subject is rewards, not loss of salvation.
43. *“But Christ as a Son over His own house; **whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence** and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.” (Hebrews 3:6).*  
Some say that this verse teaches loss of salvation if we do not **hold fast our confidence** firm to the end. This is false because:  
**Answer:** The writer in Hebrews 3:5 speaks of Moses being faithful in all his house (the Tabernacle). The writer uses the word “we”, to include himself in the scope of this admonition. Moses’ house was a sphere of priestly activities v.5. Christ’s house v.6, is **not** the body of Christ, of all believers. In 3:12 the writer warns us against “an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the living God. Should any believer do this, they would forfeit their robes in the Son’s priestly house, which is only maintained by holding firmly to their Christian profession. The writer did not mean loss of salvation. The writer was thinking in priestly terms. As long as the readers held firmly to their Christian commitment, they also functioned within Christ’s priestly system. Just as a Levite could withdraw from participating in Moses’ tabernacle, so too may a true Christian withdraw from his priestly role as a servant of Christ. Therefore, **Christians (as some Levites did) could withdraw from their priestly service to God** over God’s house.
44. *“Brethren, if any of you do **err from the truth**, and **one convert him**: Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall **save a soul from death**, and shall hide a multitude of sins.” (James 5:19-20).*  
The sinning one here is a believer who has gone astray from the path of truth or has backslidden. To patiently go after such a person and to turn him again to obey the

Lord is to save him from physical death, of God’s discipline, and will hide, or cover or prevent a multitude of sins. He is preserved from going into more sin, by being restored.

45. *“Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times **some shall depart from the faith**, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.” (1 Timothy 4:1-3).*  
These people spoken of here have departed from the **faith of their fathers**. There is no reference here to departing from personal faith. “The” before faith, means “Faith as that body of doctrine which Christians believe”, not faith as an action. **These people never believed**.
46. *“For **if** after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the **knowledge** of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the **latter end is worse with them than the beginning**. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.” (2 Peter 2:20,21).*  
Here it speaks of **“knowledge” of Christ**, but it does not say that they have received Christ. Knowledge is not enough to save a person. One must appropriate that knowledge to himself and accept Christ’s payment for sin. When these teachers or their victims reject the knowledge about Jesus Christ, their end is deeper corruption (entanglement), and a more severe degree of punishment. For example, many children have been raised in a Christian home, been taught the knowledge of Christ from infancy, and been religious, attending church regularly. They have escaped much of the outward pollution of the world. But if they reject Christ as Saviour, and go into sin, they will be worse off than if they had never known about the way of righteousness. Peter chose dogs and pigs (lowest animals v.22) to describe people who knew the truth and turned away from it. A **dog** pictures a false teacher. A **pig** pictures the natural **unsaved man** who may look cleansed outwardly but still loves the mud (the things of the world), and as soon as the restraint is off, he will go back to the filth in which he once lived. *“But it is happened unto them according to the proverb, The **dog** is turned to his own vomit again; and the **sow** that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.”(2 Peter 2:22).* The dog and the pig were never saved.
47. *“From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling.” (1 Timothy 1:6).*  
This refers to Christians who have **been lead astray by false teachers** into fruitlessness (vain jangling). “Vain jangling” (3150) means “senseless, mischievous, vain talking” which well describes believers who have swallowed false doctrine, and talk about it to others, trying to persuade others of their false views.
48. *“**Holding faith**, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning **faith have made shipwreck**: Of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.” (1 Timothy 1:19-20).* It is possible to be shipwrecked and live.
- **Holding faith** means faithfulness to the Christian cause, as a soldier. He should steadfastly believe true doctrine.
  - **Good conscience** means to honestly follow what is right.



Men make shipwreck of their faith by not keeping a good conscience. Men shipwreck their faith because they wish to indulge in sin. To remain faithful demands moral purity.

Sins and departing from true doctrine will shipwreck a man's faith. Delivering a person to satan, is to allow satan to bring physical suffering to disobedient Christians. Many Christians who put away faith (doctrines) by believing false doctrine, are still saved.

49. *"And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus; Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and **overthrow the faith of some.**" (2 Timothy 2:17-18).*

Hymenaeus and Philetus taught false doctrine. A Christian may believe and teach some false doctrines. The Lord will chasten him, but it does not say that he will lose his salvation. **"Overthrow the faith"** means to depart from true doctrine.

50. *"Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and **I will receive you.**" 2 Corinthians 6:17.*

**"Wherefore"** means "since you are a peculiar people, and God dwells among you", come out from idolaters and unbelievers.

**"Come out"** (Isaiah 52:11) where Jews are called to leave their exile in Babylon with its idols.

**"Be separate"** from all worldly corrupting influences.

**"Touch not the unclean thing"** means to be pure from idolatry etc.

**"I will receive you"** means "I will enjoy fellowship with you."

**"I will be a father unto you"** means God will protect us as a father protects His children if we forsake idolatry.

Obedience brings God's fatherly protection. Disobedience brings self inflicted suffering.

Some think that this verse says that God will only receive those who come out and be separate. This appeal for a separated life is based on the previous verse (v.16 "Ye are the temple of the living God). Therefore v.7 **is an appeal to holy living based on the security of the believer that we are the temple of God.** There is no threatened loss of salvation. God promises "I will receive you." There is no "if" condition here.

51. *"If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: **IF we deny Him, He will also deny us.**"(2 Tim 2:12).*

Some say that this verse means that if we deny that we know Him, then He will deny that He knows us and we will be lost. **Answer:** The word **"deny"** here means **"to withhold"**.

If we deny Him (**withhold** from Christ) our service, or our fellowship, He will deny us (**withhold** from us) the **blessings, joy and fellowship that could have been ours.**

It cannot mean loss of salvation because Paul uses "we" including himself and Timothy. He never thought that he could lose salvation. What else could it mean?

The context in v.12 is **suffering**. Some Christians suffered with Christ. They will reign with Christ in the millennium. Some Christians deny Christ during suffering or in their lives. Deny means "not willing to suffer for Christ" and "failing to confess Christ." Peter denied Christ but he did not lose his salvation. Christ rebuked him for denying Him.

At the Judgment Seat of Christ, the Lord will deal with our failures and successes. If we deny Christ now, Christ will deny us blessings, rewards & heavenly privileges in front of the holy angels.

- "Whosoever therefore shall **confess** me before men, him will I also confess before my father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall **deny** me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven." Matthew 10:32,33.
- "He that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God." Luke 12:9.
- "Whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels." Mark 8:38.

We will be held accountable for our unfaithfulness by denying us some earthly joy and some heavenly privileges.

## 95. WRONG VALUES TAUGHT IN SCHOOL, MEDIA AND SOCIETY (9 ERRORS OF HUMANISM)

**Bible Reading:** Psalm 1; Acts 20:31.

**Aim:** To expose errors in society and to warn parents of what their children may be learning at school.

**Introduction:** We all agree that much error is taught in schools, media and society. What is it? How can we help our children recognize it and reject it as false? If your teenager listens to heavy rock music, grows his hair long, smokes cigarettes, takes drugs, rebels against God's and your authority, you can be sure that they learnt it from school and peers. If we don't warn our children of error, they are very prone to be deceived by it and we will lose our children as they depart from our convictions, God's values and from service to God.

The Public school actively teaches the religion of humanism.

**Question:** What is humanism?

**Answer:** Humanists believe that men, not God determine values and that these values are based on prevailing circumstances. Humanists enthusiastically seek to remake the world in man's image.

**NOTE:** Nobody thinks without making assumptions. Those assumptions are a person's religion.

Humanists speak very dogmatically as if they are right.

In the name of church/state separation, humanists have largely removed from school textbooks all Bible doctrines and replaced their own humanist doctrines.

What are some main false humanist views that state schools teach that are anti-Biblical that we must guard children against?

**1. EVOLUTION:** That man gradually emerged by chance from lower life forms over millions of years.

Humanists believe that man invents truth and invents his own value system.

However, since men originate from God, then truth and values must come from God.

"So God created man in his own image." Genesis 1:27a.

"Know ye that the Lord He is God. It is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves." Psalm 100:3.

**2. SELF AUTHORITY:** The belief that man is his own authority & is not accountable to a higher power

This "self-sufficiency" generates self interest, self-gratification, self-indulgence and self-righteousness (ie: I am right, who are you to tell me what to do?)

Each individual is told to define his own values and order his own conduct.

**Humanism as Found In Public School Textbooks:**

"Think of a situation that would probably result in a difference of opinion between yourself and your parents. How would you defend your position? With what arguments would your parents counter? Write a dialogue between your parents and yourself." SE-189, col.2. par.2, **Psychology For Living**. McGraw-Hill Webster Div., c. 1983, Grade 5 Health.

**These violate Biblical Principles:**

"Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!" Isaiah 5:23 (See Jeremiah 17:9; 1 Corinthians 2:14).

"To obey is better than sacrifice. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry." 1 Samuel 15:22,23.

"Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right." Ephesians 6:1.

**3. SITUATION ETHICS.** The belief that there are no absolute rules to live by.

Thus man becomes the final authority for his actions, depending on circumstances.

This assumes that man may define different moral codes to fit different circumstances.

Therefore, there are no rules, no right or wrong, no guidelines, and people can do what they want.

**Humanism as Found In Public School Textbooks:**

**a)** "There are exceptions to almost all moral laws, depending on the situation. What is wrong in one instance may be right in another. Most children learn that it is wrong to lie. But later they learn that it is tactless, if not actually wrong, not to lie under certain circumstances...."

SE-45, col.2, par.1, lines 5-11, **Inquiries In Sociology**, Allyn & Bacon, c. 1978. HS Psychology.

**b) "Lesson 3: Values And Culture. What Are Values?"**

It is important to work hard.....You should tell the truth at all times.....Stealing is bad.....Let each pupil decide for himself how he feels about each....Emphasise that this is not a test, and that there are no 'right' or 'wrong' answers.....". SE-10-11, TE-11, col.3, par. 2, **Man and Society**, Silver Burdett, 1972. Grade 5 Social Studies.

**These Violate Biblical Principles:** The Ten Commandments. Exodus 20:1-17.

"Be not deceived: God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that he shall also reap." Gal. 6:7.

" So shall I keep thy law continually for ever and ever. I will walk at liberty; for I seek thy precepts." Psalm 119:44-45.

"Woe to them that call evil good and good evil: that put darkness for light, and light for darkness, that put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter. Woe to them that are wise in their own eyes." Isaiah 5:20,21.

**4. SEXUAL PERMISSIVENESS:** The belief that all forms of sexual expression are acceptable e.g. sex before marriage, homosexuality, adultery, etc. They believe that school sex education is necessary, provided it is taught without Biblical morals.

Since they believe in evolution, then right and wrong don't exist. Hence they think that any sex is OK.

They say that homosexuality is just an alternative lifestyle. God says homosexuality is an abomination.

They say abortion is alright. God says it is murder.

They say free sex is alright. God says it is fornication and He will judge them for it.

They say sexually transmitted diseases can be cured. Wrong: Herpes, AIDS, Hepatitis can't be cured.

### Humanism as Found In Public School Textbooks:

"Adolescent petting is an important opportunity to learn sexual responses and to gratify sexual and emotional desires without a more serious commitment." SE-161 picture caption, **Life and Health**, Random House, c. 1980, Grade 9-10 Health.

"Rarely is any physical harm done to the child by molesters and exhibitionists.." SE-234, col. 2.

"A person with variant sexual interests is not necessarily bad, sick, or mentally ill." SE-218, col. 1.

"Venereal disease can be easily treated....." SE-103, col. 1. par. 2, lines 6-7.

"Delbert and Sally are living together while they are in college. They do not expect to marry... they feel that living together provides each other with love, affection and support." SE-278, col. 1, par. 2, **Person To Person**, Bennett, c. 1981 HS Homemaking.

"Divorce is considered an acceptable way of solving a problem." SE-109. par 3.

"Others have a 'til love do us part' attitude towards marriage. They see marriage as a short term goal. They seem to expect that someday their love will come to an end. They plan to end their marriage at the same time." SE-102, par.1, **Homemaking Skills For Everyday Living**, Goodheart-Wilcox Co., c. 1981, Grade 6-8 Homemaking.

### These Violate Biblical Principles:

"When lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death." James 1:15.

"Whoso causeth the righteous to go astray in an evil way, he shall fall himself into his own pit." Proverbs 28:10. (See also Galatians. 6:8; Leviticus. 18:22-30).

Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge." Hebrews 13:4.

### 5. ANTI-BIBLICAL BIAS.

Humanism rejects the Bible as our sole authority and teaches children that it is not important to know the Bible. The Bible is relegated to a place of no importance.

This idea assumes that man is the source of all truth and value systems.

### Humanism as Found In Public Schools Textbooks:

"Anthropologists studying human customs, religious practices, ritualism, and the priestcraft came to the conclusion that men created their own religious beliefs so that their beliefs answered their special needs. (The God of the Judeo-Christian tradition was a god worshipped by a desert folk. Heaven was high above the desert, cool and pleasant).

The Eskimos...reversed the concept...To the anthropologists religions were functional, they served man's needs, and they were clearly man created." SE-541, col. 1 and 2, **Perspectives In United States History**, Field, c. 1972, High School American History.

### These Violate Biblical Principles:

"The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good." Psalm 14:1 (see also Isaiah 55:8,9 and II Corinthians 4:3,4).

"Them that honour me, I will honour." 1 Samuel. 2:30.

### Humanism in schools includes:

1. Science teaching says that creation is wrong, and man evolved.
2. English teaching says that the Bible is not the best literature to study. That written by man is better.
3. History starts with Napoleon in 1800, and the Battle of Hastings in 1066, not with Creation, Israel, Jesus Christ, or the Reformation.
4. Geography explains the world, ignoring the Flood.
5. Personal development ignores Salvation, prayer and Bible character.
6. Ancient History ignores Creation, Flood, Abraham, Israel and Moses.
7. Art is abstract and meaningless, not Biblical in content.
8. Music is Rock music, not melody to worship God.

### 6. ANTI-FREE ENTERPRISE.

The belief is that government ownership or control of the economy should replace private ownership of property and the free market economy.

This economic collectivism is known as 'Big brother movement', 'Cradle to the grave welfare', Socialism.

### Humanism as Found In Public Schools Textbooks:

a) "Conclude the activity by pointing out that this breakdown in public morality revealed the need for greater government supervision."

TG-3, col. 2, par. 4, **A History Of The U.S. From 1877**, Holt. c. 1979, HS Sociology.

b) "**Learning Check..To Discuss:** Some people feel that the government should pay every family in the United States a minimum amount every year if they do not earn that amount by working. Would you support such an idea? If so, how much should this amount be? If not, why not?"

SE-407, **Civics Government and Citizenship**, Allyn & Bacon, 1993, Grade 8, Civil Government. c) "Communist governments provide many benefits for their workers....The governments also provide for health care, long vacations, and old age income. Personal incomes tend to be low...But expenses are also low. Most people in Eastern Europe can meet their daily needs without much difficulty. SE-325, col. 1, **World Geography**, Follett, 1980. HS World Geography.

d) "**Communist Countries...** All wealth is shared among the people according to their needs..."

SE-318, col. 2, **World Geography**, Follett, c. 1983, HS World Geography.

### These Violate Biblical Principles:

"He becometh poor that dealeth with a slack hand: but the hand of the diligent maketh rich." Prov. 10:4.

"They shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree." Micah 4:4.

Question: Why does Satan hate free enterprise?

Answer: Because it provides wealth to send missionaries, to print Gospel tracts, and to build churches.

Therefore, satan's aim is to make everybody poor, so that no money goes for Gospel preaching.

**7. ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT.** The belief that World govt. should replace national governments.

**Question:** Why does Satan want this?

**Answer:** It would bring in the Antichrist and it can pass laws that would stop the spread of the Gospel. It can more easily persecute and control Christians.

#### **Humanism as Found In Public School Textbooks:**

a) "Go where you may and search where you will...search out every wrong... Then you will agree with me that, for revolting barbarity and shameless hypocrisy, America has no rival."

SE-88, **Many Peoples, One Nation**, Random House, c. 1973, Grade 5 American History.

b) "Write a constitution for a world government..." SE-451, col. 2, par.2 **American Citizenship, The Way We Govern**, Addison-Wesley, c.1979, HS Civil Government.

c) "Many people think a stronger UN or a new international organisation is needed if we and the other people of the world are to move safely into the 21st century. Only a stronger world body, they argue can meet tomorrows challenges..."

SE-785, **American Citizenship Program**, Scholastic, c.1977, Holy Spirit Civil Government.

#### **These Violate Biblical Principles:**

"So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth"...Genesis 11:6,7,8,9.

"He causeth all, small and great, rich and poor to receive a mark..." Revelation. 13:16-18.

**8. DEATH EDUCATION.** The belief that there is no hope of existence beyond the grave, no heaven or hell. Euthanasia and suicide are viable options.

Drugs are sold and used as a slow killer. Suicide is a theme of Rock music. Children are never challenged to think about heaven and hell. Death is stated as the end of it all and we can't know what lies ahead. It is implied that heaven and hell are not important issues to consider and plan for.

"When you are dead, you are dead" is the philosophy. No sense of God judging man's sin is mentioned.

#### **Humanism as Found In Public School Textbooks:**

**The Experience Of Dying.** The individual experiences a cosmic consciousness, characterised by a sense of unity with other people, nature and the universe; a feeling of being outside time and space; and extra ordinary feeling of contentment and ecstasy." SE-530, col. 2, lines 12-17, **Life and Death**, Random house, c. 1980, Grade 9-10 Health.

**These Violate Biblical Principles:** "I am tormented in this flame." Luke 16:24.

"There shall be both a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and the unjust." Acts. 24:15b.

"But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death." Proverbs 8:36.

"Hell...where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched." Mark 9:44,46,48.

"Lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven." Matthew 6:20.

**9. A DISTORTED REALISM.** The belief that all children should be exposed to a **widespread of viewpoints** such as bad language, immorality and perversions as acceptable modes of 'self expressions'.

We should protect our children from evil, not teach them evil. "Be simple concerning evil."

"The truth shall set you free." Children need a clear guide to right and wrong as the devil, in order to destroy them and send them to hell, must break down their conscience and God's value system.

**Lesson: BIBLE TRUTH = Reality;** Anything else = Deception.

#### **Humanism as Found In Public School Textbooks:**

a) **"Talking About Your Own Ideas.** 1. Most people think that cheating is wrong, even if is to only get a penny, which is what Shan did. Do you think there is ever a time when it might be right? Tell when it is. Tell why you think it is right."

SE-76 **Communicating, The Health English Series, D.C.** Health,1973 Grade 3,Language &Grammar

b) "The moralistic value system remained firm in the rural areas and the small towns of America until World War II...since WWII, rural and small town America began to pass into history. Today urban America, with a changing set of values is taking over. "Protestant evangelists continue to crisscross the land, attempting to revitalise the old religion, the old culture. They preach the old values, the old standards, the old time religion. But now they represent a waning culture."

SE-514 **Perspectives In United States History**, Field, c. 1972, HS American History.

#### **These Violate Biblical Principles:**

"Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners." I Corinthians 15:33.

"Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers." Ephesians 4:29. (Ephesians 5:11-12; Philippians 4:8).

#### **Conclusion:**

"Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them." Ephesians 5:10-14

Teach your children to watch for and reject these wrong values, & to learn scriptures that oppose them.

The best answer is to Home-school them yourself through Accelerated Christian Education (ACE).

## 96. BAPTISMAL REGENERATION

**Question:** Does baptism save a person from hell?

**Answer:** No, for the following reasons:

Baptism is not a part of the gospel. To include baptism in the gospel is to add a **work** to Christ's work on the cross. It means that if we must be baptised in order to be saved, then Christ's work on the cross was not good enough to pay for our sins. Those groups who believe in baptismal regeneration (the error that baptism saves us from hell) include:

- The Boston Movement International Churches of Christ.
- The Old Anglican Church Prayer Book, page 289. "my Baptism; wherein I was made a member of Christ, the child of God, and an inheritor of the kingdom of heaven."
- Roman Catholic Church as one of the sacraments.

### I. THE GOSPEL.

The gospel that saves us is defined in I Corinthians 15:1-4. It contains no hint of baptism as part of it. "Moreover, brethren, **I declare** unto you the **gospel** which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved ... how that

- i) **Christ died for our sins** according to the scriptures;
- ii) And that **he was buried**,
- iii) And that **he rose again** the third day according to the scriptures.

### II. FAITH IN CHRIST SAVES US, NOT BAPTISM.

It is never said that baptism saves us from hell, but many times the Bible says that faith or belief in Christ saves us. Consider these 16 examples:

- i) The woman who anointed Jesus' feet with ointment: "He said to the woman, **Thy faith** hath saved thee; go in peace." Luke 7:50.
- ii) The repentant leper: "**Thy faith** hath saved thee." Luke 17:19.
- iii) Blind Bartimaeus: "Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight; **thy faith** hath saved thee." Luke 18:42.
- iv) Woman who touched Jesus: "Daughter, **thy faith** hath made thee whole; go in peace." Mark 5:34.
- v) Palsied man let down through a roof: "When Jesus saw their **faith**, he said unto the sick of the palsy, son, thy sins be forgiven thee." Luke 5:20; Mark 2:5.
- vi) Jews and Gentiles: "Put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts **by faith**." Acts 15:9.
- vii) "We believe that through the **grace** of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they." Acts 15:11.
- viii) "To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever **believeth in him** shall receive remission of sins." Acts 10:43.
- ix) "By him **all that believe** are **justified from all things**, from which they could not be justified by the law of Moses." Acts 13:39.
- x) "That they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them that are sanctified **by faith** that is in me." Acts 26:18.
- xi) "This is the work of God, that ye **believe** on him whom he hath sent." John 6:29.  
Note: 50 verses in chapter 91 showing that "works do not save us."
- xii) **KEY PASSAGE:** Acts 10:43-48 teaches we are **Saved first, baptised later:**

If baptismal regeneration is right, then we should see people baptised first, then saved later, or saved and baptised simultaneously. We never see this. We do

see many times people being saved first, then being baptised. Notice the first Gentile convert in the Church age, Cornelius and his household in Acts 10:43-48.

The order of events in Acts 10:43-48 are:

- Hear: a) **Peter preaches** that through Christ's name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins. v.43.
- Saved: b) Cornelius' household was **saved**, as seen by:  
"the **Holy Ghost** fell on all them which heard the Word..... on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the **Holy Ghost**." v.44,45.  
"they heard them **speak with tongues**, and **magnify** God." v.46.  
"which **have received the Holy Ghost** as well as we." v.47.  
**Four times the Bible says that they were saved.**
- Baptised: c) Cornelius' household was **baptised** straight away **AFTER** they were saved.  
"Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptised which **HAVE RECEIVED** (past tense) the Holy Ghost as well as we?" v.47.  
"And he commanded them to be **baptised** in the name of the Lord." v.48.  
Two verses prove that they were **saved first, then baptised** afterwards.

**Conclusion:** The New Testament pattern is:

|                                                |
|------------------------------------------------|
| <b>SAVED</b> first, then <b>BAPTISED</b> later |
|------------------------------------------------|

This disproves Baptismal Regeneration, and shows that **Baptism does not save us.**

- xiii) The Blood of Christ saves us, not water.  
"In whom we have redemption through his **blood**, the forgiveness of sins." Colossians 1:14.
- xiv) Believers in heaven sing of salvation by Christ's blood, not by water baptism:  
"They sung a new song, saying ... thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by **thy blood** ..." Revelation 5:9.
- xv) Believers overcome satan, **not by water baptism**, but "they overcame him by the **blood** of the lamb, and by the **word** of their testimony..." Revelation 12:11.
- xvi) Paul did not teach a different plan of salvation in Acts 22:16 than he taught the Philippian jailer in Acts 16:31.  
"**Believe** on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved."

### III. MISUNDERSTOOD VERSES that seem to TEACH BAPTISMAL REGENERATION.

If water baptism saves us, then everybody who believed on Christ and died without the chance to be baptised are doomed to hell forever, just because no water was available.

Those who died as babies, or those saved on their deathbed, or those saved on the battlefield then killed would not have eternal life according to this false doctrine. How do Baptismal Regenerationists arrive at this doctrine?

1. **1 Peter 3:21** "Baptism doth also now save us ..."  
Let us quote the full verse: "The like figure whereunto even baptism **doth also now save us** (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but **the answer of a good conscience toward God**) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ."

Notice the following about this verse:

a) Baptism saves **US**. **Question:** Who is the “us”?

**Answer:** “Us” is believers, those already born again, including Peter and his readers in the churches.

b) **Question:** How does baptism save believers in Christ?

**Answer:** Baptism saves us from having a bad conscience toward God, not from sins or from hell. When a believer is told that he must get baptised, he is faced with a choice. If I get baptised, I have a **good** conscience toward God, knowing that I have obeyed what God has commanded me.

If I **don't** get baptised, I have a **bad** conscience toward God, knowing that I have disobeyed what God has commanded me. Therefore, getting baptised saves a believer from a **bad** conscience toward God. Baptism is truly the “answer of a good conscience toward God.”

2. **John 3:5** “Except a man be **born of water** and of the **Spirit**, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God.”

Baptismal Regenerationists think that “born of water” means salvation by baptism. Yet this contradicts all other salvation scriptures which we cannot possibly throw out.

**Question:** What does “born of water” mean?

**Answer:** Just as there are two parents required for physical birth, so there are two parents required for spiritual birth: the Spirit of God and the Word of God. The Spirit of God takes the Word of God, and when the sinner believes, He imparts eternal life.

The following verses show that “**born of water**” means born of the **Word of God**:

a) James 1:18 “Of his own will **begat** he us with the **word** of truth ...”

b) 1 Peter 1:23 “Being **born again**, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, **by the Word of God** ...”

c) John 15:3 “Now ye are **clean** through the **word** which I have spoken unto you.”

d) Ephesians 5:26 “That he (Christ) might sanctify and **cleanse** it (the church) with the **washing of water** by the **word**.”

The Word of God (symbolized by water) washes away our sins.

e) Psalm 19:7 “The **law** of the Lord is perfect, **converting the soul**.”  
God’s Word saves our souls.

The Bible is called “the sword of the Spirit.” Ephesians 6:17.

The following verses link the Spirit, or the Word, or the washing of the new birth:

a) 1 Corinthians 6:11 “But ye are **washed**, ... sanctified, ... **justified** in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.”

The Lord Jesus is the Word, who, along with the Holy Spirit, saves us.

b) Titus 3:5 “he saved us, by the **washing** of regeneration and renewing of the **Holy Ghost**”

c) John 6:63,68: “It is the Spirit that quickeneth; ... the **words** that I speak unto you, they are Spirit, and they are **life** ... Thou hast the **words** of eternal life.”

3. **Acts 2:38** “Then Peter said unto them, repent, and **be baptised** every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ **FOR the remission of sins**, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.”

Baptismal Regenerationists understand this verse to teach that repentance and baptism lead to forgiveness of sins. When the Jewish crowd asked what they should do, Peter said to **repent** (change their minds about Jesus Christ) and **be baptised** (give clear public proof of that change).

**Question:** What does it mean: “be baptised ... **for** the remission of sins?” Does it mean that baptism remits sins, or saves us from sin?

**Answer:** No! It means baptism “**because of**” the forgiveness of sins that had already taken place earlier at repentance.

“FOR” in Greek is “EIS” meaning:

- “because of”,
- “on the basis of”, or
- “on account of”, something.

For example,

1. “I am taking a tablet **for** a headache that I got in the past” means that I am taking a tablet “**because of**” a headache. This is the meaning of “for” (Greek: ‘eis’) in Acts 2:38.

It does not mean that “I am taking a tablet **to give me** a headache in the future” as the baptismal regenerationist’s think “for” means in Acts 2:38.

2. “Ned Kelly is wanted **for** robbery”, can have two meanings, either:

- i) Ned Kelly is wanted “**because of**” a robbery that he has committed in the past, or
- ii) Ned Kelly is wanted “to help commit” a robbery in the future.

The Greek word “EIS” in Acts 2:38 is the first meaning in each of the above two examples. It is used to mean “because of” in these references:

1. Matthew 3:11 “I indeed <sup>2</sup>baptise you with water **unto** (EIS = because of) <sup>1</sup>repentance (in the past).”

2. Matthew 10:41 “He that <sup>2</sup>receives a prophet **in** (EIS = because of) the <sup>1</sup>name of a prophet.”

3. Matthew 12:41 “They <sup>2</sup>repented **at** (EIS = because of) the <sup>1</sup>preaching of Jonah.”

4. Mark 1:4 “Preach the <sup>2</sup>baptism of repentance **for** (EIS=because of) the <sup>1</sup>remission of sins.”

5. Acts 7:53 “Who have <sup>2</sup>received the law **by** (EIS=because of) the <sup>1</sup>disposition of angels

6. Acts 2:38 “Repent, and be <sup>2</sup>baptised ... **for** (EIS = because of) the <sup>1</sup>remission of sins.”

[<sup>1</sup> means the first action, <sup>2</sup> means the following action.]

Therefore in Acts 2:38 we should understand it to mean: “be baptised because of the remission of sins.” These Jews were to be baptised as a public witness that their sins had been forgiven. Peter did not suggest that baptism is necessary for the forgiveness of sins. Rather, he was calling for members of that generation which were guilty of having crucified Christ to separate themselves from a generation under the judgment of God. That separation was to be publicly signified through baptism. The baptism that they were challenged to submit to, signified that the people had received the forgiveness of sins.

**Question 1:** If baptism is essential for salvation, why did Peter say nothing about baptism as a condition for salvation in his 3 other sermons in Acts 3:12-26; 5:29-32; 10:34-43?

**Question 2:** If baptism is essential for salvation, why did Cornelius' household receive the Holy Spirit (and hence salvation) before they were baptised? This clearly disproves the baptism regeneration position.

**Question 3:** Why does the same writer Luke say that **repentance results in remission of sins** without baptism in Luke 24:47 "that **repentance** and **remission** of sins should be preached in his name among all nations..." "Saviour, for to give **repentance** to Israel, and **forgiveness** of sins." Acts 5:31.

**Conclusion:** Acts 2:38 means:

1. **Repent** and you will be saved,
2. At salvation **you get** the **Holy Ghost**,
3. Then **be baptised** because your sins have been remitted.

4. **Acts 22:16** "And now why tarriest thou? Arise and be baptised, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord."

This verse of Ananias speaking to Paul has four segments:

- i) **Arise** (which is a participle, meaning "arising").
- ii) **Be baptised** (a command to Paul).
- iii) **Wash away your sins** (a command meaning: "You Paul, wash away your sins")
- iv) **Calling** on the name of the Lord. ("Calling on" is not a present participle, but is an **aorist** (point in time) participle also translated "having called on" or "since you called upon." This means "having previously called on the name of the Lord."

**Question 1:** Does Acts 22:16 teach that water baptism washes away sins, and that we are saved by water baptism?

**Answer:** No. This question can be answered by asking two other questions.

**Question 2:** When was Paul saved? On the Damascus Road (which proves baptism does not save) or at Judas' house with Ananias?

**Answer:** Several reasons indicate that he was saved on the road to Damascus:

- i) Ananias called him "**Brother Saul**" in Acts 22:13 and 9:17. 1 Corinthians 5:11 says that "brother" means "a believer." "If any man that is called a brother." Saul was called a brother.
- ii) The Gospel was presented to Saul on the Damascus road **directly by Christ**, not later by Ananias. Galatians 1:11,12, "the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For **I neither received it of man**, neither was I taught it, but by the **revelation of Jesus Christ**." Paul says here that Ananias did not preach the gospel to him, but Jesus Christ did. Paul would not have rejected Christ's gospel message on the Damascus Road.
- iii) Paul had already submitted in faith to Christ by calling Him "Lord" in Acts 22:10 "What shall I do Lord?" and in Acts 9:6 "Lord, what wilt thou have me to do?" "No man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost." 1 Corinthians 12:3.

iv) Paul was filled with the Spirit BEFORE his baptism in water in Acts 9:17,18. "Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou might receive thy sight, and **be filled** with the Holy Ghost. And **immediately** there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received his sight therewith, and arose, and **was baptised**."

v) Revelation 1:5 and 7:14 both state that the **Blood of Christ washes away sins**, not water, as far as God is concerned, "unto him that loved us, and **washed us** from our **sins** in his **own blood**." Revelation 1:5. "**washed** their robes, and made them white in the **blood** of the Lamb." Revelation 7:14.

**Question 3:** What do the words "**wash away thy sins**" mean?

Do they teach that water baptism brings salvation?

**Answer:** No. Because Paul was already cleansed spiritually. Water baptism is an outward picture expressing God's inner work of washing away sin. "But ye are **washed**, ... but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and **by the Spirit** of our God." 1 Corinthians 6:11.

**Note:** In 1 Corinthians 6:11 the washing refers to the inward cleansing of the heart by the Holy Spirit as seen by the use of the Greek: "apelousasthe" meaning "you were and are washed", instead of the Greek: "ebaptisthete" meaning "you were baptised".

*The complete N.T. Word Study Dictionary by S. Zodhiates, P.232.*

"He saved us by the **washing** of regeneration, and renewing of the **Holy Ghost**." Titus 3:5.

**Question 4:** Why did Ananias use the words "wash away thy sins"?

**Answer:** Paul by killing Christians, had a bad conscience, bad memories and bad regrets. Baptism for Paul was truly "the answer of a good conscience toward God" (1 Peter 3:21), showing to men that he had finished with the old life, and was truly forgiven and saved by Christ as a new creature. Ananias is saying to Saul: "show to men that your sins have been washed away."

5. **Mark 16:16** "He that believeth and is baptised shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned."

A superficial reading of Mark 16:16 may suggest that sinners must be baptised to be saved.

"He that believeth and is baptised shall be saved" is not the same as saying that "baptism is necessary for salvation".

**Question:** What does it mean? What does baptism save us from?

**Believing in Christ** saves us from our sins and from hell (John 3:16).

**Being baptised** saves us from having a bad conscience toward God. (1 Peter 3:21).

To teach that baptism saved us from hell would injure hundreds of verses teaching us that salvation is by faith in Christ alone and not by our works. We must not throw out hundreds of verses in order to force one verse to fit.

The last part of verse 16 omits baptism, saying that condemnation to hell comes **only from refusal to believe**, not from a failure to be baptised.

**Note:** John 3:18 is a similar verse that clarifies Mark 16:16.

“He that **believeth** on him is **not condemned**: but he that **believeth not** is **condemned already**, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.”

This verse proves that:

- i) The person who **believes** in Christ is **not condemned**, whether or not he has been baptised.
- ii) A person is **condemned**, “because he has not believed”, even if he has been baptised and attends church, etc.

**Note:** Baptismal Regenerationists try to get around the many scriptures saying that “he who believes in Christ is saved”, by saying that “**faith includes baptism**.” That is to say, if one believes in Christ he will be baptised, and they say that “faith is not complete until one is baptised.” This is false because:

- i) Mark 16:16. **Belief and Baptism** are separated as two different things.  
“He that believeth and is baptised.”  
If believing included baptism, then Jesus would not have added the word “baptism”.
- ii) Acts 2:38. **Repentance and Baptism** are separated as two different things.  
“Repent and be baptised.”  
If repentance included baptism, then Peter would not have added the word “be baptised”  
It is never stated in the Bible that if one believes or repents, then he will be baptised.

**Note:** People can be saved from things other than hell, such as from:

- i) Antichrist’s persecutions (Matthew 24:13),
- ii) Physical death (Matthew 24:22; Acts 27:20,31),
- iii) Suffering (Matthew 27:42),
- iv) A purposeless life by childbearing (I Timothy 2:15),
- v) Drowning in the Flood (I Peter 3:20),
- vi) Slavery in Egypt (Jude 5).

6. **Galatians 3:27** “As many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.”

Does “**baptized into Christ**” mean water or spirit baptism? Check the context:

“That we might be justified by **faith**.” Galatians 3:24.

“But after that **faith** is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.” v.25.

“For ye are **all** the children of God by **faith** in Christ Jesus.” v.26.

“For as many of you as have been **baptized into Christ** have **put on Christ**.” v.27.

“There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free ...: for ye are **all one in Christ Jesus**.” v.28.

Because it is clear that v.24,25,26 and 28 all refer to justification by faith, then v.27, “baptized into Christ”, must refer to the Holy Spirit baptism at salvation, and not to water baptism. The context demands it.

“For by one Spirit are we **all baptized** into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into **one Spirit**.” 1 Corinthians 12:13.

#### **Four reasons that Galatians 3:27 must be Spirit baptism:**

- i) 1 Corinthians 12:13 clearly refers to Spirit baptism, placing us all in the body of Christ at salvation.
- ii) Both 1 Corinthians 12:13 and Galatians 3:28 say that in Spirit baptism, there is **neither Jew nor Greek**, neither bond nor free.
- iii) Galatians 3:27 says that being baptised into Christ is **putting on Christ**, referring to a change of garments. The believer has put off the dirty garments of sin (Isaiah 64:6), and by faith, received the robes of Christ’s righteousness (Colossians 3:8-15).
- iv) The **context** of Galatians 3:24,25,26 and 28 are all Spirit baptism of salvation by faith, not by water baptism, which appears nowhere in the context. Therefore, faith in Jesus Christ as Saviour baptises us into Christ, not water baptism.

7. **Colossians 2:12.** Is this Spirit or water baptism?

“**Buried with him in baptism**, wherein also ye are risen with him through the **faith** of the **operation of God**, who hath raised him from the dead.” This is Spirit baptism because:

- i) It is through **faith**. It is the operation of God. It was the power of God that changed us, not the power of water.
- ii) v.11 compares salvation to the “circumcision made **without hands**.” This is an act of God at a time in the past. If it was made “without hands” then it was spiritually wrought, not wrought by man.
- iii) The **effect** of this was “the putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by circumcision of Christ.” v.11. It is not by water baptism.
- iv) v.13: “And you,... hath he quickened together with him, having **forgiven** you **all trespasses**.” This can only come by faith in Christ, which results in Spirit baptism.

**Conclusion:** Baptism here refers to the Baptism of the Holy Spirit by Jesus Christ at salvation, and not to water baptism.

8. **Romans 6:1-5**

The **literal** meaning of New Testament baptism is “to dip, to immerse.”

The **figurative** meaning of New Testament baptism is “to be identified with.”

For example, in 1 Corinthians 10:1-2 the Jewish nation was “baptised unto Moses” when it went through the Red Sea. There was no water involved in this baptism, because they went over on dry land. Here, the nation was identified with Moses, and baptism here means “identification with.”

In Romans 6:1-5, Paul had **both** the **literal** and **figurative** meanings in mind, because he used the reader’s experience of water baptism to remind them of their identification with Christ through the baptism of the Holy Spirit.

To be “baptised **into Jesus Christ**” (Romans 6:3) is the same as “For by one Spirit are we all baptised **into one body**” (1 Corinthians 12:13), which is Baptism of the Holy Spirit at salvation. Paul is not saying that their immersion in water put them “into Christ”, but that water immersion was a picture of what the Holy Spirit did at our salvation, identifying us with Christ in His death, burial and resurrection.



“Baptised into his death” means that every believer has a new relationship to sin. We are “dead to sin.” “I am crucified with Christ” (Galatians 2:20). We now walk in newness of life and in the power of Christ’s resurrection, because we share His life.

Too many Christians are “betweeners.” They live between Egypt and Canaan, saved but are never satisfied; or they live between Good Friday and Easter, believing in the cross, but not entering into the power of Christ’s resurrection life.

### **Conclusion:**

Water baptism does not save us from damnation because:

- i) The blood of Christ saves us. Revelation 1:5; 7:14.
- ii) Baptism is not part of the gospel.  
“For Christ sent me not to baptise, but to preach the gospel...” 1 Corinthians 1:17.  
“The gospel of Christ is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth” Romans 1:16. Not “to every one that is baptised.”
- iii) Baptism is mentioned 80 times in the New Testament. Paul uses it only 16 times:
  - a) 11 refer to water baptism. 6 out of 11 times he uses it in I Corinthians 1:13-17 to explain that Christ sent him not to baptise.
  - b) Paul refers to water baptism only twice in his letters (I Corinthians 15:29).
  - c) Paul emphasizes Spirit baptism (in Romans 6:3; 1 Corinthians 10:2; 12:13; Galatians 3:27; Colossians 2:12) more than water baptism. Paul’s small usage of baptism proves that it does not bring salvation.
- iv) Salvation by water baptism takes away from the sufficiency of Christ’s sacrifice for our sins.  
Leave any church today that teaches the error of Baptismal Regeneration of infants or adults.

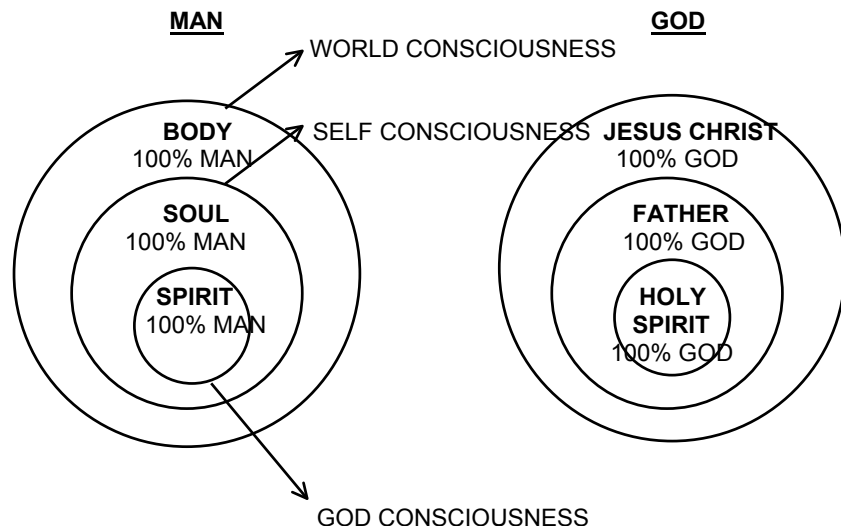
## 97. THE ERROR OF SOUL SLEEP

**Question:** Where does man's spirit go after death?

**Answer:** The spirit and soul of a saved person go to heaven. The spirit of a lost person goes to hell. This happens immediately at death. The soul does not go to sleep, nor does it lose consciousness. The body sleeps in the grave, but the soul remains conscious, either in heaven or in hell.

**MAN'S MAKEUP IS BODY, SOUL and SPIRIT** because:

1. Man's being consists of body, soul and spirit.  
"... I pray God your whole **spirit** and **soul** and **body** be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ." 1 Thessalonians 5:23.
2. "The Word of God ... piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow." Hebrews 4:12.  
This shows man's nature to be trichotomous: soul, spirit, body.
3. Paul discusses three kinds of men as natural (following body impulses), carnal (following soul impulses) and spiritual (following spiritual leading of the Holy Spirit). 1 Corinthians 2:14-3:4.
4. "The Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground (body), and breathed into his nostrils the breath (spirit) of life; and man became a living soul (soul)". Genesis 2:7.  
It is not said that man became spirit and soul; but rather, that God inbreathed spirit, and man became a living soul. God's life took possession of clay, and as a result man had a soul.
5. **God** said, "Let **us** make man in **our** image, after **our** likeness ... so God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him..." Genesis 1:26,27.  
As God has a spirit, soul and body, so man has a spirit, soul and body, made in God's image.  
As God is a Trinity, so is man a Trichotomous being. For example:



i) The **Holy Spirit** corresponds to our spirit.

ii) **Jesus Christ** with a resurrection body corresponds to our body.

iii) As the **Father** directs the Son and Holy Spirit, so does the soul (mind) direct our body and spirit to obey its decisions.

This explains how Jesus as God, obeys His Father, in the same way that our body obeys our mind's directives. **Jesus Christ** submits to the **Father**, and **our body** submits to **our mind**. Jesus Christ is still as **100% God** as His Father, and our body is still as **100% human** as our mind.

**WHAT HAPPENS TO US AFTER DEATH?** At death, the soul and spirit leave the body.

### 1. Unbelievers.

In the Old Testament, the spirit and soul of an unbeliever went immediately to the torment of **hell**, which is inside the earth. Notice these verses showing that people are conscious in hell, and that hell is inside the earth.

1. The **sorrows** of hell compassed me about. Psalm 18:5. Note: Hell has sorrows.
2. The **pains** of hell got hold of me. Psalm 116:3. Note: Hell has pains.
3. The **wicked** shall be turned into hell. Psalm 9:17. Note: Hell is for the wicked.
4. It is as high as heaven ... **deeper** than hell. Job 11:8. Note: Hell is deep in the earth.
5. A **fire** ... shall **burn** to the lowest hell. Deuteronomy 32:22. Note: Hell has fire.
6. **Hell** and **destruction** are never full. Proverbs 27:20. Note: Hell is like destruction.
7. Thou shalt beat him with the **rod**, and shalt deliver his **soul** from **hell**. Proverbs 23:14.
8. **Hell** from **beneath** ... **stirs up** the dead for thee. All they shall **speak** and **say** unto thee, art thou become weak as we? Isaiah 14:9,10.  
People's souls in hell can stir, speak and say, proving that soul sleep of unbelievers is false.
9. Unto the **nether** (lower) parts of the earth, with them that go down into the **pit**. Ezekiel 32:18.  
Note: The pit and hell are in the lower parts of the earth.
10. The **strong** among the mighty shall **speak** to him out of the midst of **hell**. Ezekiel 32:21.  
**Note:** People in hell can speak, showing that they are not asleep.
11. The **Zidonians** which are gone down with the **slain** ... **Pharaoh** shall **see** them, and shall be **comforted**, even **Pharaoh and all his army slain by the sword**. Ezekiel 32:30,31.  
Note: Pharaoh, after being killed in battle is comforted in hell by **seeing** the Zidonians, who have also been killed in battle, enter hell with him. People can see in hell, have comforting thoughts of other people suffering and thus, are not sleeping.
12. The rich man in Hell, could see, hear, taste & touch. **Four times** it says that he is tormented.  
"And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in **torments**, and seeing Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom (v.23). And he cried and said, father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for **I am tormented in this flame** (v.24). But Abraham said, ...now he (Lazarus) is comforted, and **thou art tormented** (v.25). Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of **torment**." (v.28). Luke 16:19-31.

2. **Old Testament Believers.**

In the Old Testament, the spirit and soul of a believer went immediately to the comfort of **paradise** in the lower parts of the earth.

a) now he (Lazarus) is **comforted**. Luke 16:25.

b) Jesus said unto him, verily I say unto thee, **today** shalt thou be with me in **paradise**. Luke 23:43

**Note:** The Jehovah Witness translation of this verse is utterly childish. Jesus is supposed to have said, "verily I say unto thee today". **Well of course he said it today. When else would he be saying it? Yesterday?** "I say" is present tense.

c) Samuel's spirit came up out of the earth after his death to tell Saul that tomorrow Saul, Jonathan and his other sons would be killed in battle, and would be with Samuel in paradise.

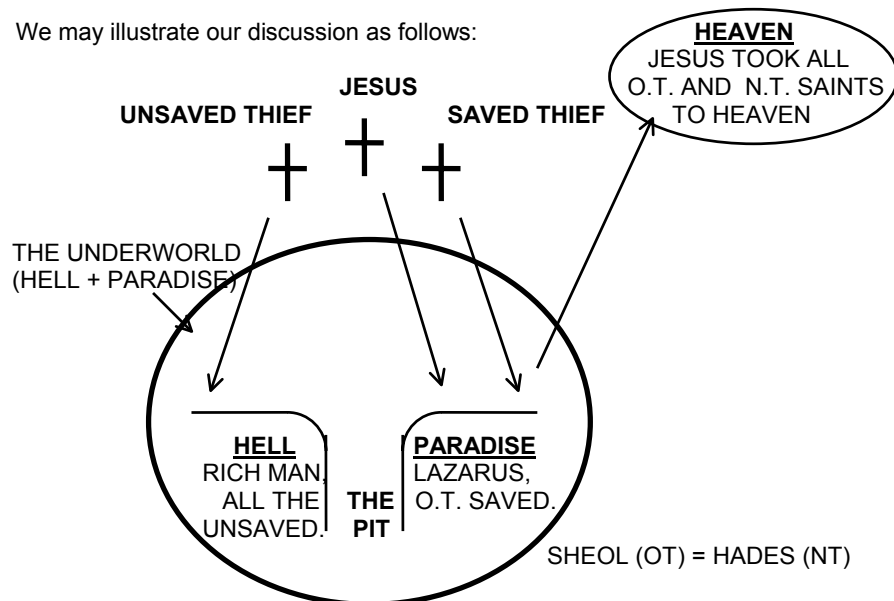
"the woman said to Saul, I saw gods **ascending out of the earth**....What form is he of? And she said, an old man cometh up: and he is covered with a mantle. **Samuel** said to Saul, **Why hast thou disquieted me, to bring me up?**..tomorrow shalt thou and thy sons be with me." 1 Samuel 28:12-19

**Note:** Samuel was resting in paradise in the earth, and resented Saul disturbing him by bringing him up. Samuel was not asleep, just resting; not in soul sleep, but conscious.

d) When Jesus died, he descended into the lower parts of the earth, and after preaching to spirits in prison (1 Peter 3:19), he led all Old Testament believers out of paradise (inside the earth) and up to heaven. "when he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive ... (now that he ascended, what is it but that he also **descended first** into the **lower parts of the earth?**)" Ephesians 4:8,9.

"By which also he went and **preached** unto the **spirits** in prison." 1 Peter 3:19. Jesus would not waste his time preaching to spirits imprisoned in the underworld if they were sleeping and could not hear him. You only preach to those who are conscious.

We may illustrate our discussion as follows:



3. **New Testament Believers.**

In the New Testament, the spirit and soul of believers go immediately upon dying to heaven.

We know this because of these reasons:

a) To **depart and to be with Christ in heaven is far better**.

"For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to **depart**, and **TO BE WITH CHRIST**; which is **far better**." Philipians 1:23.

Paul desired to depart his body by dying, so that he could be with Christ IN HEAVEN, which is far better than staying on the earth.

It is far better to go to soul consciousness with Christ in heaven.

b) **When we are absent from the body, we are present with the Lord in heaven.**

"... knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord: we are confident, I say, and willing rather to be **absent from the body**, and to be **present with the Lord**." 2 Corinthians 5:6,8.

When we are out of our body (death), we are present with the Lord. Where is the Lord now? In heaven. Therefore, a believer's spirit and soul go to heaven on dying.

c) **Departed Believers watch us from heaven.**

"Wherefore, seeing we also are surrounded by **so great a cloud of WITNESSES**, let us lay aside every weight ..." Hebrews 12:1.

We are told to run with patience the race that is set before us, because **we are being watched from heaven by all the spirits and souls of dead believers**, some of whom are stated in Hebrews 11. It is like spectators in a grandstand watching athletes run their races.

d) **Spirits of just men made perfect are now in heaven.**

"But ye are come unto ... the heavenly Jerusalem ... to the general assembly and **church** of the firstborn, which are written in **heaven**, and to God the Judge of all, and to the **SPIRITS of just men made perfect**." Hebrews 12:23,24. This clearly tells us that when believers die, their spirits go to heaven immediately.

e) **Christ at His Second Coming brings departed believers' souls with Him to the air.**

1 Thessalonians 4:14 tells us that the spirits of believers who have died, are waiting in heaven until the day when Jesus Christ will bring their spirits and souls with Him at the second coming in the air to be rejoined with their resurrected bodies. "... **them** also which **sleep in Jesus** will God **bring with him**." Their dead bodies, buried in the grave will be resurrected to rejoin their spirits and souls which Christ will bring with him from heaven. Christ bringing their spirits and souls, shows that they are **with Christ in heaven** after death awaiting the resurrection.

f) **Souls of departed believers are in heaven crying out for revenge.**

After the rapture (catching away of believers to heaven) many people get saved in the seven year tribulation. Many of these are killed by the Antichrist. Do their souls go to soul-sleep in the grave? No! Their souls are seen under the altar in heaven:

"I saw under the altar the **SOULS** of them that were **slain** for the word of God ... they **cried** with a **loud voice**, saying ..." Revelation 6:9,10.

These souls of dead believers are in heaven. They can cry out with a loud voice. They have memory of their death on earth, crying for revenge. They are not unconscious or soul-sleeping in the grave.

\* For **12 other verses** that show **believers go to heaven**, see **page 24**.

**Objection:** Some verses come close to saying that the dead are unconscious eg. Psalm 30:9; 115:17; 146:4; Ecclesiastes 9:10; Isaiah 38:18,19. These say that a dead body can't praise God, but the soul is still alive. How do we understand these verses in the light of the vast majority of verses that teach that human souls are conscious after death?

1. "What profit is there in my blood, when I go down to the pit? **Shall the dust praise thee?** Shall it declare thy truth?" Psalm 30:9.

**Answer:** The Old Testament saints had a gloomy view of death. Death to them was seen as an interruption in their communion with God, even for believers. They saw death as a continuation of existence (Isaiah 14:9-11), but on terms which robbed it of all that deserves to be called life. David shared the common view, and he uses it as part of his appeal to God.

2. "The **dead praise not the Lord**, neither any that go down into silence. But we will bless the Lord." Psalm 115:17.

**Answer:** Jesus had not yet brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel. "But is **now** made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who **hath** abolished death, and **hath** brought **life** and **immortality** to light through the Gospel." 2 Timothy 1:10.

Believers now have eternal life and an **immortal soul**. The Holy Spirit used Old Testament believers' limited understanding of the afterlife to urge them to praise God while they could.

3. **Question:** What about Psalm 146:4, "His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day **his thoughts** (Heb: "eshtonah" 6250) **perish**."?

**Answer:** When a person dies, **his earthly plans, ambitions** and thoughts perish with him. After death, we cannot contribute anything to fulfil our earthly ambitions. "Thoughts" in Hebrew mean "polished, sleek, plans formed in the mind." "His thoughts perish" means that **his ambitions perish**

"Eshtonah" (Heb: 6250) from "ashath"(6245) is only ever used of "thoughts" here in Psalm 146:4.

"Thoughts" most commonly used in the Old Testament is "machashabah" (Heb: 4284), a different Hebrew word to that word used in Psalm 146:4.

- "Thoughts that perish" are the wicked man's plans and purposes which come to naught at his death. The thoughts which go to the grave are his vain projects. eg: the thoughts of the rich fool of building bigger barns and of many years of ease and prosperity. All his selfish, worldly schemes, perished in that same night. (Luke 12:16-21).
- Moses & Elias lived after death to talk with Christ on the Mount Transfiguration. Luke 9:30,31
- Luke 20:38 "He is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for **all live** unto him."
- Colossians 3:2 The New Testament tells believers to "set your affections on things above." This means that we go to heaven at death.

4. **Question:** What about Ecclesiastes 9:5,6,10?

**Answer:** These are written from the standpoint of knowledge "under the sun", from the viewpoint of natural man who lives without thoughts for God. This restates the philosophy of unbelievers that "when you're dead, you're dead".

"..the **dead know not anything** ..." Ecclesiastes 9:5.

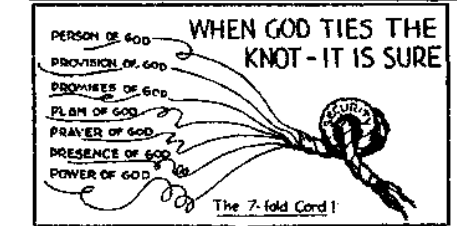
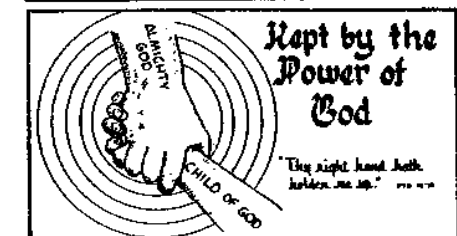
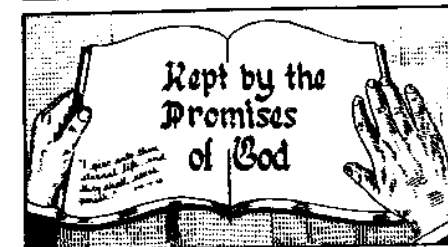
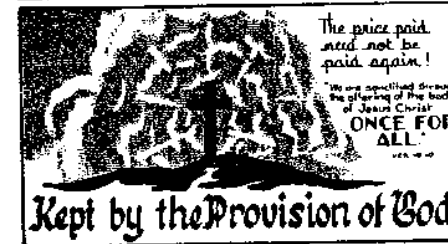
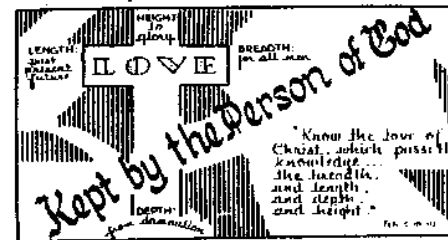
Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, **is now perished.**" Ecclesiastes 9:6. "There is no work, no device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, **in the grave** where thou goest." Ecclesiastes 9:10.

"For the **grave cannot praise thee**, death cannot celebrate thee: they that go down into the pit **cannot hope** for thy truth." Isaiah 38:18.

The term "sleep", when applied to death, refers to death of the body only. After the resurrection of Christ, believers went into the presence of Christ at their death.

**CONCLUSION.**

The "Soul-Sleep" error is held by Seventh Day Adventists, Jehovah Witnesses, and Christadelphians. Use these Scriptures to refute this error.



## 98. WHAT'S WRONG WITH "CHRISTIAN" ROCK MUSIC?

### Bible Reading: Numbers 21:1-9

**Aim:** To examine "Christian" rock music compared with godliness, worship of Christ and the Bible.

### Introduction:

The main reason that churches introduce rock bands into their services is in the hope that if they can be as close to the world as possible, the unsaved won't see too much difference, they will better "relate" to young people and hence have a better chance of winning them to Christ. However, God says:

"Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him." 1 John 2:15.

"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God." James 4:4.

Strong words indeed that God speaks to churches that seek to imitate the world and worldly methods to reach people for Christ. God calls them the "enemy of God" and the "love of the Father is not in him."

God and Samuel strongly protested Israel's desire to "have a king over us: that we may also be like the nations." 1 Samuel 8:19,20.

Bringing rock music into a church is the same sin of desiring to be like the nations.

Christians should "be not conformed to this world" (Romans 12:2), but be people separated from worldly practices and separated to be holy like God.

As Bible believing Christians, we must rebuke error when we see it.

"I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ .. Preach the Word; be instant in season, out of season (when it is unpopular); reprove (Gk:1651 = tell a fault, convince, convict), rebuke (Gk:2008 = forbid, straightly charge), exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine." II Timothy 4:2.

"Nor faint when thou art rebuked of him." Hebrews 12:5.

"All Scripture.....is profitable for doctrine, for reproof<sup>1650</sup>, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect." I Timothy 3:16.

### I. QUESTION: WHAT IS WRONG WITH WORLDLY, NON CHRISTIAN ROCK MUSIC?

- Answer:
1. It has ungodly themes of rebellion, drugs, sex, and demons.
  2. It's musicians set an ungodly lifestyle example of deep sin.
  3. David Bowie rock star says: "Rock music has always been the devil's music." Little Richard says: "I believe this kind of music is demonic."
  4. Rock music contains many clear back masked and subliminal messages.

### II. QUESTION: WHAT'S WRONG WITH CHRISTIAN ROCK MUSIC?

#### Reason 1. Very little CCM (Contemporary Christian Music) encourages heart searching or reproof.

Amy Grant's "Raining on the inside" ends with "WOW, You know I'm just getting really excited."

Compare this shallow message with the famous song: "Am I a soldier of the cross?"

#### Reason 2. Does the song Exalt Christ? or emphasise man?

e.g. Does it emphasise the singer's loneliness, the believer's needs, his feelings or does it glorify Christ? Compare it with the famous hymns: "Holy, Holy, Holy," or "O Worship the King."

#### Reason 3. Does the song lose the sense of God's majesty, solemnity, and reverence?

#### Reason 4. C-Rock teaches teens to sneer at traditional church music as boring, and to rebel against their parents and their church as being out of touch with their worldly music tastes.

This shows contempt for the richest wealth of Bible music ever created.

Four tests for good church music are:

- i) Music should uplift the church, not mock or criticise it.
- ii) Music should carry Bible messages, not anti Bible message
- iii) Music should bring more glory to God, than to the performer.
- iv) Music should feed the spirit more than the old flesh.

Classic Christian hymns don't feed the flesh, they show it rotten to the core.

Compare these songs:

#### Rock on - Stryper

"Come on everybody/put your hands above your head/Today we're screamin'/'Cause tomorrow you might be dead/The earth is shakin', and the clouds are rolled away/Come on everybody/Get ready for the Judgment Day/Rock on, Got my feet on the ground/Got my eyes on Heaven/Rock on ....."

#### My Saviour's Love

"I stand amazed in the presence of Jesus the Nazarene/  
And wonder how He could love me/A sinner condemned, unclean....."

Compare that piercing Bible truth to this C-Rock wisdom, by CCM star Charlie Peacock:

#### Big Man's Hat

"I used to have a big man's thoughts/In a young man's world/You got to have big man's thoughts/To make a big man's girl/And when I finally made that girl, she did not have a clue/That I would break her like a matchstick/That I could turn young love into the third world war...."

#### Reason 5: C-Rock departs from normal music.

**Answer:** Seidel, a concert pianist and 25 year Christian music expert states that: "True godly music, will be composed of three elements - all in perfect balance with each other. They are: MELODY, HARMONY, and RHYTHM. Rock "music" has no melody - only fragments of melody endlessly repeated. Since there is no true melody, there is no real harmony. There is only rhythm, and rhythm in and of itself is not music." C-rock ends with a crash or long fade-out, with no resolution.

#### Reason 6: C-rock copies the world.

John 15:18 "If the world hates you, ye know it hated me..." C-rock devotees feel secure in saying that there is no Scripture saying "Thou shalt not listen to Christian rock".

**Answer:** There is no verse that says "Don't beat your wife" either. They desire to "Let me keep sinning."

Consider these verses against C-rock:

- i) I John 2:15,16 "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him."

C-rock looks like the world, and is worldly. When C-rock stars wear skin tight spandex, teased long hair, use smoke bombs, and strobe lights, this is the lust of the eyes, the lust of the flesh, and the pride of life.

If you can't see this as being worldly, you are in deep bondage to the flesh.

- ii) James 4:4 "...whosoever will be a **friend of the world is the enemy of God.**"

CCM stars look and act like the world.

CCM music and lyrics are like the world.

Kim Boyce: "Sounds a lot like Madonna." *Gospel Music Today* (1980).

Barren Cross: "They have the sound and intensity of Iron Maiden."

Amy Grant: "Lyrically, the only difference between Amy Grant's love songs and Olivia Newton John's, is that often Amy Grant's pronouns come with capital letters."

Stryper: "Outward trappings of ... Iron Maiden and Judas Priest."

Therefore C-rock stars learned from worldly, secular rock stars years ago.

- iii) Ecclesiastes 7:5 "It is better to hear the rebuke of the wise, than ....the **song of fools.**"

**Objection: Fans say "That's just the music, the lyrics are the real difference."**

**Answer:** Let's do an experiment. Which song is Christian and which is secular?

#### BURN IN HELL

"Take a good look in your heart/Tell me,  
what you see?/ It's black and it's dark/  
Now is that how you want it to be?/  
It's up to you, what you do will decide  
your own fate/Make your choice now,  
for tomorrow may be far too late/And then  
you'll burn in Hell/Oh burn in Hell/  
You're gonna burn in Hell..."

Fiery judgment against sin: Twisted Sister.

#### SILENCE SCREAMS

"The folly in our passions/  
The prisons of desire/ The  
foolishness of bigots/Tinder for  
the fire/In bitterness and exile/  
As foolish as it seems/ In the  
coldest, darkest spirit/Silence  
screams/Silence screams/ The  
echoes roar/Silence screams for-  
evermore.."

Resurrection band: "Christian"

The heathen produce more Biblical lyrics than so called Christian rock music.

- iv) I Corinthians 10:20 "I would not that ye should have **fellowship with devils.**"  
C-rock contains demon messages backmasked praising Satan.
- v) II Corinthians 6:14 "What fellowship has righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion has light with darkness?"
- vi) Ephesians 5:11 "Have **no fellowship** with the **unfruitful works of darkness** but rather reprove them. For it is a shame (sin → guilt → shame) even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret."  
C-rock fellowships with worldly darkness.

#### Reason 7. C-rock doesn't preach conviction of sin.

Wayne Watson: "I won't write a song that says "You better get right with God .. it makes people feel defensive."

That "defensiveness" is called Holy Spirit Conviction and no one gets saved without it. John 6:44 and 16:7-11.

Jesus Christ preached against sin: "Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish." Luke 13:5.

Why are they scared of preaching against sin? Because they're afraid of "turning people off", offending cash customers and losing record sales.

We should separate from worldly, compromising rock music. Why? Because:

"As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance." I Peter 1:14.

Christ, Paul, the Apostles and martyrs turned some people off and were killed for it. We all must choose to stand for Christ or for Satan.

#### Reason 8: C-rockers are ignorant of Satan's game to COUNTERFEIT moves of God.

**Answer:** To be blind to this, is not to know the enemy. II Corinthians 11:12-15.

"The god of this world has blinded the minds of them which believe not." II Corinthians 4:3-4

What are C-rock fans ignorant of:

- i) Motive of money. If there's a dollar to be made, you can bet someone will slap the label "Christian" on it and open up a whole new market.

- ii) Backmasking and subliminal messages:

Why does Satan backmask? To gain MIND CONTROL.

The alcohol, tobacco and retail industries spend millions of dollars yearly on subliminal programming. Shops use it to fight shoplifting.

"Enchantment is a form of spell casting primarily involving mind control. Enchanters dispatch or assign wicked spirits to objects and places for whatever purpose the spell calls for....Enchantment controls the mind and is one of the most powerful spells that can be cast on a person...." David Meyer ex-occultist.

Jimi Hendrix revealed the conspiracy of subliminals 20 years ago.

#### ROCKING FOR JESUS

Under this chapter heading, Jeff Godwin reports on CHRISTIAN ROCK. He says that "Christian rock" is a contradiction in terms. "How can Christ be unequally yoked with the perverse paganism of Rock?"

He cites the group STRYPER as being the forerunner of a new trend in Christian music - Heavy Metal Christian Rock. The music on STRYPER's albums was no different to W.A.S.P. or AC-DC. Only the words were positive praise to the King, WHEN you could hear them, that is.

Godwin maintains that Satan is the King of Rock, and that he does not stop at the door of the Gospel Record store. Rather, Satan is now mounting a strategic offensive against Christians, utilising willing, zealous believers to propagate the beat, the style and the hidden messages amongst young Christians.

**Question:** Some Christian Rockers argue that Rock music doesn't have to be satanic. If the lyrics are about Christ and salvation, it can be a legitimate form by which young people in a world of rock music can be won for Christ.

**Answer:** We are not talking here about lively gospel music. We're talking about ROCK! We are not talking about beat or even drums. We're talking about ROCK beat and style.

While some Christian Rockers may be seeking to win souls in the rock world, some Christian rockers are actually introducing young people to Rock music.

Can these young people be expected to maintain a preference for the "Christian" variety? Why not enjoy "worldly" rock also?

Or if some young people are won to Christ through Rock, are they then to be nurtured through Rock? Jeff Godwin comments: "There's one very simple test for Christians to use to

determine what is and what is not godly music: Could you play that music as part of the Sunday morning worship service without offending God? I don't care if it's rock, Christian Rock, Country or contemporary: if the music can't fit comfortably into Sunday morning worship, then it is not worth playing at all.

If such music cannot be used to praise the King, then why are you listening to it?"

#### **Reason 9. Biblical precepts against Christian Rock music:**

**Firstly**, God is concerned with the seed that produces the fruit. All seed produces of its own kind. Out of which womb was Rock music born? Was it born in the womb of Spirit-filled or unsaved musicians?

**Secondly**, God will not accept a blemished sacrifice! (Malachi 1:8-13). Every Christian concert or record should be an offering to the Lord. Is Rock music an acceptable offering to God?

"I've noticed", he says, "that musicians at Christian concerts seldom perform rock just before the message and invitation. It is not conducive to conviction of any kind because it is of another spirit. If it is of God, why not use it before the invitation? Why not a ripping rock segment just before the sermonette? It is reserved for the entertainment part of concerts, to the accompanying of fleshly whistles, shouting and grooving. It doesn't inspire them to kneel and pray, or even to bow their heads and worship. There is not one ounce of conviction in it - God refuses to touch it. What it does is turn audiences on to a fleshly display of jumping on seats, jiving and dancing in anything but a spiritual manner."

**Thirdly**, God has His prescribed boundaries for worship. (Malachi 1:12).

**Fourthly**, God is looking for overcomers who will search out the old paths and find the right way. (Jeremiah 6:16).

**Fifthly**, God will not tolerate the uncircumcised of heart in His house. (Ezekiel 44:7-13).

**Sixthly**, there can be no worship if the name of Baalim be on our lips. "God is saying, "My true worshippers will never again speak of, let alone do those things that represent the old life and former idols." Hosea 2:17.

**Finally**, it all comes down to our love for Christ, "If any man love the world, or the things that are in the world, the love of the Father is not in him". (1 John 2:15).

If we are going to line up with God, we need to stand up against rock, help pray it down, and refuse to support any Christian performer, group or station who continues pushing it.

Heavy-metal rock music can trap people, especially teenagers" into dabbling in disgraceful Satanic practices. For example, we denounce Rock star Ozzy Osborne's tune SUICIDE SOLUTION:

"Wine is fine but whiskey's quicker  
Suicide is slow with liquor  
Suicide is the only way out,  
Don't you know what it's really about?"

Former Beatle John Lennon was shot to death in December 1980. "His "Double Fantasy" album had been in record stores for weeks. The song "Kiss, Kiss, Kiss", from that album, contains a backmask that Yoko Ono sang, which says, "WE SHOT JOHN LENNON."

If a demon didn't leave that little calling card, who did? How did Yoko Ono's human spirit KNOW, much less SAY, "We Shot John Lennon," long before the murder happened? Mark David Chapman (Lennon's killer) admitted that demonic spirits gave him the strength to carry out the execution.

There's only one answer. That backmasked message on Lennon's record didn't come from a human spirit, it came from a demon's throat!

So how do these messages GET into the music? It's really very easy. The demons just talk while their Rock and CCM dupes sing. Demons are well able to speak out loud, as Mark 1:23-25 makes very clear.

#### **Reason 10. APPEARANCE OF C-ROCK STARS**

"A proud look ...." Proverbs 6:16-17. Pride is one of seven abominations to God.

"Nor effeminate ..... shall inherit the Kingdom of God." I Corinthians 6:9

"The lofty looks of man shall be humbled". Isaiah 2:11,12.

"The show of their countenance doth witness against them".

Isaiah 3:9



**SAINT**

"An high look, and a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked, is sin."

Proverbs 21:4  
**HOLY SOLDIER**



"The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the Lord alone shall be exalted in that day. For the day of the Lord of hosts shall be upon every one that is proud and lofty, and upon every one that is lifted up; and he shall be brought low."

Isaiah 2:11,12



**BLOODGOOD**

"The show of their countenance doth witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide it not. Woe unto their soul! for they have rewarded evil unto themselves." Isaiah 3:9



**MESSIAH PROPHET BAND**

"These six things doth the Lord hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood,"

Proverbs 6:16,17

Best description of CCM: "If you want to reach a broad Christian audience, minister and sell records,

1. Adopting popular secular music styles brings success.
2. Write your own music.
3. Follow the popular style.
4. Add Christian lyrics.
5. Send it out to the Christian market. That's CCM."

"Doth not even nature itself teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame to him?" 1 Cor. 11:14. Long, womanly hair on men is a shame. Long hair symbolises rebellion. Men grew long hair in the 60's to rebel against the rules. Lipstick and earrings on men, and rock rebellion is the root of effeminate men.

Jesus offended people because he told them the truth.

C-Rock stars offend people because they are disgusting. They violate Bible truth and common decency.

Galatians 5:19-21 lists 17 works of the flesh. Match these with a C-rock concert:

- |                               |                           |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. Uncleaness, bondage        | 1. Leather, chains, studs |
| 2. Shameful, unnatural        | 2. Womanish hair on men   |
| 3. Fornication, adultery      | 3. Harlotry in women      |
| 4. Lasciviousness, revellings | 4. Party time atmosphere  |
| 5. Idolatry                   | 5. Jewellery, logos       |

### **Reason 11. SUBMISSION VS. REBELLION**

The real battle is not about a musical generation gap, it's about SUBMISSION vs. REBELLION. Submission is the hallmark of the Christian life. Without it, all you have is counterfeit spirituality. To resist the devil, you must first be submitted to God (James 4:7). Since C-Rock fans aren't truly submitted, they'll never be able to resist Satan, no matter how often they sing "To Hell With the Devil" (by Stryper).

The classic hymns so despised by youth today were all about SUBMISSION. That's why carnal Christians want no part of them.

Songs like: "Washed In The Blood," "Haven of Rest", "Jesus Paid It All", "To God Be The Glory", "Lord, I'm Coming Home", "Victory in Jesus", "Have Thine Own Way, Lord", "When I Survey The Wondrous Cross", "Take My Life and Let It Be", "I Surrender All", "Jesus Is All The World To Me". These are all songs of SUBMISSION. Here's a lyrical example from just one of them:

"Have thine own way, Lord/Have thine own way/Thou art the potter/I am the clay/Mold me and make me/After Thy will/while I am waiting/Yielded and still..."

Now read these C-rock lyrics to see the difference between submission and rebellion:

ROCK THOSE BLUES AWAY - Bride

"I don't need nobody to ease my aching mind.

Don't need nobody complaining all the time.

I need to roll those blues, rock those blues away ...

Let me tell you honey, what I need.

I need a smooth playing guitar in my hand.

Listen to the rhythm of my band."

The 2000's will see a very intense war for the souls of youth. It's getting hotter by the day.

The carnal C-Rock supporting church has already made deals with the Antichrist system.

And they will cut many more deals in the years to come.

It's tough to stand against the worldly, compromising, liberal tide, but it must be done.

### **Reason 12. EXCUSES USED TO JUSTIFY C-ROCK**

**Lie 1:** They're going to listen to Rock anyway. This is a better alternative.

**Answer:** This is a LIE. Not every new convert is a Rock addict, but you can make a new convert a Rock addict by feeding him C-Rock.

When people get saved from drugs, crime, alcohol and turn fully to Christ, they reject these along with the Rock music that came with these things.

A better alternative? NO WAY!

C-Rock looks the same, sounds the same and produces the same fruit of rebellion.

C-Rock teaches kids to hate authority.

**Lie 2:** "We have to use C-rock because it is the music kids relate to today."

**Answer:** 11 Corinthians 6:14-18 tells us to be separate from every ungodly work.

"Touch not the unclean thing". v.15.

C-rock says "Touch it all you want to."

It is the gospel that relates, convicts and saves people, not Rock music, or any other ungodly trick.

The Holy Spirit's blessing is on God's Word, not on pagan noise.

**Lie 3:**God created music. Everything God created is good, so Rock music must be good and Godly too.

**Answer:** The day Lucifer fell, music fell also. Music once used to worship Almighty God has been corrupted. Lucifer uses that music to get worship for himself, because he craved it.

**Lie 4:**Music is the universal language teens understand,so we use C-Rock music to speak their language

**Answer:** The Holy Spirit has spoke to people for 6000 years without Rock music.

C-Rock noise drowns out the Holy Spirit's voice. The Pastor, not kids are supposed to run the church.

Give teens Soul-Winning, and they won't want Rock music.

**Lie 5:** Kids won't stay in a stuffy church. They need excitement or we'll lose them.

**Answer:** Give them the excitement of full surrender to Jesus Christ and Soul Winning as a goal in life, not selfish Rock music entertainment.We are not here to be entertained but to win a lost world to Christ

**Lie 6:** No one can live under those kind of rules. It's too hard and legalistic.

**Answer:** How harsh of God to ask us to obey Him. Jesus was willing to obey the Father to die for our sins. In Isaiah 30:10, Israel wanted to hear smooth things. (11 Timothy 4:3.

"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but will heap to themselves teachers.

C-rock is a tool of Satan because it blocks the path to self-denial, purity, holiness, separation and total devotion to the Lord Jesus Christ.

**Lie 7:** Times have changed. The old ways don't work anymore. We should update.

**Answer:** The old ways you are tossing away are God's ways. They worked well for 6000 years. When we pray and clearly preach the Gospel, the Holy Spirit convicts and draws lost sinners to repentance and faith in Christ.

"Thus saith the Lord,...ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk therein, and ye shall find rest for your souls. But they said, We will not walk therein." Jeremiah 6:16.

**Lie 8:** Kids get saved through C-Rock.

**Answer:** "Abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul." 1 Peter 2:11.

Teens don't get saved from worldliness by C-Rock. Doing things man's way brings a mixture of good and bad results. Often the bad destroy much good. Doing things God's way brings only good results.

**Lie 9:** Satan's lie in C-rock is "Music is neutral."

**Answer:** Neutral music does not drive away demons, but David's music did drive away King Saul's demons. (1 Samuel 16:14-23). Therefore, forsake C-rock and stop quenching the Holy Spirit.

**Lie 10:** "Only the words matter."

**Answer:** If you take Jesus Christ or the Bible out of the music, it's no more Christian than worldly rock music. Christian music by definition is about Jesus Christ, not about dope, abortion, starvation or self-esteem. Ephesians 5:19 says that we are "Singing and making melody .. to the Lord", not to people.

**Lie 11:** **Keith Green says:** "I have never ONCE seen a case where music was the direct cause of sin or wickedness in a person's life." **Keith Green says: "no music is intrinsically evil."**

**Answer:** Rock music produces a fleshly, sensual response regardless of the words used. Rhythm causes a bodily response. Rock music is predominately rhythm which produces a bodily response that is greater than it should be for Christians.



**Lie 12: Christian rock music rhythm doesn't hurt anybody.**

**Answer:** The rhythm (not the words) of rock music caused brain damage to laboratory animals ("Jarring Music Takes Toll On Mice" Richard Lipkin, Insight, April 1988, p.58), and killed laboratory plants ("The Secret Power Of Music" David Tame, 1984, Destiny Books, p.144-5). It's backbeats & breakbeats swamp, consume & dominate the listener. It's high pitched human and electronic screams give musical chaos. True music has loud and soft intensity. Rock music's intensity is as loud as possible (130db), for as long as possible. In I Kings 19:11,12 the Lord was not in the strong wind, nor in the earthquake, nor in the fire, but in "a still, small voice." Not like rock music.

**Lie 13: In order to reach the lost, we must pre evangelise with Christian rock music.**

C-Rockers say "Jesus Christ rocks."

**Answer:** C-rock confuses, pollutes and deceives the next generation of the body of Christ. C-rock makes a vulgar image of God, glorifies self, and makes God in man's own rebellious image.

Lead singer, Bono Hewson of U2: "Bono dislikes the label "born-again Christian" - and he doesn't go to church either. He said, "I'm a very, very bad advertisement for God ..." CCM Magazine Nov' 88.

"The combination of sound, rhythm, colour and movement can be used to attract demonic spirits into people." - Alistair Crowley.

**Lie 14: There's nothing wrong with rock bands in a church.**

**Answer:** i ) "They (the priests) have put no difference between the holy and profane, neither have they showed a difference between the unclean and the clean." Ezekiel 22:26.

There's supposed to be a difference between holy and profane (godless), clean and unclean, but Christian-rock tries to erase that line.

ii) Numbers 21:1-9 applies to C-rock. God's people loathed God's provision of manna. The things of God weren't good enough for them. They wanted the things they had when they were back in bondage in Egypt. Today, for some Christians, old fashioned, traditional Christian music isn't good enough any more. Some believers long for the same old garbage that they had back in their unsaved, "bondage to sin" days.

iii) "Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them." Eph.5:11.

"Come out from among them and **be ye separate**, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing"

II Corinthians 6:17. There is much filthiness, vulgar lyrics and immodest dress in Rock music.

**Conclusion:**

Parents, if you've been wondering where all that rebellion in your kids has been coming from lately, then check this review of CCM "brides", "Live to die":

"This release is chock full of straight ahead, full throttle grinding and pounding. It's the type of sound your parents will hate". CCM Magazine Sept. 1988.

This is compromise with the world. This clearly breaks the fifth commandment.

Three clear facts of C-rock are: 1. It's not based on the Bible,  
2. It is opposed to the Bible,  
3. It wants nothing to do with the Bible.

**III. Bible verses against C-Rock**

1. Romans 12:2 i) **Be not conformed to this world.**

Christian-Rock music people try to be as much like the world as possible.

ii) Be ye transformed. Your life is supposed to change when you get saved.

Christianity isn't supposed to change itself to suit you. No change in life, means no salvation.

iii) By the renewing of your mind. Once saved, your mind should do a complete turn around.

You should see this trash music for what it is.

2. I Peter 4:3,4 Once you are saved, old friends will think it strange that you no longer run with them to the old worldly junk.
3. Ecclesiastes 7:5 "It is better to hear the rebuke of the wise, than for a man to hear the song of fools."
4. Romans 16:17 "Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them."
5. Ephesians 5:11 "Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them"
6. Hosea 7:8-10 "He hath mixed himself among the people." Did Israelites win the pagan Canaanites to the Lord when they mixed with their ways? NO. The opposite occurred. Israelites became pagans.

- Lessons:
1. C-Rock breeds rebellion.
  2. The Word of God is all the relating that anyone needs.
  3. When real repentance hits, everything changes.
  4. When people repent, Satan gets mad.
  5. There's more to Christian Rock than meets the eye.

**Russian Church Leaders Request U.S. Christians to Stop Sending Rock Music**

The head of the Unregistered Union of Baptist Churches in Russia and an elder of the same group have sent an 'Urgent Message to the Churches of America from the Persecuted Church in Russia.'

The letter, from Peter Peters and Vasillj Ryzhuk, was printed in 'Christian Info News,' a monthly Christian newspaper from British Columbia, Canada:

"For 30 years we have suffered intense persecution, and now freedom is bringing another great harm to our churches. This damage is coming from the Christians in America who are sending rock music and evangelists accompanied by rock bands.

Our young people do not attend these meetings because we have all committed not to participate in secular entertainment.

This is a great burden on our hearts. Many come with Bible in hand and rock music. We are embarrassed by this image of Christianity. We do not know what words to use in urging that this be stopped. We abhor all Christian rock music coming to our country.

Rock music has nothing in common with ministry or service to God. We are very, very against Christian Americans bringing to our country this false image of "ministry" to God. We need spiritual bread; please give us true bread, not false cakes. It is true that rock music attracts people to the church, but not to Godly living.

We were in prison for 15 years and 11 years for Christ's sake. We were not allowed to have Christian music, but rock music was used as a weapon against us day and night to destroy our souls. We could only resist with much prayer and fasting.

Now, we have a time of more openness, and we are no longer taken to prison. However, now it is Christians from America who damage our souls. We do not allow this music in our church, but they rent big stadiums and infect teenagers and adults with their rock music.

We, the leadership and congregations of the Unregistered Union of Baptist Churches, the former Persecuted Church, have made an agreement not to allow rock music in our church. We urge you to join with us and we advise you to remove rock music from America.

Do not desecrate our teenagers with it. Even the unbelievers recognise it is unholy music and they cannot understand how American Christians can be so much like the world. We can give you the conclusion that after Russian unbelievers have attended the rock concerts where Christ's Word was preached, the people were very disappointed and disillusioned with Christianity.

We call this music from hell. We urge all Americans to stop giving money for the organisation of such concerts in Russia. We want only traditional Christian music in our churches. This is the unanimous decision of all our leaders."

God and Samuel strongly protested Israel's desire to "have a king over us: that we may also be **like all the nations**." I Samuel 8:19,20.

Bringing rock music into a church is the same **sin of desiring to be like the nations**.

Christians should "be not conformed to this world" (Romans 12:2), but be people separated from worldly practices and separated to be holy like God.

The main reason that churches introduce rock bands into their services is in the hope that if they can be as close to the world as possible, they will better "relate" to young people and hence have a better chance of winning them to Christ. However, God says:

"Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man loves the world, the **love of the Father is not in him**." I John 2:15.

"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the **enemy of God**." James 4:4.

Strong words indeed that God speaks to churches that seek to imitate the world and worldly methods to reach people for Christ. God calls them the "enemy of God" and the "love of the Father is not in him."

## 99. THE OLD TESTAMENT BACKGROUND OF TONGUES

Tongues were given:

1. To **warn unbelieving Jews** to repent because of judgment to come.
2. To confirm the **New Testament Word** as from God by signs. Mark 16:17-20.
3. To confirm the **Apostles** as God's true messengers.

**I. TO WARN UNBELIEVING JEWS.** "In the law it is written, with men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people (Jews); and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. Wherefore, tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not." 1 Cor. 14:21,22.

Isaiah, in 712 BC (Isaiah 28:11), had in simple Hebrew, warned the Jews to repent from their sinful ways. They rejected his plain message in Hebrew, and so God said that He would speak to them in the tongues of foreigners, such as the Assyrians, to see if this would cause them to repent. Paul quotes this to show that the main purpose of tongues in the first century was to authenticate the new message of Christ to unbelieving Jews in order to bring them to repent of their sins.

This is seen in the following instances:

1. The Jews who had come to Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost were from 16 areas of the ancient world each speaking their own language or dialect. They each heard the apostles speaking the wonderful works of God in their own dialects. This message convicted them of their sin of crucifying Christ, bringing 3,000 of them to true repentance (Acts 2).
2. The gift of tongues to Cornelius' household was to convince the Jewish Christians that God would save believing Gentiles. Here the Jews had believed on Christ, but disbelieved that God would save the Gentiles as He had only saved Jews up until then.
3. Tongues in the church at Corinth was a sign to unbelieving Jews.
  - a) The Corinthian church was closely observed by Jews, because Paul started it in the Jewish synagogue (Acts 18:1-5).
  - b) The unbelieving Jews put Paul out of the synagogue, so Paul's missionary team went to win Gentiles (18:6), by moving the new church to Justus' house which was joined to the synagogue next door (18:7). The unbelieving Jews watched the church closely since it met right next door.
  - c) Soon "Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue believed on the Lord with all his house." Acts 18:8
  - d) Sosthenes was chosen as the new chief ruler of the synagogue to replace Crispus. Sosthenes was soon saved, because Paul writes in 1 Corinthians 1:1, "Paul.....and Sosthenes our brother." Hence, the Corinthian church was started in the synagogue, it met next door to the synagogue, and it had two ex-chief rulers of the synagogue as it's members! Certainly the unsaved Jewish community at Corinth carefully watched the Corinthian church. God gave the gift of tongues, the gift intended as a sign to unbelieving Jews, to this church thereby proving that the gospel of Christ was to be received by the Jews. Tongues were **never** given as a sign to Gentiles.  
The Gentiles had no dispensational hurdle of Mosaic legalism to jump over to come to Christ.

4. Tongues as a warning to Jews can be seen from Old Testament events, summarised by:
  - a) God has a **message** for the people.
  - b) The people **refuse** to listen to God.
  - c) God causes **tongues** to be heard as a sign of judgment to come.
  - d) **Dispersion** follows.

**Event 1: Tower of Babel.** Genesis 11.

Foreign tongues first appear in Genesis 11:1 "The whole earth was of one language, and of one speech"

1. God has a **message** for the people: After the Flood, God said: "Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the earth." Genesis 9:1.
2. The people **refuse to listen** to God: They built a great tower, "...Lest we be scattered abroad over the face of the whole earth." Genesis 11:4.
3. God caused **tongues** to be heard as a **sign of judgment**. God said, "Come, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech." Genesis 11:7.
4. **Dispersion** followed, "So the Lord scattered them abroad from there upon the face of all the earth." Genesis 11:8.

**Event 2: Disobedient Israel.** Deuteronomy 28.

God promised Israel blessings if they obeyed God's Law, and cursings if they broke God's Law.

1. God has a **message** for the people: "If thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all His commandments.....all these blessings shall come upon thee....." Deuteronomy 28:1.
2. The people **refuse to listen** to God. "If thou wilt not hearken.....all these curses shall come upon thee." Deuteronomy 28:15.
3. God causes **tongues** to be heard as a **sign of judgment**: One curse that God promised was a foreign conquering nation speaking strange tongues. "The Lord shall bring a nation against thee from far.....as swift as the eagle flieth; a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand." Deuteronomy 28:49.
4. **Dispersion** follows: "The Lord shall scatter thee among all people....." Deuteronomy 28:64,65.  
This happened to Israel in 721 BC, Judah in 606 BC, and Israel in 70 AD.

**Event 3: Babylonian tongues heard by disobedient Judah in 606 BC.** Jeremiah 3-5.

1. God has a **message** for the people: "Return ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings." Jeremiah 3:22.
2. The people **refuse to listen** to God: "thou hast consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction....they have refused to return." Jeremiah 5:3.
3. God caused **tongues** to be heard as a **sign of judgment**. If Israel would not heed Jeremiah's warnings, then God would speak to them by strange tongues and swords of an invading nation. "Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from far.....a mighty nation,.....a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say." Jeremiah 5:15.
4. **Dispersion** follows: "As ye have forsaken Me, and served strange gods in your land, so shall ye serve strangers in a land that is not yours." Jeremiah 5:19.

#### **Event 4: Assyrian tongues heard by disobedient Israel in 721 BC.** Isaiah 28.

When Paul discusses the purpose of tongues in 1 Corinthians 14:21- 22, he quotes Isaiah 28:11 to show that tongues were given as a sign of judgment to unbelieving Israel: "...to them that believe not." 14:22.

Sophisticated Israelites were sick of Isaiah's rebukes that sin was rampant, judgment was coming, and a return to God was the only answer.

In Isaiah 28:9,10 they claimed that he was teaching them like newly weaned babies, "line upon line....". Your repetitious teaching is fit for infants, they said. They rejected God's message, messenger, and teaching methods. God responded to their scoffing by imitating their mockery (Isaiah 28:9,10), and promising unintelligible language of a foreign conqueror: "For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people." Isaiah 28:11. God first spoke to them through Isaiah's clear and simple message, which they ignored. Now God will speak in judgment to them through stammering, lisping, Assyrian lips and another tongue. The Assyrian language sounded much less cultivated than Hebrew. Assyrian only had 3 vowels: a, i, u. Israel would hear Assyrian harsh, foreign tongues as they invaded and destroyed many Israelite towns in 721-720 BC under Sennacherib. Note the same pattern:

- a) God has a **message** for the people: "Woe to the crown of pride, to the drunkards of Ephraim." To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest." Isaiah 28:1,12.
- b) The people **refuse to listen** to God: "yet they would not hear." Isaiah 28:12.
- c) God caused **tongues** to be heard as a **sign of judgment**:  
"For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people." Isaiah 28:11.
- d) **Dispersion** follows: "that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken (captive)." Isaiah 28:13.

Note: To Israel, foreign tongues was a sign of God's judgment and curse upon them. Likewise the absence of foreign tongues was a sign that Israel was under the blessing of God. In the millennium, God promises Israel in Isaiah 33:19 that ".....thou shalt not see a fierce people, a people of a deeper speech than thou canst perceive; of a stammering tongue, that thou canst not understand."

#### **Event 5: New Testament tongues to Israel 33-70 AD.**

Israel did not learn from the tongues warnings that led to the Assyrian and Babylonian captivities in 721 and 606 BC. So God again warned them by Christians speaking in tongues from 33-70 AD to warn them to repent or God would judge them. This happened by Titus the Roman general destroying Jerusalem in 70 AD. We see the same pattern:

1. God has a **message** for the people: "Come unto me.....and I will give you rest." Matthew 11:28.  
"We do hear them speak in our tongues.(v.11). Peter said unto them, Repent(v39)."Acts 2:11,38,39.
2. The people **refuse to listen** to God:  
"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not." Matthew 23:37.
3. God causes **tongues** to be heard as a **sign of judgment**.
  - a) Christ warned Israel of soon coming judgment, "Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.....Verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down." Matthew 23:38; 24:2.

b) God caused foreign tongues to be spoken and heard as a sign of judgment to unbelieving Israel in Acts 2,10,19; 1 Corinthians 12-14. When God caused believers to speak in tongues, the Jews understood the message. Tongues were a sign gift to unbelieving, Christ-rejecting Israel. "Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them (Christians) that believe, but to them (Jews) that believe not." 1 Corinthians 14:22.

4. **Dispersion** follows: Jesus Christ correctly foretold this in Luke 21:20-24. "And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh (v.20). They shall be led away captive into all nations....." (v.24). This happened in 70 AD when Titus the Roman general destroyed Jerusalem, killing 1 million Jews and taking 100,000 captive as slaves.

**Question:** When did tongues cease?

**Answer:** If foreign tongues were really a sign of coming judgment on Israel, then once this judgment had come (in 70 AD), the tongues sign gift would no longer be necessary. The Biblical gift of tongues had ceased by 70 AD. The last historical mention of tongues is in 1 Corinthians, written in 59 AD. Tongues served their purpose and tongues ceased as God said,"tongues shall cease." 1 Corinthians 13:8.

#### **II. TO CONFIRM THE WORD WITH SIGNS (Mark 16:17-20).**

"And these signs shall follow them that believe;

- sign 1. ....in my name shall **cast out devils**;
- sign 2. ....they shall **speak with new tongues**;
- sign 3. ....they shall **take up serpents**; and
- sign 4. ....if they **drink any deadly thing**, it shall not hurt them;
- sign 5. ....they shall **lay hands on the sick**, and they shall recover .

And they (Apostles) went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them and confirming the Word with signs following. Amen." Mark 16:17-20.

The New Testament, being a new revelation, needed to be confirmed that it was from God. This was done by miraculous signs of the Apostles, one of which was tongues. **If the five signs above were fulfilled in the Apostle's lifetime, then Mark 16:17-20 is satisfactorily fulfilled.** It does not say that these five signs would **always** happen to **all** believers. Verse 20 tells us that God kept His promises of verse 17 and 18. Charismatics assume that verse 17 and 18 mean that all believers will always speak in tongues and do these signs. This is wrong because:

1. 1 Corinthians 12:30 asks, "do all speak with tongues?" This is a rhetorical question implying "No."
2. 1 Corinthians 12:12: "Truly the signs **OF AN APOSTLE** were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds." These were signs belonging to the **apostles**, not to every believer. "Were wrought", being in the past tense, means that these sign gifts had ceased.
3. Acts 2:43: "Many wonders and signs were done **by the Apostles**."
4. Acts 4:33 "And with **great power** gave the **apostles** witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus." Question: Who had great power to bear witness of the resurrection?The apostles, not every believer.
5. Acts 5:12-16 "And by the hands **of the apostles** were many signs and wonders wrought among the people (v.12)..and believers were the more added to the Lord (v.14)...insomuch that they (believers) brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them...they were healed **every one**." (v.16).

Notice:

- a) Signs and wonders were done by the apostle's hands, not by every believer. (v.12).
  - b) Believers brought sick people to Peter to heal, because they could not heal them themselves.
  - c) Every one was healed. No one does this today. Charismatics are wrong to claim the gift of healing for today. Since apostolic healing has ceased, so have the other four signs, tongues included.
6. Acts 14:3 "and granted **signs** and **wonders** to be done by **their** (Paul and Barnabus) hands."
  7. Acts 15:12 "gave audience to Paul and Barnabus, declaring what **miracles** and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them."
  8. Acts 19:11: "God wrought special miracles **by the hands of Paul!**"
  9. Romans 15:19 "Through mighty signs and wonders,...I have fully preached the gospel of Christ."
  10. Hebrews 2:3-4 show that signs, wonders, miracles, and some gifts of the Holy Ghost were restricted only to the apostles (those who heard Christ), and were not available to future generations of Christians:

"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which:

- a) **at the first** began to be spoken by the Lord (Christ),
- b) and was confirmed unto us by **them** (apostles) that heard him (Christ), (v.4)  
God also bearing **them** (the apostles) witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to His own will."

Notice here that in:

Verse 4: God bore the **apostles** witness with signs, wonders, miracles and gifts. God did not bear witness to the **next generation** of Christians with signs, etc, only to the apostles.

Verse 3: The apostles confirmed Christ's salvation message to the next generation, because the apostles heard Christ speak during His three year ministry. The next generation never confirmed Christ's message with signs etc.

**Question:** When did God bear the apostles witness with signs, etc.?

**Answer:** "At the first," not always.

All the Greek verbs used in Hebrews 2:3-4 are in the aoist tense, indicating a completed fact which can never be repeated.

Peter refers to this early time element of signs, miracles, tongues, etc, in Acts 11:15, where he describes the tongues speaking gift in Cornelius' household, not as a regular happening, occurring time after time since Pentecost, but as similar to the tongues gift **last poured out at Pentecost**.

"And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning." When? "AT THE BEGINNING." Hence, signs were to "follow" for a time, not to accompany believers for all time.

11. Hebrews 6:5 "And have tasted the good Word of God, and the **powers of the world to come**."

These apostles' miracles are described as "powers of the world to come", meaning Christ's future millennial Kingdom, not powers of this present Church Age. Therefore, many signs, wonders and miracles performed in the first century will be regular events in the millennium, but not until then.

12. Acts 28:8,9 "Paul...healed him. Others also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed."

### **III. TO CONFIRM THE APOSTLES AS GOD'S TRUE MESSENGERS.**

Hebrews 2:3,4. "God also bearing **them** (the Apostles) witness, both with signs, and wonders and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost..."

Thus, tongues, signs and miracles authenticated the apostles' authority. God did the same for Moses, Elijah, Elisha, Christ, etc. as their miracles confirmed that they were from God (Christ is God).

When Jesus Christ commanded the apostles to "preach the gospel to every creature" (Mark 16:15), He knew that the apostles would have to go to the Gentiles. This would meet with much Jewish racial opposition. Hence, Christ gave them miraculous sign gifts that they would perform in order to confirm and authenticate the gospel message as being from God. This tongues gift seen at Cornelius' household convinced the Jewish Jerusalem Council to send the gospel to the Gentiles. Acts 11:15-18.

### **IV. THE EARLY CHURCH WRITERS UP TO 320 AD SAY THAT TONGUES CEASED IN THE FIRST CENTURY.**

A good way to check any doctrine is to see what the early Christian writers, many of whom were taught personally by the apostles, said about it. Their comments reveal practices of the early Christian church.

There is overwhelming evidence from history that tongues did cease in the first century, because:

1. **No mention of tongues** can be found in any of **Paul's later epistles**, only in 1 Corinthians, one of the earliest letters written. Romans, being a thorough doctrinal study, never mentions tongues. Ephesians 4-6 when discussing how to walk worthy, never mentions tongues.  
When discussing qualifications of pastors and deacons in 1 Timothy 3 and Titus 1, Paul never mentions tongues as a necessary gift. Tongues are only mentioned in Mark 16 (33AD), Acts 2,10, 19 (33, 41, 54 AD respectively) and 1 Corinthians (59 AD) in a rebuking, correcting, restricting manner. He is not endorsing it, but limiting its wrong use.
2. **Chrysostom**, a preacher in 347-407 AD, in discussing tongues in 1 Corinthians states: "This whole place is very obscure, but the obscurity is produced by our ignorance of the facts referred to and by their cessation, being such as then used to occur, but now no longer take place." [Homilies, XXIX, 1]
3. **Augustine** around 410 AD stated that tongues was a sign adapted only to Biblical times.
4. **Clement of Rome** in 96 AD wrote to the church at Corinth to correct the same problems that Paul corrected. Clement mentioned every problem except tongues. Why? Because tongues had ceased.
5. **Origen** (185-254 AD) in all his voluminous writings gives no hint that tongues or other sign gifts were a normal occurrence in his day.
6. Others, like Ignatius of Antioch who wrote to Ephesus, Justin Martyr (100-167 AD), Irenaeus (130-195 AD) bishop of Lyons, never mention tongues.
7. **Tertullian** (155-202 AD) describes it as an apostolic occurrence, not as a phenomena of his time.
8. Montanus (150 AD) who was regarded as a heretic because his prophecies went unfulfilled, and claimed to be a successor to the apostles, spoke in tongues. Polycarp and Papias who were disciples of John spoke against Montanus as a heretic.

The table below shows that tongues in the Book of Acts only occurred when Jews were present.

| <u>JERUSALEM</u><br><u>ACTS 2</u>                                                                                                        | <u>SAMARIA</u><br><u>ACTS 8</u><br><b>NO</b><br><u>TONGUES</u><br><u>NO JEWS</u>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | <u>CAESAREA</u><br><u>ACTS 10</u>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                | <u>CORINTH</u><br><u>ACTS 18</u>                                                       | <u>EPHESUS</u><br><u>ACTS 19</u>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>TONGUES</b><br><b>JEWS</b>                                                                                                            | <b>TONGUES</b><br><b>NO JEWS</b>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | <b>TONGUES</b><br><b>JEWS</b>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | <b>TONGUES</b><br><b>JEWS</b>                                                          | <b>TONGUES</b><br><b>JEWS</b>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        |
| 3000 devout unbelieving Jews at Jerusalem needing to hear tongues as a sign of judgment.                                                 | No Jews would live at Samaria due to racial hatred.                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                    | Peter and six Jewish Christians not believing that Gentiles could be saved.                                                                                                                                                                                                      | Many unbelieving Jews living at Corinth needing to hear tongues as a sign of judgment. | Many unbelieving Jews living at Ephesus needing to hear tongues as a sign of judgment.                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |
| 1. Apostles spoke in tongues.<br>2. 3000 people saved.<br>3. 3000 people baptised.<br>NOTE: 3000 people did <u>not</u> speak in tongues. | 1. Samaritans believed.<br>2. They were baptised.<br>3. Peter and John laid hands on them.<br>4. They received the Holy Spirit.<br>NOTE: Samaritans did <u>not</u> speak in tongues.<br>NOTE: Phillip did <u>not</u> lay hands on Samaritans, because only an Apostle could impart the Holy Spirit by laying on hands. | 1. Cornelius believed.<br>2. Holy Spirit fell on him.<br>3. He <u>spoke in tongues</u> .<br>4. He was <u>baptised</u> .<br>NOTE: They spoke in tongues to convince the Jewish Christians that Gentiles could be saved, and that God was no longer working only through the Jews. |                                                                                        | 1. John's disciples believed.<br>2. They were baptised<br>3. Paul laid hands on them.<br>4. The Holy Spirit came on them.<br>5. They <u>spoke in tongues</u> .<br>NOTE: Tongues warned the Jewish Community at Ephesus of coming judgment. It also identified John's disciples with the Apostles and with Pentecost. |

**V. QUESTIONS TO ASK CHARISMATICS PROVING TONGUES TO BE UNBIBLICAL**

- Q1:** Did you speak in tongues because **someone asked you to**, or did tongues come to you without you seeking it, and without anyone suggesting you to do it, as in the New Testament?
- Q2:** When you were asked to speak in tongues, did you say “No, **wait** until I have thoroughly and completely studied and understood every verse on the subject?”
- Q3:** Do you use your tongue as a warning to **Jews** to repent?
- Q4:** Do you always have your tongue **correctly interpreted**? “Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.” I Corinthians 14:13.
- Q5:** Do you speak in tongues to **edify yourself** or to **edify the church**?  
“**Seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.**” I Corinthians 14:12.
- Q6:** Do **women** speak in tongues aloud in your church?  
“Let your women keep silent in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak.....for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.” 1 Corinthians 14:34,35.
- Q7:** Do two **or at the most three** speak in “tongues” at your meetings? I Corinthians 14:27.
- Q8:** Do your “tongues” speakers speak **in turn** after being interpreted, or do they all speak **at the same time**?
- Q9:** **Which spirit** gave you your tongue? If you think it is the Holy Spirit, can you prove it? How?

- Q10:** Did you receive your tongue when someone told you to **relax**, be passive, blank out your mind, and let anything come out? or
- Q11:** Were you **strongly refusing** anything which satan might send you? Did you constantly pray for God to keep you from everything not of Him when people challenged you to speak in tongues?
- Q12:** Does your tongue ever **get out of control**, or does it take over your prayer time?
- Q13:** **What do you learn** more about **God** through your tongue?
- Q14:** Do people in your church **suppress their tongues** if there is **no genuine interpreter present**?  
“But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church...” I Corinthians 14:28.
- Q15:** Can you find one Biblical example of a **woman** speaking in tongues?
- Q16:** What does I Corinthians 13:11 have to do with the subject of tongues, prophecy and knowledge?  
“When I became a man, I put away childish things.”
- Q17:** Who are tongues intended for, and who are tongues not intended for? I Corinthians 14:22.  
“Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not.”
- Q18:** Why were there no tongues in Samaria in Acts 8?
- Q19:** Why did Phillip not lay hands on the Samaritans to impart the Holy Ghost?
- Q20:** Why could Peter and John impart the Holy Ghost by laying on of hands, but not Phillip?
- Q21:** Was Phillip a bad Christian? (No. It was a gift that only the Apostles had.)
- Q22:** Some Charismatics claim that Joel 2:28-32 teaches that today’s tongues are a sign of Christ’s second Coming. What does the Bible say?  
**Answer:** “**Afterward**” in Joel 2:28 pinpoints the time of the Spirit’s outpouring in this passage. It is **after** Jesus Christ has returned at His glorious appearing, that is, His second coming. The context of Joel 2 **does not allow us** to **link** this outpouring of the Spirit to events **before** Christ returns. This refutes the thought that today’s tongues are a “sign of Christ’s second coming.”

**Conclusion:** The gift of tongues is NOT for today.

## 100. WHY PROPHECY, TONGUES and KNOWLEDGE GIFTS CEASED IN THE FIRST CENTURY AD.

### Bible Reading: I Corinthians 13:8-13.

**Aim:** To show that tongues ceased in 70 AD with the destruction of Jerusalem.

To show that prophecy and knowledge gifts ceased in 96 AD with the completion of the New Testament.

**Introduction:** If these three gifts ceased in the first century, then the modern tongues movement is not of God and should be rejected as unbiblical. The following exegesis of I Corinthians 13:8-13, is intended as a springboard to understand how the entire Bible teaching on this subject fits together to show that the purpose of tongues was a warning to Israel, and hence, ceased by 70 AD. It will be shown that prophecy and knowledge gifts were God's temporary means of revelation to the early Church until the completed New Testament had been given. Today, God speaks through His Word, not through some person claiming to give a prophecy from God.

**I. TEMPORARY GIFTS of PROPHECY, TONGUES and KNOWLEDGE contrasted with PERMANENT FAITH, HOPE and CHARITY for the CHURCH AGE. 1 Corinthians 13:8-13. 13:8.** "Charity never faileth; but whether there be prophecies, **they shall fail** (Greek: **Katargethesontai**); whether there be tongues, **they shall cease**<sup>3973</sup> (Greek: **pausontai**), whether there be knowledge, **it shall vanish away**" (Greek: **Katargethesetai**).

**Question 1: When does CHARITY (Agape love) stop?** **Answer:** "Charity never faileth" (v.8). This means that love will continue on forever. It is the only one of the 6 phenomena discussed here that continues forever. This means that faith, hope, prophecy, tongues and knowledge all stop, but when?

**a)** I Corinthians 13:13 tells us "And **now abideth** faith, hope and charity, **these three**; but the greatest of these is charity."

We learn here that faith, hope and charity continue all through the church age.

**b)** This means that prophecy, tongues and knowledge are not said to continue all through the Church age, but cease sometime before the second coming (rapture) of Christ.

### Question 2: When does FAITH stop?

**Answer:** When Christ returns at the rapture to catch the church up to heaven.

- II Corinthians 5:7 "For we walk by faith, not by sight."  
When we get to heaven we will see what we had faith in, so that faith will give way to sight.
- I Peter 1:9 "Receiving the **end**<sup>5056</sup> (Greek: **telos**) of **your faith**, even the salvation of your souls." This tells us that faith will end when we get to heaven, thus enjoying salvation or deliverance from the presence of sin. "Telos" means "end, result, termination, ultimate fate, completion in respect to time, or fulfillment."
- Hebrews 12:2: "Looking unto Jesus the author and **finisher**<sup>5047</sup> (teleiotes) of our **faith**."  
Jesus Christ finishes our faith when He returns for us at His second coming, and we "reach our goal" ("teleiotes" in Greek) of heaven with our resurrected, glorified bodies. Hence faith ends for all church age believers at the second coming of Christ.

### Question 3: When does HOPE stop?

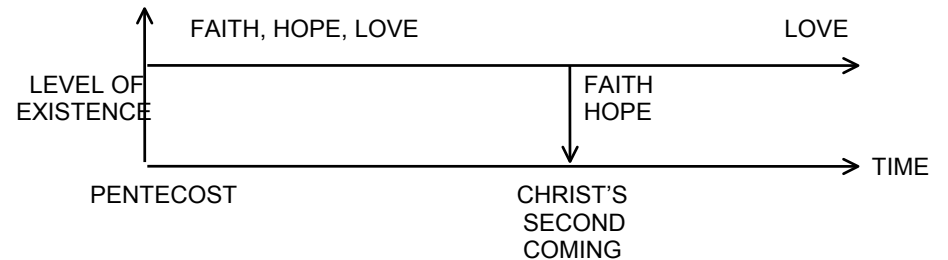
**Answer:** When we get what we are hoping for in heaven. For example, if you are married, you are not hoping to get married because you then possess what you hoped for. Believers are hoping for Christ's second coming (Titus 2:13), and the resurrection of the dead (Acts 23:6). When we have what we hope for, then hope finishes. "Looking for that **blessed hope** and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ." Titus 2:13.

"...of the **hope** and resurrection of the dead am I called in question." Acts 23:6 and Acts 26:6.

"...**hope that is seen is not hope**: for what a man **seeth**, why doth he yet **hope** for?" Romans 8:24.

Hope will only remain until we see Christ and receive our resurrection bodies at His second coming. Hence hope is valid only until the second coming.

Knowing that love continues forever ("charity never faileth") we can draw the following graph:



**Key:** Hence faith will be lost in sight; hope will be lost in reality; and love continues for all eternity.

"And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity." I Corinth. 13:13. Because **only** faith, hope and charity are abiding throughout the church age, these three alone, then prophecy, tongues and knowledge must cease sometime **INSIDE** the church age. The time these (and the other temporary gifts) ceased had to have been before the completion of the New Testament.

### Question 4: When do PROPHECY and KNOWLEDGE gifts cease?

**Answer:** "Whether there be prophecies, **they shall fail** (Greek (2673): **Katargethesontai**);.....

whether there be knowledge, **it shall vanish away** (Greek (2673): **Katargethesetai**)."

**Meaning:** "Katargeo" means to render inoperative, to make inactive, to be done away, to supercede, put an end to. With Paul it always denotes a complete cessation, not a temporary or partial ceasing.

Every occurrence of "Katargeo" in I Cor. 13:8,10 is in the passive voice, indicating that something shall make prophecy and knowledge inactive.

### Question 5: What are prophecy and knowledge?

1. The gift of **prophecy** in the apostolic church was speaking new revelation from God, to instruct and edify. Prophecy has a secondary meaning of forthtelling God's Word to teach and comfort the Church. This is Bible teaching of today. Teaching replaced first century prophecy. A person knew, then prophesied. They were twin gifts.
2. The gift of **knowledge** in the apostolic Church was the ability to understand and know the mind and will of God. It was revealed truth, not learned. It is seeing as the Holy spirit sees. It was used to teach believers certain doctrines which had not as yet been written as part of the New Testament.eg:

**Peter** knew who Jesus really was. Matthew 16:17.

**Agabus** knew and then prophesied about Paul being bound at Jerusalem. Acts 21:10-12.

**Paul** knew the demonised damsel's message to be false. Acts 16:18.

Such knowledge, like prophecy, was as authoritative as the scriptures in the early church.

Each of these gifts can refer to either:

- a) an **action** - the exercising of the gifts in the church where he prophesies or gives a word of knowledge.
  - b) **content** - in Matthew 13:14,15 Christ quotes what Isaiah said 750 years earlier, which was now part of Scripture. When prophecy or knowledge became codified as scripture, they stood alone, no longer as the "act" of prophecy and knowledge, but as the "content" of prophecy and knowledge, now become written scripture.
3. The gift of **tongues** (or unlearned languages), was similar yet inferior to prophecy and knowledge in that the tongues speaker needed to be translated. Paul said in I Corinthians 14:18,19 "Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue."  
Speaking in a tongue and having it translated only allows the speaker to say half as much in a given time, as could a prophecy or word of knowledge in the common tongue. Tongues were cumbersome verbage. Prophecy, tongues and knowledge form the subject of 1 Corinthians 13:8-13. Something is going to happen to each of them. None of them are to abide during the Church age, as will faith, hope and love. They are transient gifts.

**13:8** "Whether there be tongues, **they shall cease** <sup>3973</sup>" (Greek (3973): pausontai).

Here "pausontai is used in an absolute sense, to cease, to come to an end."

["The Complete N.T. Word Study Dictionary", S. Zhodiatos, p.1132.]

"Pausontai" is in the middle voice, indicative mood, meaning that the action of ceasing will come from within, rather than from outside.

"Cease" means that tongues would fulfil their function (of warning Jews of coming Judgment), and render themselves obsolete, unneeded, ended. Literally it means "tongues shall make themselves to cease, or automatically cease of themselves." [A.T. Robertson Vol.IV, p.179.]

**13:9** "For we know in part, and we prophecy in part." Since v.9 omits tongues, it would appear that tongues would cease before the removal of prophecy and knowledge. "In part" defines quantity, and the word "perfect" meaning "complete" is the opposite to "in part."

Knowledge of doctrine in the pre-canon period of the Church Age was fragmentary. The 14 mystery doctrines of this dispensation had not yet been completely given in New Testament Scripture. They could only teach from the Old Testament and by direct revelation from God via prophecy and knowledge. They knew in part, and consequently, they prophesied in part.

**13:10** "But when **that** which is **perfect** (Greek: "teleion" meaning complete) is come, then that which is **in part** shall **be done away**." (Greek: "Katargetheseta" meaning to render inoperative).

Prophecy and knowledge, both being "in part", will be **done away with** when the perfect shall come.

### Question 6: When does the PERFECT come?

- a) If it is the second coming of Christ, then prophecy, tongues and knowledge are allowable today.
- b) If it is the completed New Testament Scriptures of 96 AD then prophecy, tongues and knowledge have all ceased in the first century and are not for today.

### Question 7: To answer Question 6, we must ask another question: What is 'that which is perfect'?

**Answer:** Several opinions are:

1. Jesus Christ at His second coming.
2. The perfected state of the believer at Christ's return.
3. After the millennium in the new **heaven** and new **earth**.
4. The completed New Testament Scriptures.

## **II. 12 REASONS WHY THE "PERFECT" IN V.10 REFERS TO THE COMPLETED NEW TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES:**

1. "When **that** (Greek: **To** Teleion) which is **perfect** is come."  
The pronoun "THAT" in Greek, describing the perfect, is **neuter**. Christ however is masculine, not neuter, so "that which is perfect" cannot refer to Christ or His return. The Bible is neuter. This fits the context perfectly.
2. "**Perfect**" in Greek means "**complete, finished**". The N.T. by 96 AD was completed and finished as God's revelation for this Church age. The completed N.T. canon of Scripture would serve the same purpose that prophecy, tongues, knowledge, apostleship, healing, miracles and other temporary spiritual gifts had once performed. Christ is never called the complete or finished one.
3. "Perfect" cannot mean Christ's return, because Christ's second coming is **foreign to the context** of I Corinthians 12,13,14 being mentioned nowhere in these 3 chapters. The subject of I Corinthians 12,13,14 is spiritual gifts to the church in the church age. To extend prophecy, tongues and knowledge into the millenium or after the millenium is to miss the focus and context of the passage.
4. **James 1:25 describes the perfect as the Bible, the perfect law of liberty.**  
The meaning of "perfect" in scripture can be determined by it's use in other passages of scripture. "Teleion", the "perfect" or "completed" was already in the New Testament when Paul wrote. James had already referred to the Word of God as the "**perfect law of liberty**" in James 1:25.  
"But be ye doers of the **word**, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves."  
"But whoso looketh into the **perfect law of liberty**, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed." James 1:22,25.  
"Perfect" in James 1:25 in Greek is "teleion" the same as "perfect" in 1 Corinthians 13:10.



In James 1:25 "perfect" clearly refers to the soon to be completed Bible, and this must be the same meaning in I Corinthians 13:10.

In James 1:22-25 the perfect law of liberty is the Bible.

Therefore, in I Corinthians 13:10 the perfect is the Bible.

**Summary question:** If James 1:22-25 says, **Perfect** (v.25) = **Mirror** (v.23,24) = **Bible** (v.22,23,25)

then what is 'perfect' in I Corinthians 13:8-13, **Perfect** (v.10) = **Mirror** (v.12) = ?

5. **James 1:23 and 1 Corinthians 13:12 both describe the Bible as a mirror/glass that we see our reflection in.**

"For if any be a hearer of the **word**, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a **glass**." James 1:23.

"For now we see through a **glass** darkly; but then (when the perfect, completed Bible has come) face to face." 1 Corinthians 13:12.

As we look into a **mirror** to see the true **physical** condition of **our face**, so we look into the **Bible** as a mirror to see the true **spiritual** condition of our heart and life.

Some people look into a mirror and forget their physical appearance.

Some people look into the Bible mirror and forget their spiritual appearance.

**Therefore, GLASS MIRROR = PERFECT = the WORD OF GOD.**

Therefore, 1 Corinthians 13:12 describes the "perfect" as a glass mirror, just as James 1:23 does.

6. **II Corinthians 3:18 also shows the glass, and hence the perfect to be the Word of God, which transforms us.**

"But we all, with open face beholding as in a **glass** the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord."

The mirror/glass is a symbol of the Word of God. (James 1:22,25).

As we look into God's Word and we see Jesus Christ, the Holy Spirit transforms us into the very image of Jesus Christ. "We all" means all believers, seeing in the Bible/glass, the glory of the Lord. "Open face" means that we can hide nothing from God; We must be open and honest with Him.

We can be conformed to the image of Jesus Christ ("He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son...". Romans 8:29) and go from glory to glory, by the Holy Spirit changing us as we saturate ourselves in the Word of God.

"are **changed** (**Greek:** metamorphoumetha) into the same image from glory to glory."

The Greek word "changed" gives us the word "metamorphosis" which describes the process of an insect changing from an ugly worm into a mature beautiful butterfly. The changes come from within. So it is when we meditate on God's Word and in it see Jesus Christ, then the Holy Spirit transforms us into the image of Jesus Christ.

In the Bible we see the glory of Christ and are changed into His image.

**13:12.** "For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part;...."

In I Corinthians 13:12, only a few New Testament books were completed. The glory of the Lord revealed in the word was not complete. First century believers could neither see Christ, nor themselves, in the full light of God's revelation. They could only see darkly or dimly. However with the completion of Scripture, not only would the glory of Christ be revealed in greater fullness, but so would the believer's own reflection become clearer.

Why? Because the believer after 96 AD has more Scripture to transform him into Christ's image. The "perfect" is the **opposite** of that which is "in part."

Paul viewed his own writings as Scripture (1 Thessalonians 2:13). He knew that new revelation was being given and that one day it would cease. In the same way that God had completed the Old Testament, God would also complete the New Testament. Paul's use of the phrases "we know **in part** and we prophesy in **part**" (13:9) show that he is dealing with a partially completed Bible that was being added to by the Apostle's revelations from God.

7. The **Second Coming is never called "perfect" in the New Testament**, but the **Bible** is called the perfect law of liberty in James 1:25. 'The law of the Lord is **perfect**, converting the soul.' Psalm 19:7

8. The **completed New Testament fulfilled the same job as did the temporary gifts of prophecy and knowledge**. Once prophecy and knowledge were codified (written down) as the New Testament, then prophecy and knowledge ceased. ie. New revelation of prophecy and knowledge ceased when the full N.T. revelation for this age was completed.

9. **Christ's second coming is neither complete nor morally perfect**. In the millennium, the sinner will die 100 years old (Isaiah 65:20). The millennium ends with satan's release from the pit and some nations rebelling to attack Christ at Jerusalem. This is not a perfect or complete situation at all.

10. **Faith and Hope finish at the second coming** (13:13).

Therefore, prophecy, knowledge and tongues, each **not abiding** during the church age, **must end well before faith and hope ends** (compare 1 Corinthians 13:8 with 1 Corinthians 13:13).

Prophecy, knowledge and tongues end well before the second coming.

**Prophecy and knowledge** end by the coming of the perfect, completed Word of God in 96 AD.

**Tongues** ended by 70 AD, with Titus destroying Jerusalem and the judgment predicted coming on the Jews for rejecting Christ's gospel. You don't warn people after the punishment has fallen.

11. **The completed Bible is able to make believers complete by giving us all things that pertain to life and godliness.** (II Peter 1:3,4). We don't need new revelation.

"According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto **life and godliness**, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory (in heaven) and virtue (now on earth).

Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious **promises** (in the perfect Bible) that by these ye might be partakers of the **divine nature** (changed from glory to glory)." II Peter 1:3,4.

This is obtained through:

1) the knowledge of Christ found in the Bible, and

2) by claiming the exceeding great and precious promises in the Bible.

Everything that we need today for life and Godliness to make us mature, completely equipped Christians is found in the Bible. Hence, the Bible is appropriately called the "complete Completer" for us today, the exact meaning of "teleion" in I Corinthians 13:10.

12. The **completed Bible** (all Scripture) **can make the man of God "perfect"** (Greek: "artios"<sup>739</sup> meaning "complete, sufficient, completely qualified; a synonym of "teleion"), thoroughly furnished unto **all good works**." II Timothy 3:16,17.

Here again, "all Scripture" making the man of God perfect, supports "perfect" in I Corinthians 13:10 as meaning the Bible, and not the second coming of Christ. Therefore, when the perfected, completed Bible comes, then the "in part" prophecy and knowledge shall be done away. This happened in 96AD when John finished writing Revelation 22:21.

**Question 8: Why is tongues not mentioned in I Corinthians 13:9,10 as being done away with by the perfect?**

**Answer:** It is because tongues had already ceased in 70 AD with the destruction of Jerusalem, being the judgment on the Jews that tongues pointed to (I Corinthians 14:21,22). After 70 AD, there was no more purpose for tongues, so the tongues gift ceased forever by 70 AD. Tongues were not in existence to be done away with by “the perfect.” Tongues had ceased 26 years earlier.

Those who think that the “perfect” is Christ’s return and reject it as meaning the completed New Testament Scripture, do so because:

1. They have not studied every word, phrase, or verse of I Corinthians 13 in its context, **or**
2. They are mentally influenced by someone with leaning towards Pentecostalism, **or**
3. They are influenced by some interdenominational teacher whose decision about this scripture is non-committal so as to retain his popularity with both charismatic and non charismatic groups.
4. No scripture is ever produced in proof that the Holy Spirit did **not** mean the complete N. Testament.

If knowledge ended at Christ’s return, and if knowledge meant normal knowledge, then all Christians would be imbeciles in heaven.

**Note:** It is not good to say that God spoke to you and told you to do something, because if you are wrong, you lose your credibility. Instead, say “I felt led or burdened by the Lord to.....”.

**13:11**“When I was a child, I **spake** as a child (tongues), I **understood** as a child (knowledge), I **thought** as a child (prophecy is verbalised thoughts): but when I became a man, I put away childish things.”

**Question 9: What have childish things got to do with temporary gifts of prophecy, tongues and knowledge?**

**Answer:** Paul is comparing a **human** advancing from childhood to adulthood, with the **church** passing from infancy in the first century marked by prophecy, tongues and knowledge gifts, to maturity marked by believers depending on the Bible, faith, hope and charity from 96 AD to the rapture. By 96 AD the childish gifts of prophecy, tongues and knowledge had ceased, and church manhood had been reached.

So Paul used **2 illustrations** to show the passing of prophecy, tongues and knowledge, and the permanence of the completed Bible, along with faith, hope and charity for the church age:

a) A **person** growing from **childhood** to **adulthood** and putting away the childish temporary things of prophecy, tongues and knowledge in I Corinthians 13:11.

Paul is here saying to the Corinthian believers “put away the childish things of prophecy, tongues, and knowledge, because manhood will soon be reached.”

In the first century, a boy was recognised as a mature man when he got married, left his parents home and established his own home.

In the first century, Judaism was regarded as the parent religion, where Christianity (the child) resided. The early Christians enjoyed the protection of Judaism as an officially recognised religion. Christianity seemed like another Jewish sect.

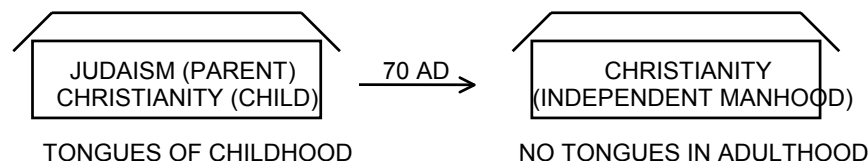
Sulpicius Severus in discussing Titus’ destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD, states that:

“Titus formed the deliberate purpose to destroy Christianity and Judaism in one blow, believing that if the Jewish root were torn up the Christian branch would soon perish”.

[F. Farrar “The Early Days of Christianity” p.326.]

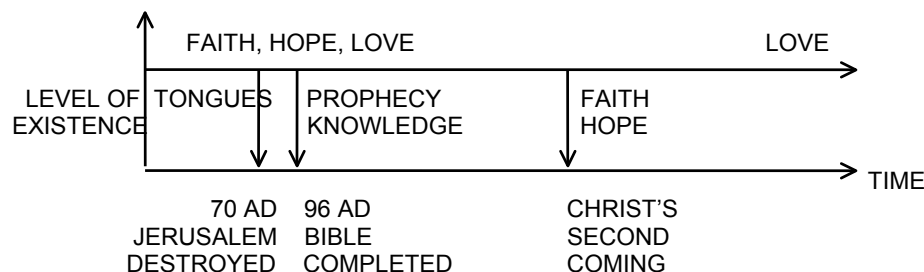
Judaism was the parent/home religion and Christianity was the child religion. But with the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD, the church moved out of its childhood home. It became a separate, independent, distinct religion, able to grow without the Jewish temple and without the protective umbrella of the Jewish religious system. Christianity had left the Jewish parents home and had reached manhood. It had left childhood behind.

This was another reason for putting away the childish things of tongues.



In Revelation 22:18,19 God finished prophecy and knowledge revelations by giving us the completed Bible with a warning against new prophecies. There would be no more partial revelations given by prophecies or knowledge. They had forever been superseded by a completed Bible.

Tongues ceased in 70 AD, prophecy and knowledge ceased in 96 AD. This graph summarizes it:



When Paul wrote I Corinthians 12,13,14 around 55AD, the infant church was still a child in its childhood home. Tongues still had a purpose. No one then was to forbid speaking in tongues.

However, after Jerusalem’s destruction in 70AD genuine tongues ceased, never to be heard again from the lips of the matured church (13:11).

With manhood reached by 96AD, heralded by complete/perfect **knowledge** in the Bible (“understanding” in 13:11) and complete/perfect **prophecy** codified in the Bible (“thought” in 13:11), childish things of prophecy, tongues and knowledge were forever put away. To revert to these would be a tragedy, a breakdown in manhood, and a pathetic **regression to infancy**. Tongues are not for the church today, because they ceased in 70 AD. Church history agrees with this.

C.L. Rogers analyses the writings of Irenaeus, Tertullian, Origen, Chrysostom, Justin Martyr from 100-400 AD from every area of the Roman Empire and states that: “the miraculous gifts of the first century died out and were no longer needed to establish Christianity.” (p.143).

Language is the verbalising of one’s thoughts and denotes one’s level of understanding. Tongues in the early church, were thus like infancy childish language to a man.

When we hear a baby speaking childish language, we think it is cute and normal. However, when a full grown man reverts to baby talk because of some mental breakdown, we think it is a pathetic disability, horrible and to be pitied. This is because men are expected to have “put away childish things.” **What is normal in infancy is abnormal in adulthood.**

So, also for the Church to revert to tongues, is to revert to babyhood. Paul at that early date (55AD) is telling the Corinthians to recognise tongues as a passing phenomena. The time was fast approaching when they would have to grow up, put away their tongues babytalk and become full grown men, living by faith, hope and love as taught in the perfect/completed Bible.

- b) Looking into a **mirror** of the Bible to see one’s true spiritual condition.  
“For **now** (55AD) we see through a glass (mirror) darkly; but **then** (96AD) face to face: **now** (55AD) I know in part; but **then** (96AD) shall I know even as also I am known.” I Corinthians 13:12.

An expanded explanation of this would be:

“For **now** (55AD) we **see** (prophecy as a temporary gift) through a **mirror** (a partly given New Testament) **darkly** (a blurred image, partial revelation by prophecy and an incomplete New Testament); but **then** (96AD when the full New Testament is given) **face to face** (we see ourselves clearly in the completed New Testament, as we see our true physical condition in a perfectly reflecting mirror): **now** (55AD at the time of writing) I **know** (I have the temporary gift of knowledge) **in part** (only part of the New Testament was given, along with the gift of knowledge only gave a partial view of God’s full New Testament revelation due to be completed by 96AD); but **then** (96AD when the full New Testament would be given) shall I **know** (I will have the full **New Testament** revelation intended by God to equip me for the ministry, for a holy life, and for godliness (II Peter 1:3,4)) even **as also I am known.**”

With the completion of Scripture, there was a completion of the **portrait of Christ** that reflected His glory. What was “dim or dark” at the writing of I Corinthians 13:12 (at 55AD) became **clear** at the completion of scripture in 96AD, so that believers could see the Lord and their own changing likeness to Him “face to face.”

In **13:12** Paul compares the New Testament Church without a complete New Testament to a person looking into a polished metal mirror giving a blurred reflection. All they had was the partial revelation of prophecy, tongues and knowledge to tide the church over until they received the full New Testament in 96 AD. This only gave them an imperfect understanding of divine truths, like a blurred mirror reflection.

“But then face to face” refers to the time when the full New Testament would be available to allow accurate and full understanding of spiritual truths for this age.

- “Then shall I know **even as also I am known.**”
- When the full, complete finished New Testament is available for personal study (96 AD) then shall I know the necessary spiritual truths for living a godly life in the church age now **as well as God knows and reveals my true spiritual condition through His Word**, the completed Bible.

This is not talking about knowing Christ face to face in heaven or knowing as much as God knows, because this would require us to have the infinite knowledge of God in heaven. We will never be as all knowing (omniscient) as God.

**Literally:** “Then shall I know (God’s mind about every situation of life), even also as I am known (by God about every situation and problem that I may encounter in life).”

That is, the Bible has the answer to every situation of life. How true.

**13:13.** “And now abideth faith, hope, charity, **these three**, but the greatest of these is charity.”

At the time of writing (55 AD), only faith, hope and charity were continuing during the church age to the rapture. “**These three**” emphasises that it is only faith, hope and charity that will abide. Prophecy, tongues and knowledge are excluded as not abiding, and hence ceased in the church age by 96 AD.

Today, we have the apostles and prophets with us only in the sense that we have their New Testament writings which are still their prophecies. They laid and finished the New Testament foundation. Ephesians 4:11 lists three of the gifts that will be with us until Christ’s return: evangelists, pastors and teachers. For these three types of men, there are 3 qualities to be displayed: faith, hope and love, as shown in I Thessalonians 1:3 “Remembering without ceasing your work of **faith**, and labour of **love**, and patience of **hope**....”

#### **Faith, Hope and Charity as Triplets elsewhere:**

Another key proof that prophecy, tongues and knowledge are finished by 96 AD, and are not for today is that we often see **faith, hope** and **charity** mentioned as triplets being all that we need for a God-pleasing Christian life. Note the **absence of prophecy, tongues and knowledge** in these passages, showing that **they are not needed today**.

1. I Corinthians 13:13 “And now abideth **faith, hope, charity**, these three.”
2. Galatians 5:5,6 “...the **hope** of righteousness by **faith**. ...faith which worketh by **love**.”
3. Ephesians 1:15,18 “I heard of your **faith** in the Lord Jesus, and of the **love** unto all the saints,...that ye may know the **hope** of his calling....”
4. Colossians 1:4,5 “Since we heard of your **faith** in Christ Jesus, and of the **love** which ye have to all the saints, for the **hope** which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the **truth** (perfect Bible) of the gospel.”
5. I Thessalonians 1:3 “Remembering without ceasing your work of **faith**, and labour of **love**, and patience of **hope** in our Lord Jesus Christ.”
6. I Thessalonians 5:8 “But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of **faith** and **love**; and for an helmet, the **hope** of salvation.”
7. I Timothy 1:1,2,5 “Lord Jesus Christ which is our **hope**; unto Timothy, my own son in the **faith**:  
Now the end of the commandments is **charity** out of a pure heart....”
8. I Peter 1:21,22 “that your **faith** and **hope** might be in God. Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the **truth** (perfect Bible) through the Spirit unto unfeigned **love** of the brethren, see that ye **love**..”

**Conclusion:** All we need is **FAITH, HOPE** and **LOVE** to live pleasing to God. Eight times it is repeated. You don’t need a prophecy, tongue or word of knowledge. They are not mentioned. So drop prophecy, tongues and knowledge, and build up ourselves in faith, hope and love.

## II. FURTHER QUESTIONS.

### **Question 10: Why would God allow Dedicated Christians to experience the sign and revelatory gifts if they are not from Him?**

Many evangelical churches have lapsed into cold, lifeless formalism. They may be doctrinally right, but they have lost their fervent love and zeal for God. If a charismatic church has a high regard for the Bible, prayer, soul winning zeal and a willingness to attempt great things for God, then this fills a void left by dead Churches. Among these good things there resides a deceiving cancer that undermines the good that is being done. This cancer is the matter of new revelations from God of tongues, prophecy, words of knowledge, visions or dreams.

Neil Babcox, a former charismatic pastor left the charismatic church because of this issue. He says,

“When a prophet said “Thus saith the Lord”, he meant that the very Word of God was being proclaimed with infallibility, purity and divine authority. The prophecies that I had spoken and heard others speak paled and diminished to the point of nothingness compare with the Bible.

Ezekiel protested, “Thus saith the Lord God, “Woe unto the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing!” Ezekiel 13:3.

Isn't that what we were - “prophets who had seen nothing?”

When the genuine prophets of God spoke, they spoke with certainty regarding every word. This finds no parallel today. The Bible's prophets knew with 100% certainty that they were speaking the very words of God.

“The spirit entered into me when he spake unto me, and set me upon my feet, that I heard him that spake unto me.” Ezekiel 2:2.

Many who prophesy and claim to speak new revelations from God today know in their own hearts that they don't have the certainty of the Bible prophets, yet they continue to speak “new” revelations.

“Then the Lord said unto me, The prophets prophesy lies in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart.” Jeremiah 14:14.

“I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name....they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart....I will even punish that man and his house.” Jeremiah 23:25,26,34.

“they ...have spoken lying words in my name, which I have not commanded them.” Jeremiah 29:23.

“Because Shemaiah hath prophesied unto you, and I sent him not, I will punish Shemaiah.” Jer.29:31,32

“The prophets prophesy falsely, ...and my people love to have it so:...” Jeremiah 5:31.

It is serious error to claim to speak new revelation from God, given the deception of Mormon prophecy.

This emphasis on new revelation undermines the authority of Scripture. Dave Hunt rebukes the positive and possibility thinking of Paul Yonggi Cho and Robert Schuller with their occultish visualisation techniques, temptation to power and deification of man which is invading the church.

Charismatics teach that a proper understanding of Scripture does not come through correct **interpretation**, but through **revelation** (only to certain leaders), and that these new revelations **supplement the Bible**, and **that these must be accepted as a “great move of God.”**

- Charismatics often say: “...we have revelation knowledge as God continues to speak to His people.” This sounds really spiritual, but it is adding to Scripture. Because the Scriptures are perfect, we cannot add to them.
- John Wimber states: “rational control (of the mind) must be forfeited for tongues speaking to occur, for ecstatic worship, for messages from God to be received directly into the mind, and for miraculous healings to happen.”
- Charismatics Kenneth Copeland and Kenneth Hagin's heresies were exposed in “The Agony of Deceit.” Kenneth Copeland claimed that Jesus spoke new revelation to him, saying: “Jesus did not come to earth as God, but only as a man; Jesus never claimed to be God during his earthly ministry.”
- John White, a famous author, claims that Jesus Christ personally appeared to him on three occasions to give new revelation that would become part of Scripture.

### **Question 11: Why would God allow dedicated Christians to experience and give in to influences that are not from Him?**

**Answer:** Every moment of his life, the Christian must battle spiritually with the world, the flesh and the devil. This is part of the maturing process. All believers are tempted with pride, worry, fear, sin and disobedience. Does God allow believers to sin? Yes, of course.

“Blessed is the man that endureth temptation, for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.” James 1:12.

The Lord allows us to test every experience by Scripture, or to go by our feelings. God will allow us to be tempted in all forms. This includes the temptation to depart from Scripture by believing false revelations. Signs and wonders can have sources other than God (Deuteronomy 13:1-5; II Thessalonians 2:9,10; Revelation 13:13,14; Matthew 24:24). Jesus warns four times of deception at the end of the Church age in Matthew 24.

If a Christian swaps the **sword of the Spirit**, and takes up **feelings** or **human reasoning**, he opens himself up to satan's deception.

Many Christians in dead churches know very little scripture. In daily struggles with sin and temptation, believers are most vulnerable to the attraction of false instant spirituality. Rather than live by the Word of God for victory, one may seek the apparent short cut of tongues, prophecy, power evangelism, healing, etc as the answer to his problems.

Charismatic leaders who criticise Bible teachers who urge careful study of the Bible, are hence criticising the legitimate spiritual gift of teaching. They urge charismatics to follow them without questioning their interpretation. They oppose non-charismatics by asking: “Who did God use, the educated Pharisees or the simple apostles?” They thus forget II Timothy 2:15,

“**Study** to show thyself approved unto God...rightly dividing the word of truth.”

Along the way we all have difficult times, as seen by Elijah under the Juniper tree (I Kings 19:4,5), David fleeing from Saul, Paul's beatings, etc. Don't seek a quick fix to gain instant spirituality. The devil offered Jesus a short cut to earth's kingdoms by avoiding the cross. The devil will offer us many short cuts seeming to easily solve our problems. We must stick to the basics: study the Word, pray, confess sin, yield to Christ, abide in Christ, and take up the cross daily. These require work, watching and warfare. Don't swap the Word of God for an experience.

The main damaging side effect of charismaticism is the welcoming and accepting of heretics, apostates, nominal Christians and Roman Catholics into the Church. A person can pray to Mary, then speak in tongues, thus being accepted into many charismatic fellowships. Charismatics emphasise unity at the expense of doctrine.

**Question 12: Why would God allow dedicated Christians to continue in error and deception to their hurt or spiritual detriment?**

**Answer:** I Kings 13 reveals that even a dedicated and fearless prophet of God must suffer the consequences when he chooses deception over the clear revelation of God.

An unnamed man of God (v.1) was sent to Bethel “by the Word of the Lord” to prophesy against King Jeroboam and his idolatry (v.1-3). When the King tried to arrest the prophet, the King’s hand withered (v.4,5). He begged the man of God to intercede to God to restore his hand. (v.6). The man of God showed mercy, prayed to God and Jeroboam’s hand was restored. Then King Jeroboam offered him a reward (v.7) but the man of God refused (v.3-10).

Why? He refused to stop for food because the clear revelation of God forbade him from receiving food or drink or retracing his steps (v.9). So far he had walked in complete obedience to the Word of God. He had passed the tests of:

1. **Fear** because he had boldly carried out his job of proclaiming God’s Word to the King.
2. **Compassion/Mercy.** He had not allowed the King’s threats to dry up his mercy. He willingly, lovingly prayed for Jeroboam’s hand to be restored without revenge.
3. The test of **faithfulness to God** over human favour had been overcome, because he turned down the King’s offer of hospitality and reward.
4. The test of **deception**, was the final test which he sadly failed.

Why? God had clearly told him not to receive hospitality, but he rejected the clear revelation of the Word of God for a new revelation, and it cost him his life.

There was an old prophet living nearby who heard about his faithful stand. The old prophet had lived in compromise at Bethel and invited the man of God home to dine with him (v.11-15).

The man of God refused saying that he was under strict orders from God not to eat, drink or retrace his steps (v.16,17). The old prophet replied in v.18,

“I am a prophet also as thou art; and an angel spake unto me by the word of the Lord, saying, bring him back with thee into thine house, that he may eat bread and drink water. But **he lied** unto him.”

Why did he lie? We are not told.

- a) Maybe he was **envious** at seeing a true prophet faithfully discharge his duties, when he had lived in compromise.
- b) Maybe he **resented** the man of God and had a **convicted conscience**.

The old prophet claimed a new revelation from God. The man of God had to decide:

- a) Would he accept at face value the new revelation, or
- b) Would he continue to cling to God’s previous revelation?

Sadly, the once fearless and faithful prophet succumbed to deception. God allowed this to happen to a dedicated man of God. Why? Because in our pilgrimage on earth, there will always be the choice to follow the clear teaching of God’s Word, or to replace it with the shallow promises, prophecies and deceptions of man.

The man of God retraced his steps back to the home of the old prophet and ate with him (v.19). Over the meal, the old prophet revealed that because the man of God had disobeyed the Word of God, he would die (v.20-22).

And that is exactly what happened (v.23-26) because a lion slew him in the way.

From this we see that if God allowed a dedicated prophet of God to choose between the clear teaching of the Lord and deception, surely the Lord will let us have this choice today. Many Christians suffer poor spiritual lives because they give up the Word of God, and embrace teachers who prophesy or give new revelations of their own spirit.

**Question 13: But why doesn’t God step in and chasten His children to woo them back to obedience?** (Hebrews 12).

**Answer:** The Holy Spirit and the Word of God continually call the believer to faithfulness and obedience (Phil. 2:12,13). Deception and impoverishment are the bitter fruits of turning away from the Word of God. Sometimes God will allow His children to remain deceived as a chastisement until they turn again in submission to the Word of God. Their salvation in Christ is secure through Christ’s blood sacrifice. They may serve the Lord faithfully in other areas and even be used successfully by God, but they will miss God’s best blessings on earth and they will lose rewards in heaven.

God will allow believers to choose whether to glorify Christ through submission and obeying scripture or to rebel. For dedicated servants of God who put aside the clear revelation of God and embrace new revelations, in this life they will be deceived and impoverished, and in the next life they will suffer loss of rewards at the judgment seat of Christ (II Corinthians 5:10).

Examples of charismatic deception are tongues, false healings, new revelations, words of knowledge spoken about other people, slaying in the “spirit”, “Toronto” experience, etc. Consider two examples:

**Slaying People in the Spirit** is a Charismatic invention whereby hands are laid on a person’s head and they lose consciousness, causing them to fall backwards onto the floor. THIS IS NOT IN THE BIBLE, so forget it. Laying hands on people is well known in the occult as a means of transferring demons. It is more likely demonically influenced and all the more reason why we should avoid this movement.

**Surrender of Mind and Emotions to Group Pressure.** On entering a Charismatic meeting, we meet many people dancing, throwing arms in the air, speaking in tongues, on an emotional high and appearing very happy. The average Christian realises that he is not always like this, nor is the church from which he has come (which is made to appear dead and lifeless in comparison). He and his church are made to feel inferior and below what God expects. He has always had thoughts that his Christian life hasn’t always been as good as it ought to have been. He immediately concludes that these people have a one-shot-sure-fire-answer to spirituality when they ask him if he has been baptised in the Holy Spirit or spoken in tongues. If he is not careful, he will assume that these people are right, without studying the Bible or without praying the issue through. He may then agree to speak in tongues (gibberish), which makes the Charismatics very happy. He feels much love, acceptance and unity as a result, all because of an experience that he has had. He then begins his Christian life by making his experience the authority on which he determines spiritual truth, and not the Bible. He then defends his decision logically by saying what wonderful love and unity these people have and “power” (false albeit). He asks, “how can they be wrong when they show such qualities?”

**Why do charismatics succeed so much?**

- i) Because most churches are DEAD and show no spiritual life, no one ever gets saved and nothing miraculous ever happens.
- ii) The Bible teaching on this issue is not taught.
- iii) People equate emotional show and bubblyness with spirituality.
- iv) Everyone would like an instant formula for spiritual success in the Christian life. Tongues is easy.

- v) People are lazy. They find it easier to believe what they are told, especially by “happy, persuasive people”, than to study and search the Bible for themselves.
- vi) It looks as if all churches are uniting by tongues speaking and this is, on the surface seen to be a good thing, yet it ignores Bible doctrine. People are told to hold hands, form a circle, and this show of “love” causes many well-meaning Christians to sacrifice dearly held essential Bible truths for which our ancestors died, and to unite with error. This is just what Rome wants to bring us all back to the “Mother of Harlots” and form the Super-church of Revelation 17, which will be destroyed by the antichrist that she brings to power.

**Question 14: If sign and revelatory gifts are not for today, and are not from God, why do they produce apparently good effects in believers lives?**

**Step 1.** Many Charismatics claim to be enriched by speaking in tongues, making prophecies, words of knowledge, casting out demons and sign gifts, etc. They may have a greater interest in the Bible, prayer and witnessing. How could such positive results not be from God?

**Step 2.** Any military strategist knows that an enemy will often give up ground in order to gain a greater victory (Israel defeated Ai with this tactic. Joshua 8:15-21). Satan is not afraid of prayer, Bible study or bold witness that is contrary to the Word of God, especially when it promotes error and advances his own kingdom. Satan does strongly oppose genuine prayer, Bible study and gospel preaching when it is done Biblically and in the filling of the Holy Spirit. Satan is happy to pull back opposition to Bible study, prayer and witness, if he can woo the believer away from Bible decision-making and into experiential decision-making (which is Satan’s greater sought-after victory).

**Step 3.** If a believer moves into experiential decision making, Satan can withdraw his opposition to Bible study, prayer and witness. The believer then attributes his advancement in prayer, Bible study and witness to his new tongues experience. This serves to lure the believer deeper into his experiential decision making, and hence further away from 100% Bible authority only. Hence, by giving some ground, Satan leads believers into greater deception. The believer thus more strongly clings to non Biblical experiences.

**Step 4.** The believer who accepts sign and revelatory gifts is replacing Biblical authority with experiential authorities. Interpretation of verses becomes heavily weighted towards vindicating his experiences.

**Step 5.** People are genuinely saved, they in turn accept the signs and wonders message, and the deception grows. The basis for Christian fellowship is no longer the Bible, but a common experience such as tongues. That is why Roman Catholics, liberal protestants, some evangelicals and heretics unite in ecumenical charismatic fellowship. Tongues causes divisions in churches, just as it did at the Tower of Babel.

Many Charismatics are not completely sure that their prophecies are from the Lord. Many are troubled at healings that relapse. Many Charismatics say that they are Spirit-filled yet live inconsistent lives.

Satan’s contest in Eden was to steal Adam’s loyalty away from the Word of God (“Yea, hath God said?”) and for him to live independent of God and His Word.

**Question 15: Do Christians know when they are being misled?**

**Answer:** No, not always. In Matthew 16:21-23, Peter in expressing his love for Christ, was deceived by Satan in trying to stop Christ from going to the cross. Jesus looked past Peter’s love and saw Satan leading Peter away from the revealed will of God. **Note:**

- 1) With the **heart** one receives or trusts Christ for salvation.
- 2) With the **will** one obeys Christ.
- 3) With the **mind** one abides in Christ.

**Heart** means: Intellect, will, affections, loyalties. **Will** means: Action, commitment.

- Many Christians spend hours in Christian bookshops looking for a book to give them the secret of victorious living. If they can’t find the power of God in a book, they will seek it in an experience.
- The goal of the Christian life is to remain Spirit filled, to find the will of God and do it.

**Question 16: Are there any Biblical examples of Satan giving up spiritual ground in order to gain spiritual advantages?**

**Answer:**

- 1) Satan offered Christ the world’s kingdoms in exchange for Christ’s worship. Matthew 4:8-10.
- 2) The demonized damsel proclaimed that Paul’s team were servants of the Most High God who showed the way of salvation. Acts 16:16-18. Why? So the gospel would be associated with the occult.

Many churches have changed from being a lighthouse to a weather vane. Instead of lighting the way in the darkness, many churches merely turn with whatever fashion or worldly wind blows at the time. Our Lord Jesus Christ is to take pre-eminence in all things. The Holy Spirit’s job is to reveal and exalt Jesus Christ. The problem of powerless Christians is due to believers failing to surrender totally to the lordship of Jesus Christ. Living the Christian life is described by: “Warfare”, “fight”, “run the race”, “yield not”, “work out”, and “press towards.” The Christian life is a disciplined life of constant vigilance and taking up the cross daily. There are no short cuts to instant spirituality. Roman Catholic charismatics have greater zeal for Mary, Mass, the Papacy, and praying to saints etc. If Satan can achieve this, he will stop opposing Charismatic churches so that apparent growth occurs.

**Question 17: If the sign and revelatory gifts today are not from God, why are Charismatic churches the fastest growing churches in the world?**

**Answer:**

1. Much Charismatic growth is by attracting Christians from **other churches**. Because many Charismatic churches place **little emphasis on sound doctrine**, this breeds an atmosphere of **acceptance**, which assists numerical growth. If you never rebuke sin, have worldly attractions, and give people everything they want, you’ll see growth, but you won’t please God. Charismaticism weakens churches that are committed to the fundamentals of the faith, while it energises ecumenical liberal, worldly churches.
2. **Numerical growth does not equal God’s stamp of approval. Mormons, Jehovah Witnesses** and cults can boast amazing growth statistics, yet their beliefs are very unbiblical. What about growth of Charismatic churches that hold to the fundamentals of the faith? Jesus’ parables of the wheat and tares (Matthew 13:24-30; 36-43), mustard seed (13:31,32), and the leaven (13:33) all predict outward growth in Christendom, but this growth would be accompanied by growth in evil influences (leaven, birds) from within. Numerical growth does not mean that God approves all a church’s doctrines.

Numerical growth, even by true conversions can occur amidst false doctrine. eg. The Corinthian church grew rapidly, even though it had many false doctrines and sins.

Many churches claim to be evangelical, but challenge them on:

- 1) The 100% inerrancy of Scripture.
- 2) The historical, literal accuracy of Genesis 1-11.
- 3) The factual nature of Jonah being swallowed by a whale.
- 4) The scientific accuracy of a literal 6 day creation week, and they prove to disbelieve the Bible.

Christ prayed that the Father would sanctify believers through His **Word** (John 17:17), before he prayed that believers would be **one** (John 17:21).

If we loudly profess to believe every Bible truth, except where the world and devil are at the moment attacking, we are denying Christ and proving disloyal. Today's battle against the Bible takes the form of an invasion of new revelations. This is why Rome can happily endorse the Charismatic movement because Rome also has her new revelations that are contrary to the Bible. We must be sound in **belief**, sound in a Godly **life**, and sound in **servicing Christ**.

### III. 20 REASONS THAT TONGUES CEASED IN THE FIRST CENTURY.

#### 1. Tongues were a sign of judgment against Jewish unbelief as a nation.

With the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD, God's judgment on Israel had been executed, and the tongues gift as a sign of coming judgment on Israel was no longer needed. I Corinthians 14:22 says,

"Wherefore, tongues are for a sign NOT to them that believe, but to them that **believe not**."

"In the law it is written, with men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto **this people** (Jews); and yet for all that (all the tongues) **will they** (Jews) **not hear me** (warning ignored), saith the Lord." I Corinthians 14:21.

Tongues here were clearly a **warning to the Jews** that they ignored.

Paul quotes I Corinthians 14:21 from:

- i) **Deuteronomy 28:49** where God warns of judgment coming from "a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand."
- ii) Jeremiah 5:15 "Lo I will bring a nation upon you from afar...a nation whose language thou knowest not...." (612 BC). Hence, Babylonian tongues warned Jews of coming judgment.
- iii) Isaiah 28:11,12 "With another tongue will he speak to this people." (712 BC). Here, Assyrian tongues warned the Jews of coming judgment.
- iv) Isaiah 33:19 "Thou shall **not** see a fierce people, a people of a deeper speech than thou canst perceive: of a stammering tongue that thou canst not understand."

Here the absence of foreign tongues will be a sign that Israel is under God's blessing. Paul applies the Jewish unbelief of Isaiah 28:11,12 from 712 BC to the first century Jewish unbelief. "This people", "they", and "them that believe not" all refers to Jews. There were many Jews at Corinth who did not believe (Acts 18). Hence, tongues were a sign of future judgment to the Jews.

#### 2. There are 3 major outbreaks of miracles in Scripture:

- i) Moses and Joshua (1441-1370 BC) of about 71 years duration.
- ii) Elijah and Elisha (870-785 BC) of about 85 years duration.
- iii) Christ and the Apostles (28-70 AD) of about 42 years duration.

Continuous miracles in the Bible are the exception, and do not occur always, but in three periods. The miraculous gift of tongues occurred from 30 to 70 AD.

#### 3. Tongues belonged to the infant days of the church.

"But when I became a man, I put away childish things." I Corinthians 13:11.

Tongues (along with prophecy and knowledge) would cease when the church became mature. The childhood days of the church ended, when Israel as a nation was judged. Then there was no longer any need for a sign to **authenticate** the apostles' message (Mark 16:17-20) which started the church. Nor was there need for a sign **against** the extinct Jewish nation.

The gifts of tongues, miracles, healing, etc had stopped by 70 AD, but of course God still performs miracles and heals as He chooses today in answer to prayer. Since some foundational gifts were temporary. Tongues, a lesser miraculous gift, was temporary also.

#### 4. Tongues authenticated the apostles' message as from God.

"And they (apostles) went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and **confirming the Word** with **signs** (tongues, healing, exorcism etc.) following. Amen." Mark 16:20.

Today the need for tongues has ceased. God has **authenticated** the **apostles** and the **New Testament** that they penned. This proves the temporary nature of tongues.

#### 5. Hebrews 6:5 shows that the only other age of miracles will be the Millennium described as "the powers of the age to come."

Q. What are the powers?

A. The word rendered "powers" is "dunamis" (1411) in Greek, which is the usual New Testament word for **miracles**. These people had tasted, experienced or witnessed the apostles' miracles.

Q. What is the "age to come"?

A. A common Hebrew expression for the **millennium** where the Messiah will rule as King on earth.

Q. Why therefore are miracles referred to as "powers of the age to come"?

A. Because they **would not** characterise the **church age** (which Hebrews 6:5 was quoted in), but the millennial Kingdom age to come.

#### 6. Hebrews 2:3,4 shows miracles (such as tongues) to be in the past tense, and not continuously being experienced by the Hebrew Christians of 64 AD.

"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation which:

- 1) **At the first** began to be spoken by the **Lord** (in Jesus' 3 year ministry) and
- 2) **was** (past tense) **confirmed** (same as Mark 16:20) unto **us** (second generation Christians) by **them** (apostles and first generation Christians) that heard **him** (Jesus Christ),
- 3) God also **bearing them** (the apostles, **not us or every** generation of Christians) **witness**, both with signs (eg: tongues, miracles, healings, etc) and **wonders**, and with **divers miracles** (miracles belonged to the apostles, not to every Christian. II Corinthians 12:12), and **gifts of the Holy Ghost** (eg. the temporary miraculous gifts), according to His own will."
  - a) Notice the phrase "**at the first**". This gives the **time** element which governs all these signs, miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost.
  - b) All Greek verbs in Hebrews 2:3,4 are in the **aurist tense** indicating a past completed act which can never be repeated.

7. This is also seen in **Acts 11:15**, where Peter describes **tongues at Cornelius household, not as a regular occurrence weekly** in every church, but only something that happened last time at Pentecost (Acts 2) “as on us at the beginning.”

**8. The Process of Elimination shows tongues to be not for believers of today.**

**Tongues primary purpose was to warn unbelieving Jews to repent, or God would judge them.** They refused to repent, so God judged them in 70 AD, thus making tongues as a warning to the Jews no longer necessary. I Corinthians 14:22 is a key verse which says:

“Tongues are a sign, **NOT to THEM that BELIEVE, but to them that BELIEVE NOT...**”

Tongues are a sign for one of three types of people. Which one?

- a) **NOT FOR BELIEVERS.** 14:22. This means that tongues have no purpose for believers. For Christians to speak in tongues is not valid.
- b) **NOT FOR GENTILE UNBELIEVERS.** 14:23. Those **unlearned** in the Old Testament meaning of tongues, or **unbelievers**, “will they not say that ye are mad?” This describes **unsaved Gentiles.** Tongues are not for this group because the history of Assyrian and Babylonian tongues as a warning of a judgment to Israel meant nothing to them.
- c) **JEWISH UNBELIEVERS.** 14:21. “In the law (Isaiah 28:11; Jeremiah 5:15 and Deuteronomy 28:49) it is written, with men of **other tongues** (Assyrian, Babylonian, Roman) and other lips will I speak unto **this people** (Jews); and yet for all that will they **not hear me**, saith the Lord.”

**9. Tongues had ceased by 70 AD because their use is only mentioned in the earlier New Testament books,** such as Mark 16 (57 AD), Acts (54 AD), I Corinthians (55 AD).

In all the latter books, tongues are never mentioned.

Why? Because they never happened after 70 AD and were of no relevance to any churches thereafter. Tongues are never commanded in any New Testament book for believers to practice.

I Corinthians 12,13,14 rebukes the Corinthians wrong use of tongues. It is not endorsing tongues to be practised. Charismatics think that the key to spirituality is tongues, a phenomena that is not mentioned in 24 out of 27 New Testament books.

Why are tongues ABSENT from **II Corinthians to Revelation**? If tongues were so necessary, you would definitely see them in the **rest of the New Testament.**

The book of Romans, which is well known as the most complete summary of Christian doctrine and practice in the Bible, does not once mention tongues. Why not? Because tongues, by the time Romans was written (60 AD) was almost finished as a gift and would be of **no relevance** in the Church age after 70 AD when God judged Jerusalem.

Think about it, if tongues were important, God would have mentioned them at least once in Romans, or II Corinthians, or Galatians, or at least in one letter to a church **in a positive context.**

**10. The gift of tongues was never endorsed or practised by early church leaders.**

**Clement of Rome** in 95 AD wrote a letter to the Corinthian church rebuking every problem that Paul rebuked except tongues. Why did he not mention tongues or miracles?

**Justin Martyr** (160 AD) visited many churches but never once mentions tongues, not even in his lists of spiritual gifts.

**Origen** (250 AD) in his voluminous writings never mentions tongues, but argues against Celsus that the sign gifts of the apostles' age were temporary and were not exercised by Christians in the 3rd Century.

**Chrysostom** (347-407 AD) commented on the I Corinthians passage: “This whole place is very obscure: but the obscurity is produced by our ignorance of the facts referred to and by

their cessation, being such as then used to occur, but now **no longer take place.**” [Homilies, XXIX, 1].

**Augustine** (354-430 AD) said in speaking of Acts 2:4, “In the earliest times, the Holy Ghost fell upon them that believed: and they spake with tongues...these were signs adapted to the time. For there behooved to be that betokening of the Holy Spirit...that thing was done for a betokening and **it passed away.**”

**11. “Now abideth** faith, hope, charity, **these three...**” I Corinthians 13:13.

**Now** (55AD) **abides** (continues) faith, hope, charity, **these three**” (not “these six prophecy, tongues, knowledge”). Since **faith and hope finish at Christ's return**, then prophecy, tongues and knowledge had to have finished by 96 AD because they were not abiding, but declining in 55AD.

**12. Tape Recorder Test (Independent interpreters) Disproves Interpretation of Tongues.**

If no one passes the Interpretation test, then neither does anyone possess the genuine gift of tongues.

This scientific test will disprove anyone's claim to have the gift of “Interpretation of tongues.” Assemble one person who claims to have the gift of tongues, and another two people who claim to have the gift of interpreting tongues, keeping both groups separate.

Let the first person speak in tongues, while you tape record him speaking.

Then bring the first interpreter into the room to hear the taped tongue replayed.

Tape record his interpretation of the tongue.

Then bring the second interpreter into the room to hear the same tongue replayed.

Tape record his interpretation of the same tongue. You will find that the second interpretation will **disagree** with the first person's interpretation.

Why is this? It is because no one today has the first century supernatural gift of interpretation of tongues, this gift having passed away by 70 AD.

It follows therefore, that if the interpretation gift is found to be **NON-GENUINE**, then the tongues gift is also **NON-GENUINE.**

Notice that when someone speaks gibberish, claiming that he is speaking in an unknown tongue, he is, by deception, taking advantage of the fact that his hearers do not know every language in the universe. The hearer, who is caught off guard, finds it hard to state that this gibberish is not a language.

So let us turn the tables and ask if his two interpreter friends can interpret any tongue in agreement.

**Note:** A variation on this test is to get up in a Charismatic meeting, speak something in a foreign language that you know the meaning of, and then ask for it to be correctly interpreted, e.g. quote the Lord's prayer in Latvian. You will find that the interpretation given, will be nothing like the true meaning of what you said. You may then expose them publicly as deceivers and as being deceived.

**13. Ephesians 4,5,6** describe **thoroughly** the **Walk** and **Service** of a **Spirit-filled believer.** Nowhere in this key passage is speaking in tongues mentioned.

**Conclusion:** “Walking worthy” does not include tongues.

**14. Phonetics Test.** Every language must have hundreds of different syllables to express the wide range of ideas in a society. Charismatic tongues only have less than 12 syllables repeated constantly. This is typical of gibberish that comes from a mind that is not expressing thoughts, but from a tongue **out of control from the mind.** **Note:** 4 syllables are, for example, seen in “Cha/ris/ma/tic”. This shows that tongues are not real languages, but are just sounds made up on the spot at random.



15. Majoring on tongues **REVERSES** the order of **importance** of spiritual gifts.

In I Corinthians 12:28, God lists tongues as the least important of 8 gifts.

In I Corinthians 12:31, God tells the church to seek the “best” gifts. (ie: give more emphasis to teaching)

God gives gifts to believers “as HE will” (12:11), not as we insist.

Charismatics tell people to pray long and hard for the gift of tongues.

We are not to deliberately choose and insist on having the least gift and exalt it above the others. Why not place greater emphasis on the gifts of pastor-teacher, evangelists, helps, government, giving etc.? It is because these gifts involve hard work, but tongues (gibberish) is easy.

16. The context of I Corinthians is rebuking 13 errors, such as tongues. It is not recommending tongues. The Corinthian church was filled with problems that Paul corrects in this book, such as:

1. They were following their favourite **human leaders** causing divisions. 1:11-14.
2. “ “ favouring **human wisdom**. 1:18-2:13.
3. “ “ **carnal, living for self**, not being controlled by the Spirit. 2:14-3:7.
4. “ “ **forgetting the future Judgment Seat** of Christ. 3:8-23.
5. “ “ **proud**, thinking of themselves more highly than they ought. 4:1-21.
6. “ “ **failing to discipline**, by tolerating a fornicator. 5:1-13.
7. “ “ **taking fellow believers to court**. 6:1-20.
8. “ “ confused about **marriage**. 7:1-40.
9. “ “ confused about **liberty** thinking it meant licence to do anything, even stumbling others. 8,9,10
10. “ “ confused about **clothing, long hair** on men and the **Lord's Supper**. 11.
11. “ “ confused about **spiritual gifts**, especially tongues. 12-14.
12. “ “ confused about the **resurrection**. 15.
13. “ “ confused about the **collection**. 16.

As we can see the Corinthian church was deep in error and false doctrine. It was the only church that emphasized tongues as today's Charismatics do. Charismatics therefore place themselves in very bad company. Charismatics fail to understand that Paul is not endorsing tongues, but is rebuking the wrong use of tongues and is strongly **regulating** tongues contrary to today's Charismatics. The Corinthian church was the worst church for Charismatics to follow as an example.

17. They fail the “Easy to be entreated” test.

It is amazing how tongues speakers often become very angry, intolerant, irritable, impatient, nervous, very dogmatic, and extremely touchy when anything is said which disapproves of or corrects their idea of speaking in tongues.

“The wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, easy to be entreated...” James 3:17.

“The works of the flesh...are wrath, strife...” Galatians 5:19,20.

“Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God.” Hebrews 12:15.

18. The First Mention Principle of Tongues is in the Context of Judgment.

This is a well-established principle for correctly interpreting Scripture. It states that:

When any subject, word, expression or idea is first mentioned in the Bible, this shows God thinking on that subject, and is a guide to how we should understand this subject in the rest of the Bible. Example:

The first mention of **Babylon, Babel, and languages** is in Genesis 11:1-9 where God confused man's languages so that they did not understand one another's speech. “The Lord scattered mankind abroad upon the face of all the earth.” Man has remained divided by different languages ever since. Hence tongues are associated with **division** and **confusion** (the meaning of Babel), ever since the Tower of Babel; not with the blessing of God, but with the **judgment** of God.

“Thou shalt keep them secretly in a pavilion from the **strife** of tongues.” Psalm 31:20.

19. PRAYING IN TONGUES is **WRONG** because **UNDERSTANDING is ABSENT**.

“For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful. What is it then? I will pray with the spirit and I will pray with the **UNDERSTANDING also**.” I Cor. 14:14,15.

Paul is saying here that if you pray in tongues, your spirit might be trying to express something, but your MIND (or understanding) has no idea what is being said. This is wrong behaviour, Paul says.

For prayer to be genuine, we must pray with our **spirit** and with our **understanding**.

Praying in tongues fails the test of understanding. The mind and voice are disconnected.

Many Charismatics will try to justify praying in tongues by quoting Romans 8:26.

“...the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which **CANNOT BE UTTERED**”.

This verse is not talking about praying in tongues because **tongues are uttered** vocal sounds.

The Holy Spirit speaks our thoughts to the Father with groanings which cannot be uttered by us, yet prayer tongues are uttered by people.

20. Mark 16:11-20 (especially v.17) shows that the signs that were to follow them that believe related to a brief period, not longer than that covered by the book of Acts, and described in v.19,20

“And these signs shall follow (3877) them (apostles because the context of v.11-14 shows unbelieving apostles four times) that **believe**; .....they shall speak with **new tongues**.” v.17.

This refutes the Charismatic idea that everybody who believes all through the Church age should speak in tongues, lay hands on the sick and they shall recover, etc., because this belief only refers to the unbelieving apostles in v.11-14 who refused to believe in Christ's resurrection (v.11,12,14).

This continues as part of Christ's rebuke to the apostles for “their unbelief and hardness of heart.” v.14.

**IV. 7 REASONS WHY “THEM THAT BELIEVE” REFERS ONLY TO THE APOSTLES.**

If we fail to read the entire context of Mark 16:9-20 we may get the impression that the v.17,18 sign gifts apply to **all believers** during all the church age.

There is good evidence that “**them that believe**” refers to **only the apostles**. Why?

**Reason 1: Context is the Apostles' Unbelief in Christ's Resurrection.**

In Mark 16:14, Jesus rebukes the apostles for their **unbelief** in His resurrection.

In v.11-14, four times the apostles' unbelief is mentioned as Jesus addressed the apostles:

v.11 “They (apostles), when they had heard that he was alive .....**believed not**.”

v.13 “.....**neither believed** they them.”

v.14 “He.....upbraided them (apostles) with their **unbelief** and hardness of heart.”

v.14 “because they (apostles) **believed not** them which had seen him after he was risen.”

After this rebuke Jesus gives the apostles the Great Commission in v.15,16. Once the commission is given, Jesus returns to his immediate audience of the eleven apostles when He says in v.17,18 "These signs shall follow **them that believe**" (ie. those of you eleven apostles who believe in my resurrection).

In my name :

1. they shall they cast out devils.
2. they shall speak with new tongues.
3. they shall take up serpents.
4. if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them.
5. they shall lay hands on the sick and they shall recover.

**Reason 2: Practical experience** shows that promises 3,4,5 are not true for every believer today. In spite of continued failures to heal, Charismatics still think that these 5 promises are for all believers today. **The obvious problem** with this interpretation is that it does not deal with everything mentioned in the text.

a) No Charismatic can always fulfil the 5th promise. It says that they **shall** lay hands on the sick, and they **shall recover**. This means 100% recovery all the time. No one can heal every sick person today, as the apostles could in Acts 5:12-16.

"By the hands **of the apostles** were many **signs** and wonders wrought among the people.....**they** (believers) brought forth the sick into the streets.....and they were **healed every one.**" v.16.

John Wimber, a famous Charismatic laid hands on 250 Down's Syndrome children with no cures.

Reinhard Boncke tried to heal over 200 Kenyans at Kisumu in Kenya without any success.

b) "**If** they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them."

"If" means accidentally. The problem here is that many good Christians have become sick or died by poisoning. Have you as a believer ever vomited?

c) "They **shall** take up serpents."

We ask a Charismatic to take up a deadly snake. He replies by saying: "No, that would be tempting God." Yet in the first century this was a sign that the apostles did (**shall** do) to prove the Word of God and their authority. Some believers today have died in trying this. This shows that this is not for today.

**Reason 3: AORIST tense** of "believe" in Mark 16:17 refers to those who **did believe in the past, not who will believe** in the future.

"These signs shall follow them that **believe.**" The Greek word for believe here is "**pisteusasin**" which is an **aorist** participle referring to those who **did believe** in the **past.**"

[S. Zodhiates, "Complete New Testament Word Study Dictionary," p.1107],

"**not** those who would believe in the future."

[S. Zodhiates, "Hebrew-Greek Key Word Study Bible," p.1223].

The aorist tense refers to a **past action at a point in time**, not an event that **recurs** again into the future, as it would be if it was true of all believers.

**Reason 4: Belief** (Gk: pisteusasin in Mark 16:17) **does not refer to saving belief**. In John 3:16 and 5:24 saving belief is "pisteuwn", a different word ending. Hence, "belief" in Mark 16:17 refers not to all future believers, but to the apostles believing in Christ's resurrection at a point in time, once for all time.

**Reason 5: "Do All speak With tongues?"** 1 Corinthians 12:30 requires the answer "No, not all believers have the gift of speaking with tongues."

**Reason 6:** The **Purpose** of these signs was to **confirm the Word of God** spoken and **written by the apostles**, as Mark 16:20 says.

"And **they** (apostles) went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with **them** (apostles), and **confirming the Word** with **signs** (eg. tongues) following."

Once the Word of God (the New Testament) had been confirmed by the apostle's signs, then further signs were not needed. The signs had done their job of proving the New Testament as being from God. When the Word of God was completed, then miraculous apostolic confirmatory signs were no longer needed.

**Reason 7: Mark 16:20 continues the context to mean apostles.**

This tells what happened to the apostles after they changed from unbelief in Christ's resurrection, to believing it and preaching it everywhere with signs following.

Hence, in v.20, the context is still only the apostles doing signs, not every believer doing signs.

**Conclusion:** Either all five signs are valid for today or none are valid today. They only refer to first century apostles.

## 101. ERRORS OF THE CHARISMATIC MOVEMENT

**Introduction:** Some practices of the Charismatic Movement are not according to Scripture. These are:

1. Speaking in Tongues
2. New Revelations
3. Ecumenical Movement towards Rome
4. Slaying in the Spirit
5. Healing

**Question:** Why do people become interested in the Charismatic movement or Pentecostalism?

**Answer:** Because of worldliness, lack of vital, inspired ministry and spiritual deadness. Don't become backslidden, cold or lazy for God, but be on-fire for God, souls and the Bible.

The main Charismatic/Pentecostal doctrine is that: "speaking in tongues is the initial evidence of the baptism of the Holy Spirit." They claim that one who has not spoken in tongues does not have the same power for service as one who has.

If we show that tongues are not for today, we have disproved the Charismatic Movement. A fundamental law of life is that the Word of God must always govern our experiences. Tongues has divided the Christian world this century. The question is not "are tongues genuine?", but it is "are tongues Biblical?" When experience contradicts the Bible, then the Bible always takes precedence. Why? Because we can misinterpret our experience or have false experiences.

Let us examine tongues as follows:

### 1. **Reasons why Biblical tongues are real languages and not Charismatic gibberish.**

- a) Tongues could be interpreted, gibberish cannot.
- b) The Greek word "glossa" in the New Testament used for tongues means real languages.
- c) In Acts 2:6,8 those Jews at Pentecost heard God's message spoken in their own language or dialect. "Every man heard them speak in his own language." v.6,8,11.
- d) The same word "glossa" is used for tongues in Acts as in I Corinthians 12-14.
- e) "Glossa" is plural meaning many languages. Gibberish is singular as it is non-classifiable into more than one type of gibberish.
- f) 1 Cor.14:21 states that tongues were a foreign language given as a sign to unbelieving Israel.

### 2. **Reasons for spiritual gifts.**

Why are spiritual gifts given?

- a) To **glorify Christ**, not to glorify the Holy Spirit. "He shall glorify me." John 16:14.
- b) To **edify others**, not to edify self. "Seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church." 1Cor.14:12. Paul rebukes them for their wrong use of tongues in 1 Corinthians 14:4 "He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself."
- c) To **equip the church** (Ephesians 4:12) for the work of the ministry.

### 3. **Reasons for Tongues (see chapter 99 for a discussion of this).**

Tongues were given to:

- a) Warn unbelieving Jews. (I Corinthians 14:21).
- b) Confirm the word with signs. Mark 16:17-20.
- c) Confirm the Apostles as God's true messengers.

## I. PASSAGES MISUNDERSTOOD BY CHARISMATICS.

### 1. ACTS 2. TONGUES AT PENTECOST.

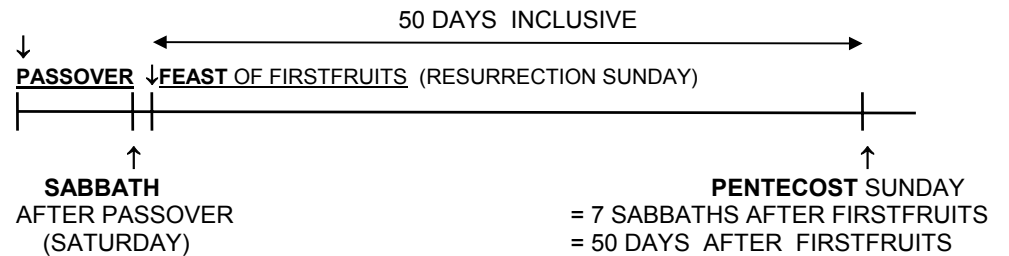
Pentecost means "fiftieth" because it was held 50 days after the feast of Firstfruits (Leviticus 23:15-22). The Jewish calendar in Leviticus 23 is an outline of Christ's work.

**Passover** pictures Christ's death as the Lamb of God (1 Cor. 5:7).

Next ..... **Firstfruits** pictures Christ's resurrection (1 Cor. 15:20-23).

Sunday  
(Day 1)

Day 50 ..... **Pentecost** pictures the formation of the church.



**Passover** came, then the **Sabbath**, then followed the **Feast of Firstfruits** which was always on the **first** day of the week (Sunday).

- Jesus rose from the dead on the Feast of Firstfruits (Sunday) and "became the firstfruits of them that slept." (1 Corinthians 15:20).
- Pentecost occurred 50 days after the Feasts of Firstfruits, which was the day that Christ rose from the dead (Leviticus 23:15,16). This was also a Sunday.
- Christians meet on Sunday, the first day of the week, because:
  1. On the Feast of Firstfruits (Sunday): → 1. **Christ rose** from the dead, and
  2. On the day of Pentecost (Sunday): → 2. the **Holy Spirit** indwelt believers, and
  3. On the day of Pentecost (Sunday): → 3. the **Church** formed.
- On the Feast of Firstfruits, the priest waved a sheaf of grain before the Lord.
- On Pentecost, the priest presented two loaves of bread. Why? Because at Pentecost the church formed, which in this age is made up of Jewish and Gentile believers united in one body (I Cor. 10:17). Leaven (yeast) in the loaves (Lev. 23:17) indicates the presence of sin in the church on earth.
- Pentecost, like Calvary, was a once-for-all event that will not be repeated. The Holy Spirit who came at Pentecost permanently indwells believers (John 14:16,17).
- Wind, fire and tongues accompanied the coming of the Holy Spirit.
- The filling of the Spirit gives believers power for witness and service (Acts 1:8). God never commands us to be baptised with the Spirit, because this happens at salvation when we receive Christ as Saviour. God does command us to be filled with the Spirit (Eph. 5:18) for power to serve Him. At Pentecost the Christians were baptised with the Spirit (Acts 2:18,38) and were filled with the Spirit (Acts 2:4). After that, they experienced many fillings with the Spirit (Acts 4:8,31; 9:17; 13:9,52; 6:3; 7:55; 11:24).

**Question 1:** Did only the 12 apostles speak in tongues at Pentecost or did all 120 speak in tongues?

**Answer:** The evidence supports only the 12 apostles speaking in tongues:

1. **"They"** in Acts 2:1 refers back to the "apostles" in 1:26.
2. The **apostles** only are addressed in Acts 1:1-13. Before Pentecost, only the apostles were promised that "ye shall be baptised with the Holy Ghost not many days hence." (Acts 1:5). "Ye" here only refers to the apostles.
3. **"them"** and **"they"** in Acts 2:3,4 on whom tongues fell refer to the apostles.
4. "every man heard **them** speak in his own language." (Acts 2:6).  
The crowd heard **them** (the apostles) speak in tongues.
5. "Are not all these which speak Galileans?" Acts 2:7. Those who spoke in tongues were Galileans, not men of Judah. Even an angel called them "men of Galilee." (1:11).
6. When the men of Judea accused **"these men"** (2:13) of drunkenness, the group that responded were, "Peter.....with the eleven." (2:14), that is, the apostles.
7. Tongues was one of the sign gifts given to the apostles.  
"Truly the signs **of an apostle** were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds." 2 Corinthians 12:12.

**Note:** There is no record that the 3,000 people saved at Pentecost spoke in tongues, yet they all received the Holy Spirit when they were saved. (Acts 2:38).

No woman in Acts 2 is said to have spoken in tongues.

#### **Historical background.**

**Question 2:** Who were the devout Jews from every nation under heaven in Acts 2:5-12?

**Answer:** After Alexander the Great had conquered Tyre (332BC), he came to conquer Jerusalem. To his surprise, Jaddua, the High Priest, followed by the priests and people of Jerusalem came out to welcome him. Jaddua showed Alexander how he was prophesied in Daniel 8:1-8, 20-22 as the first king of Greece who would conquer the Persians whom Alexander despised. So impressed was Alexander with these Jews that he appointed them as administrators of his far flung empire, as far as India. These Jews became prominent leaders in their communities. It was descendants of these Jews who had flocked to Jerusalem for the feasts of Passover, Firstfruits and Pentecost that Peter spoke to in Acts 2:5, "And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven."

The Greek word "Katoikeo" (2730) used here for "dwelling" means to have a fixed and permanent habitation, in contrast to "paroikeo" meaning a temporary resident. This refers to many wealthy foreign Jews who had a permanent residence in Jerusalem for the convenience of being near the temple. They were pilgrims visiting Jerusalem. These men came from India, Africa, Asia Minor etc. Because they had been living in other countries for over 300 years, they no longer spoke Hebrew. They were devout men, religious Jews, observing Jewish rituals, but like Nicodemus, were not yet born again. These visitors on the day of Pentecost heard the wind and came to investigate it. They were amazed to hear simple, uneducated Galileans suddenly speaking perfectly at least 16 languages from where these pilgrims came. Few people outside Parthia spoke or understood Parthia's guttural language.

The Medes came from high, wild, rugged plateaux beyond Assyria. To their utter surprise they heard their languages being clearly spoken at Jerusalem. Elamites came from east of Babylon. Pontus is now southern Russia. Arabians boasted many dialects. Each person on that day heard "the wonderful works of God" (the content of the Gospel) in his own language. (Acts 2:11).

**Question 3: "What meaneth this?"** Acts 2:12.

**Answer:** If the spectators had known Isaiah 28:11 they would have interpreted this to be a red alert danger signal of judgment soon to come. Peter presented the gospel, and concluded it with an invitation for them to be saved in Acts 2:39,40. "For the promise is unto you, and to your children (Jewish residents of Israel), and to all that are afar off (Jews of the dispersion), even as many as the Lord our God shall call. And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation." Jews were now being evangelised in Gentile languages.

**Note:** First century Jews warned fellow Jews of judgment soon to come, and of the plan of salvation as the only escape. Tongues continued until Jerusalem fell in 70AD.

**Key:** Wherever Jews lived throughout the first century world, the same means of evangelism was followed. Some believer who possessed the gift of tongues witnessed to them in the language of where they lived. Once God judged and scattered the Jews in 70AD, there was no further need for tongues. Consequently, the gift of tongues was withdrawn permanently. Hence "tongues were a sign not to believers, but to (Jewish) unbelievers!!" 1 Corinthians 14:22.

#### **Acts 2:14-21. Peter explains the Holy Spirit's coming.**

At Pentecost, no interpreter was needed since every man heard the message in his own native dialect. Peter denied the accusation of drunkenness by saying that it was only 9am and orthodox Jews did not eat or drink before 9am on a Sabbath or holy day (v.15). On the day of Pentecost, Peter quoted Joel 2:28-32 in conjunction with the outpouring of the Holy Spirit. His introductory words, "But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel" (Acts 2:16), may seem to indicate that he considered Joel's prophecy as being completely fulfilled then. However it is apparent that the events of the day, though extraordinary, did not completely fulfil Joel's prophecy. The day of Pentecost events were only a partial fulfilment of Joel's prophecy. Joel's prophecy will be ultimately fulfilled just after the Tribulation when Christ returns to rescue Israel. The wonders in heaven and in earth (Acts 2:19,20) clearly did not occur on the day of Pentecost or on any other day in church history.

Notice the events of Joel 2:28-32 and Acts 2:17-21 as follows:

- v.28 1. Afterward (in the last days (Acts)), I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh;  
2. **Your** sons and **your** daughters shall prophesy, (gender);  
3. **Your** old men shall dream dreams, (age);  
4. **Your** young men shall see visions, (age);
- v.29 5. Upon the **servants** and upon the **handmaids** in those days will I pour out my Spirit, and they shall prophesy, (Social class);
- v.30 6. I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke.
- v.31 7. The sun shall be turned into darkness,  
8. The moon into blood, before the great and terrible day of the Lord come.
- v.32 9. It shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be delivered.  
10. In Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance for the remnant as the Lord hath said.

### Explanation of Joel 2:28-32.

The Lord announced that "the great and terrible day of the Lord" (v.31) would see God "pour out my Spirit upon all flesh." The context shows that the "all flesh" refers more specifically to all inhabitants of Judah.

Why? Because:

- a) the fourfold use of "**your**"(v.28)'your sons and your daughters...your old men...your young men'
  - b) **Ezekiel 39:29** is a parallel passage: ".....I have poured out my Spirit upon the house of Israel, saith the Lord God."
  - c) **Zechariah 12:10** is a parallel passage: "I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced."  
This pouring out of God's Spirit would be true regardless of gender, age or social class.Joel 2:30,31 The great and terrible day of the Lord will be preceded by wonders and signs of impending judgment (2:10 - "the sun and the moon shall be dark" and 3:15).
- Blood, fire, and pillars of smoke suggest the effects of warfare, possibly nuclear warfare.
  - The sun turning to darkness occurs in Revelation 6:12 and 16:10.
  - The moon turning to blood occurs in Revelation 6:12 "there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; and the stars of heaven fell...."
  - Though these events will signal doom for God's enemies, God's people should interpret them as the precursors of their deliverance.
- a) Matthew 24:29. "Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the **sun** be darkened, and the **moon** shall not give her light, and the **stars** shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken; Then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man..."
  - b) Mark 13:24-27. "After that tribulation, the **sun** shall be darkened, and the **moon** shall not give her light...."
  - c) Luke 21:25-28. "There shall be signs in the **sun**, and in the **moon**, and in the **stars**..."

**Joel 2:32.** At this time of judgment, whosoever (of the Jews) shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be delivered. "Whosoever" refers to repentant Jews, as seen in Zechariah 13:9, "they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people:"

**Note:** In Acts 2:16-21, Peter does not say that this is the fulfilment of Joel's prophecy, because the signs and wonders predicted had not occurred at Pentecost. Joel's prophecy concerns Israel before Christ's glorious appearing. Peter saw in Joel's prophecy an application to the church. Peter was saying: "This is that same Holy Spirit that Joel wrote about. He is here!" "This is that", means the Holy Spirit's coming, not the events of Joel's prophecy as they will come later. Pentecost was a sample of what Joel predicted. Peter did not declare Pentecost as the complete fulfilment of Joel 2:28-32, but only as an illustration, a partial fulfilment, and a similar situation. Therefore, the supernatural signs that the multitude witnessed at Pentecost were the results of the Holy Spirit coming, yet only a glimmer of the future.

**Key: "Afterward"** in Joel 2:28 pin-points the time of the Spirit's outpouring in this passage. It is **after** Jesus Christ has returned at His glorious appearing. The context of Joel 2 does not allow us to link this outpouring of the Spirit to events before Christ returns. This refutes the thought that today's tongues are a sign of Christ's second coming. Tongues at Pentecost prepared the way for Peter's message of salvation which brought 3,000 people to Christ that day. Charismatics often use Joel 2:28-32 to support the continuance of tongues today, as they quote Joel 2:23,24 of "the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month. And the floors shall be full of wheat...." The former rain, they say, is supposed to be the initial outpouring of the Spirit in Acts 2, and the latter rain is claimed to be today's Charismatic Movement.

The context clearly speaks of literal rain giving abundant crops. Spiritualising it, the former rain would mean the riches of David's and Solomon's kingdom, and latter rain would refer to even greater blessing of Christ's kingdom after His second coming.

**Conclusion::**

- a) Tongues at Pentecost were real languages understood by visitors to Jerusalem.
- b) Baptism of the Holy Spirit occurs at salvation. It is not to be sought, nor are tongues an evidence of this baptism.
- c) Tongues was a warning to unbelieving Jews to repent.
- d) Tongues was an evidence of the Holy Spirit coming to form the New Testament church, and to miraculously authenticate Peter's message of salvation.

## 2. THE CHARISMATIC DOCTRINE OF SUBSEQUENCE.

Acts is a book of transition, changes and history.

Changes happen in almost every chapter, such as:

- a) The Old Covenant fades out, and the New Covenant enters. Even Paul was caught in changes as seen by his Jewish vows (Acts 24:18 and 21:26) showing his tie to the Old Covenant.
- b) Acts passes from synagogue to church,
- c) Acts passes from law to grace,
- d) Acts passes from Old Testament saints to New Testament saints,
- e) Acts passes from Jewish believers, to the church made up of Jew and Gentile believers combined.

The only teachings in Acts that are normal for the church age are those that are doctrinally confirmed elsewhere in the New Testament letters to the churches.

Charismatics and Pentecostals take a different approach: They build their theology on the miracles of Acts 2,8,10,19 and on a misunderstanding of I Corinthians 12,13,14. (This is really a rebuke and criticism of tongues, not approval). Historical transition begins at Acts 2:4, the core point of all Charismatic teaching: "And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."

**Doctrine of subsequence defined:** Charismatics teach that at conversion a Christian receives the Holy Spirit in a limited way. Later on, in a subsequent experience the Christian receives the "fullness" of the Spirit, by being baptised with, in or of the Spirit. This experience is accompanied by speaking in tongues, new spiritual motivation, and sometimes miracles. They teach that the Baptism of Holy Spirit:

1. Is usually distinct from and subsequent to (after) the new birth.
2. Is evidenced initially by the sign of speaking in tongues.
3. It must be earnestly sought.

**Question 1: Which passages do Charismatics use to teach subsequence?**

**Answer:**

1. I Corinthians 12:13 cannot be used because it says that the Holy Spirit baptises every believer into the body of Christ at salvation. No tongues are mentioned, nor are we commanded to seek the Baptism. The gospels and epistles don't show subsequence.
2. Acts 2 and 8. Believers received the Spirit after salvation, an element of subsequence.
3. Acts 10. At Cornelius' household, believers were baptised in the Spirit at salvation. No subsequence.
4. Acts 19. John's disciples at Ephesus were baptised in the Spirit at salvation. No subsequence.
  - Believers spoke in tongues in Acts 2,10,19, but not in Acts 8 at Samaria.
  - Believers did not seek earnestly for the baptism in any of Acts 2,8,10,19.
  - None of Acts 2,8,10,19 ever commands tongues for anybody else.

**Question 2: Charismatics claim that the disciples had the Holy Spirit long before Pentecost, because they were already saved and because of John 20:21-22, their proof passage.**

**Answer:** To this we say "yes" the disciples were saved before Pentecost as seen from:

- a) Luke 10:20 "rejoice because your names are written in heaven," to the 70 sent out by Christ.
- b) John 15:3 Jesus to his disciples "Now ye are clean through the Word which I have spoken to you."  
but "**No**" they did not yet have the indwelling Holy Spirit because they were still pre-Pentecost.

**Question 3: If tongues are necessary, why did none of the 5,000 who believed and received the Holy Spirit in Acts 2-4, also speak in tongues?**

**Answer:** Because tongues are not an evidence of Baptism of the Holy Spirit. For something to be normal for everybody, it must happen to everyone. And it did not happen to everybody. Consider that of all the 16 salvation events described in Acts, only 2 groups spoke in tongues:

|                        |                                             |                |
|------------------------|---------------------------------------------|----------------|
| 1. Acts 2.....         | 3,000 at Pentecost.....                     | no tongues     |
| 2. Acts 3, 4.....      | 5,000 at the Beautiful gate.....            | no tongues     |
| 3. Acts 5:14.....      | Multitudes saved.....                       | no tongues     |
| 4. Acts 8:17.....      | Samaritan believers.....                    | no tongues     |
| 5. Acts 8:37-39.....   | Ethiopian eunuch.....                       | no tongues     |
| 6. Acts 9.....         | Saul on Damascus road.....                  | no tongues     |
| 7. Acts 10:46.....     | <b>Cornelius' household.....</b>            | <b>tongues</b> |
| 8. Acts 11:19-24.....  | Greeks saved at Antioch.....                | no tongues     |
| 9. Acts 16:14, 15..... | Lydia.....                                  | no tongues     |
| 10. Acts 16:16-19..... | Demonised damsel.....                       | no tongues     |
| 11. Acts 16:25-34..... | Philippian jailer and his household.....    | no tongues     |
| 12. Acts 17:1-4.....   | Thessalonian believers.....                 | no tongues     |
| 13. Acts 17:10-12..... | Berean believers.....                       | no tongues     |
| 14. Acts 17:15-34..... | Athenian believers.....                     | no tongues     |
| 15. Acts 18:8.....     | Crispus and Corinthians at salvation.....   | no tongues     |
| 16. Acts 19:1-12.....  | <b>12 disciples of John at Ephesus.....</b> | <b>tongues</b> |
| 17. Acts 19:18-20..... | Ephesian believers.....                     | no tongues     |
| 18. Acts 28:23,24..... | Roman believers.....                        | no tongues     |

**Question 4: John 20:21,22, "he breathed on them,and saith unto them, receive ye the Holy Ghost"**

Charismatics think that after the resurrection, the eleven disciples received the Holy Spirit in the upper room, but that they later on received the Baptism of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost which then gave them their real power.

**Answer:** This view is wrong because:

- 1) John 20:22 was not a permanent indwelling of the Holy Spirit, but just a temporary filling of the Holy Spirit to supply their spiritual needs up to Pentecost, just like many Old Testament saints had for a short time. e.g. Samson, John the Baptist (Luke 1:15), Elizabeth (Luke 1:41), Zacharias (Luke 1:61) and Simeon (Luke 2:25). These gospel passages were not intended to be the norm for today. This filling of the Holy Spirit must not be confused with the Baptism of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost, Caesarea and Ephesus (Acts 2:1-13; 11:15-18; 19:1-7). It may have been just a pledge or promise that would be fulfilled at Pentecost. Chrysostom (345-407 AD) and others held this view. John 20:26,27 shows the disciples still fearful behind shut doors, and faithless, eight days later.
- 2) John 7:39 "But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified."  
This refutes the Charismatic idea that the disciples had the permanent indwelling Holy Spirit in John 20:22. They did not have the permanent indwelling Holy Spirit because Jesus had not yet ascended, nor was He yet glorified in heaven. The Holy Spirit would not come until after Jesus had ascended to heaven to receive the glory He had with the Father before the world began (John 17:1-5).
- 3) John 16:7 ".....if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you." Jesus ascended to heaven, then 10 days later, the Holy Spirit came at Pentecost.
- 4) Acts 1:8 "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me...."  
This teaches that in Acts 1:8 the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon the disciples. They were still waiting for the Holy Spirit to come on them. Here, receiving power to witness, came at the same time as they received the Holy Spirit. If the Holy Spirit had come on them in John 20:22, they would not have been waiting, nor would they be powerless.
- 5) Acts 1:4 "they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, ye have heard of me."  
This promise was made in John 14:16, "I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever."  
Here they were still waiting for the Holy Spirit. All these events occurred in a period of transition. The disciples believed in Christ and were Old Testament saints, but they never knew the full experience of the indwelling Holy Spirit until Pentecost. In the upper room there is no evidence that they were seeking or asking for the Holy Spirit, nor anywhere else in the New Testament. Christ had promised the Holy Spirit would come, they were just waiting for "not many days hence." Acts 1:5. No one asked for the Holy Spirit in Acts 2, 8, 10, 19 or anywhere in any letter to any New Testament church. Why? Because the Holy Spirit always indwelt a person at the point of salvation. Romans 8:9

"If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his." How can a believer have Christ, but not have the Holy Spirit? You can't separate the Godhead. "Ye are complete in Him." Colossians 2:10. If we have Christ as Saviour, we are complete; we do not need a second blessing, nor a baptism of the Holy Spirit because we already have it at salvation.

In Acts 2:2,3 Christians were first baptised by the Holy Spirit.

In Acts 2:4 they were then filled with the Holy Spirit, and the apostles spoke in tongues.

Tongues purpose was to:

1. Be a sign of judgment to warn unbelieving Jews to repent.
2. Authenticate the apostles as God's messengers and their message as being from God. Charismatics claim that Acts 2 should happen to everyone. If so, why do we never see a rushing mighty wind, and cloven tongues of fire on people? The Charismatic Movement has decided to use tongues, and then looks for verses to back up their practice. Reject this error as unbiblical.

### 3. ACTS 8:4-19. SAMARITAN SUBSEQUENCE

"When they believed Philip, they were baptised." v.12.

The apostles at Jerusalem sent Peter and John, "who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Ghost (for as yet he was fallen on none of them...) (v.16)

Then they laid hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost." Acts 8:12-17.

Charismatics use this passage to support two errors:

- a) Doctrine of Subsequence: The Samaritans received Christ and are baptised, followed by a time gap. Then they received the Holy Spirit.
- b) Slaying in the Spirit: They lay hands on a person's head, for them to "receive the Holy Spirit", the person falls over backwards, and they have supposedly received the Holy Spirit.

**Question 1:** If the Holy Spirit can be given by laying on of hands, then why didn't Philip lay hands on them, and save Peter and John the long journey?

**Answer:** God wanted the Samaritans to link their receiving of the Holy Spirit with the apostles and the Jerusalem Church.

**Question 2:** Why was there a delay in the Samaritans receiving the Holy Spirit after believing?

**Answer:**

1) Background: Much hatred existed between Jews and Samaritans. If the Samaritans had received the Holy Spirit at the moment they believed, the terrible rift between Jews and Samaritans could have continued into the Christian church, as permanent disunity. Pentecost was made up of Jewish believers. If the Samaritans had started their own Christian group, the age-old rivalries could have continued.

2) God wanted the Samaritans to understand the authenticating power and authority of the apostles, as channels of divine truth. The time gap was there to show the Samaritans that they were under apostolic authority.

3) It showed the Jewish Christians that the Samaritans were in the same Church, had the same Christ, the same salvation, the same Holy Spirit, and the same acceptance by God.

4) Grammatical reason, in Acts 8:16:

"For **as yet** he was fallen upon none of them." The Greek word for 'as yet' is 'OUDEPO'. Some lexicographers note that this word means that something that should have happened hasn't happened yet. It was like saying that the Samaritans were saved, but for some strange reason, what should have happened (the Holy Spirit coming) had not occurred. 'OUDEPO' implies that the Holy Spirit should have come immediately.

This was not a Samaritan Pentecost, but a step of growth for the Church. God wanted everyone to know that there were not two churches, but only one. God wanted to reverse the hatred barriers right at the start. God wanted to establish the apostles' authority outside Jewish society.

**Question 3:** Why is there no mention of tongues at Samaria?

**Answer:** It is because there were no unbelieving Jews present. Jews would not live at Samaria, because they hated the Samaritans greatly.

5) This phenomena of believers not receiving the Holy Spirit until Peter came and laid hands on them, was never repeated anywhere in the New Testament. It was a transitional period.

Hence it is wrong to conclude that receiving the Holy Spirit is a work subsequent to salvation, and that it requires the laying on of hands. **Philip could not do it**. Hence we cannot impart the Holy Spirit by laying on of hands.

### 4. ACTS 10. CORNELIUS' HOUSEHOLD. NO SUBSEQUENCE.

If there was a rift between Samaritans and Jews, there was an almost unbridgable gulf between Gentiles and Jews. A Jew would not enter a Gentile's house.

Peter and six Jewish brethren (v.11-12), went to Caesarea. Peter preached the gospel to Cornelius, a Roman Centurion, and to his household.

"While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Spirit fell on them which heard the word. And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured the gift of the Holy Ghost. For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God." Acts 10:44-46.

Many Charismatics falsely conclude from this that anyone who gets saved must speak in tongues, as proof of salvation.

**Question 1:** Why did Cornelius' household speak in tongues (languages)?

**Answer:** Because there were Jewish Christians present who did not believe that the Spirit of God was for the Gentiles. Hence, this agrees well with 1 Corinthians 14:22 that tongues were a sign to Jews that believed not. Peter and his six Jewish friends were all astonished.

**Question 2:** Why were they all astonished?

**Answer:** Because the Holy Spirit fell upon a Gentile. Yet it happened here, and these Gentiles were speaking in tongues.

**Question 3:** How did these seven Jews know that these Gentiles had received the Holy Spirit?

**Answer:** "For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God." Acts 10:46. The fact that the Apostles understood the Gentiles' tongues to be magnifying God indicated that the tongues were a known language to the Apostles. They knew the same gift of the Holy Spirit was given, because it was accompanied by the same sign, tongues, of Acts 10.

The same tongues of Acts 10 were just like the tongues of Acts 2, as seen from these references.

“On the Gentiles **also**.” Acts 10:45.

“To have received the Holy Spirit **as well as we**.” Acts 10:45.

“The Gentiles **also**.” Acts 11:1.

“The Holy Spirit fell on them, **as on us** at the beginning.” Acts 11:15.

“God gave the like gift, **as he did unto us**.” Acts 11:17.

“God **also**, to the Gentiles, granted repentance.” Acts 11:18.

The Jews could no longer claim spiritual superiority over the Gentiles, only equality. (Ephesians 3:6 and Colossians 3:11).

Charismatics should note two things:

**a)** There is **no gap** between belief in Christ and receiving the Holy Spirit. There is no subsequence here.

**b)** Tongues are mainly a judgment sign to unbelieving Israel (I Corinthians 14:21-22). God also used tongues to convince unbelieving Christian Jews that the Gentiles could receive the Holy Spirit, and that they ought to be welcomed as equals into the Church. Without tongues, the apostles would not have been convinced that the Gentiles could be saved.

**Note:** Acts 11:15 “As I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, **as on us at the beginning**.”

The outpouring of the Holy Spirit at Cornelius' house occurred eight years after Pentecost, yet Peter could not point to any continuous flow of tongues among the churches, when he explained to the Jerusalem church leaders what had happened to the Gentiles. After eight years, Peter still had to say “As on us at the beginning”, not “as on all the churches regularly”. Here is a case where the absence of tongues speaks volumes. If speaking in tongues was a normal experience in churches, Peter would not have had to reach back to Pentecost to cite a similar example.

## 5. ACTS 19:1-6. JOHN'S DISCIPLES AT EPHESUS.

## NO SUBSEQUENCE.

Two Charismatic claims are made in this passage:

**A)** That speaking in tongues is the initial evidence of the Holy Spirit baptism.

**B)** That laying on of hands imparts the Holy Spirit to someone.

This is used to support “slaying in the Spirit.”

Both of these claims can be shown to be false, in that tongues and laying on of the apostles' hands were for the following reasons, which are found in this passage:

**A) Tongues** were necessary to warn the many Jews in Ephesus that God's program had changed, and that the Jews needed to receive Christ as Saviour. Many Jews lived at Ephesus, as seen by:

- i) Twelve disciples of John the Baptist were Jewish. (19:3).
- ii) Paul spoke boldly to the **Jews** in the **synagogue** for three months, who hardened themselves, believed not, and spoke evil of that way. (19:8-9).
- iii) Paul separated his disciples to the school of Tyrranus for two years, so that all **Jews** and Greeks in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus. (19:9-10).
- iv) Vagabond **exorcist Jews** in 19:13 try to imitate Paul's casting out of demons in 19:12.

v) Seven sons of **Sceva**, the **Jewish Chief Priest**, also tried to imitate Paul's casting out of demons, in order to establish their own authority as equal to Paul's, and hence to counter Paul's message. The demonised man leapt on them, and overcame them, so they fled out naked and wounded. (19:14-16).

vi) This was known to all the **Jews** and Greeks at Ephesus. (19:17).

vii) **Alexander** (v.33) was a Jew (1 Timothy 1:20; 2 Tim. 4:14). Therefore, Paul's authority, as a messenger of God to be believed, and Paul's message of Christ, to be received, was proven to all the **Jews** by signs of **tongues** (v.6), **miracles** (v.11), and **casting out of demons** (v.12-20).

viii) Apollos, an eloquent **Jew** came to Ephesus and mightily convinced the **Jews** publicly that Jesus was Christ. (Acts 18:1-28).

Because of the **many Jews** at Ephesus, eight groups being mentioned, tongues spoken by John's twelve disciples was very much in keeping with its stated purpose in I Corinthians 14:21,22 as being a warning sign to unbelieving Jews at Ephesus to repent.

This was the main reason why God gave tongues to these twelve men.

**KEY:** On every occasion that tongues were given, there were **unbelieving Jews** that needed tongues as a sign to convince them of something.

**Acts 2:** Unbelieving devout **Jews** at **Pentecost** heard the Apostles speak in tongues warning them to repent.

**Acts 10:** Cornelius' household at **Caesarea** spoke in tongues to warn unbelieving Christian **Jews** (Peter) that the Gentiles had received the Holy Spirit and should be welcomed into the church on an equal footing with Jews.

**Acts 19:1-33:** John's twelve disciples spoke in tongues at **Ephesus** to warn fellow unbelieving **Jews** to repent and believe Christ's gospel preached by Paul.

**Acts 18:1-17** and **I Corinthians 12,13,14:** In Acts 18, **Jews** are mentioned 6 times at Corinth. Hence the tongues of I Corinthians 12,13,14 were within the correct context of warning the many **Jews** at Corinth to repent.

None of these men were seeking the gift of tongues.

Tongues at Ephesus were a sign to Jews at Ephesus (and elsewhere) that salvation was now only possible by faith in Christ. **Note:**

- a) Faith in Christ yet to come could no longer suffice, since Christ had arrived and purchased salvation on the cross.
- b) Knowledge only of John's baptism (Acts 19:2) could no longer suffice.
- c) Mosaic legalism, having performed its purpose, must be abandoned.

## **B) Charismatic error that laying on of hands imparts the Holy Spirit**

This passage may seem to teach that salvation occurs and then the Holy Spirit is received after or subsequent to salvation, because of Acts 19:2,6.

“He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed?” 19:2.

“And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues and prophesied.” 19:6.

If this error is not corrected by studying the context of Acts 18:24-19:7 of Apollos knowing only the baptism of John, another error is believed of making tongues a sign of receiving the Holy Spirit. Acts 2,8,10 shows that Acts 19 does **not** teach a second experience with tongues as evidence of such an experience.

These 12 disciples of John and Apollos mentioned here were not New Testament believers (Christians), but only disciples of John the Baptist. Like their teacher Apollos, they only knew John's baptism, and knew nothing of Holy Spirit baptism. (18:25 and 19:3).



**Question 1: "Since ye believed" what? (19:2).**

**Answer:** These 12 disciples were Old Testament **believers** still living in the superseded Old Testament age, similar to Jesus' disciples before Pentecost and to Old Testament saints.

They were baptised by John in water "unto (because of) remission of sins" (Matthew 3:11) yet to come in Christ.

They believed in Christ to come, but this belief did not impart the **baptism, indwelling, sealing, and filling** of the Holy Spirit. They did not have the New Testament salvation provided by Christ's death. They were like many Jews living in the transition period between the Mosaic age and the Church age. They still performed and trusted Mosaic ceremonies for salvation, while looking forward to Christ (Acts 15:1,5). These 12 Ephesian disciples, (like modern Charismatics) did not lack faith, but they lacked correct doctrine for faith to take hold of.

Paul's discussion with them was as follows:

**John's disciples:** "We are believers."

**Paul:** "Have ye received the Holy Spirit since ye believed?" v.2. (Paul knew that if they had've believed in Christ after Pentecost, they would have received the Holy Spirit).

**John's disciples:** "We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost." v.2.

**Paul:** "Unto what then were ye baptized?" v.3.

**John's disciples:** "unto John's baptism." v.3

(**Note:** Paul here realised that their missing link was information about Christ, not information about the baptism of the Holy Spirit. So Paul preached Christ Jesus to them, not the Holy Spirit).

**Paul:** John baptised with the baptism of repentance, saying that they should believe on Jesus Christ who was to come after John.

**John's disciples:** They believed.

They were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Paul laid his hands on them.

The Holy Ghost came on them.

They spoke with tongues and prophesied.

**Question 2: Why did Paul lay hands on them?**

**Answer:** To show them that as Jews, they were no longer to follow John the Baptist's teachings, but they were to follow Christ's teachings as taught by the Apostles.

Paul laying hands on them imparted the Holy Spirit to them.

This would have strongly established the Apostle's authority to them.

**Question 3: Why were they given tongues?**

**Answer:** To connect them with Pentecost.

To show them that they were now part of the church with every other believer in Christ.

To warn other Jews at Ephesus to receive Christ, and that the Apostle's message was of God.

Note Acts 19:11,12, "God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul."

Many Jews were convinced by the tongues and miracles that established Paul's authority as a **messenger** of God, and with the **message** of God.

Sceva the Chief Priest's seven sons tried to duplicate Paul's miracles of casting out evil spirits. This was done in order to neutralize Paul's authority to stop Jews leaving the synagogue for Christ. The demonized man beat them up. This led to many more Jews and Greeks coming to Christ.(19:11-20).

**Note:** The anointing of the Holy Spirit is the initial act of indwelling of the Holy Spirit as seen from Luke 4:18; Acts 4:27; 10:38; 2 Corinthians 1:21; 1 John 2:20,27. "Anoint" means to apply.

**Question 4: Why was there a short time delay in them receiving the Holy Spirit after believing Paul's message?**

**Answer:** A similar time delay occurred with the Samaritan believers in Acts 8 for the same reason.

Receiving the Holy Spirit by Paul laying his hands on them identified the Ephesian disciples with the Christian church established since Pentecost under the **Apostle's authority**. In Acts 8, **no believers spoke in tongues** because there were **no unbelieving Jews in Samaria** that needed the warning to repent. Jews hated Samaritans and would not live in Samaria

Tongues at Ephesus connected this work with God's work at Jerusalem. God's program was no longer centred in Israel. The casting away of Israel in God's judgment was now underway.

**Acts is not a norm for the church age, but a narrative of the transition period:**

1. From Synagogue **to** church,
2. From law **to** grace,
3. From Old Testament saints **to** New Testament Christians,
4. From mainly a Jewish body of believers **to** the body of Christ, with neither Jew nor Gentile.

Once the transition between the old and new covenants had been accomplished, with the Holy Spirit poured out, the Holy Spirit was then available to all who believed in Christ at the time of belief. This is how God works today.

Peter was present in Acts 2,8,10. There must be one church, as Jesus prayed in John 17:20-21, not a Jewish church, a Samaritan church, and a Gentile church.

Jewish witnesses heard tongues spoken by Gentile converts in Acts 10, by John's disciples in Acts 19, and the Jewish witnesses Peter and John verified the **Samaritans'** conversion in Acts 8.

Paul wrote about the Holy Spirit many times, but he never stated that the normal Christian experience is the same as what people experienced in Acts 2,8,10,19.

Paul was saved in Acts 9, and gave his salvation testimony in Acts 22,24,26, yet never does he say that he spoke in tongues at his salvation.

The experience of the apostles is found in the transitional book of Acts, while the teaching of the apostles is in the epistles, which are our guide for today. In no New Testament epistle is there any teaching of a second blessing after salvation which is evidenced by speaking in tongues.

Michael Green in "I believe in the Holy Spirit" says: "The Charismatics were always out for power. Paul's reply was to boast not of his power but of his weakness through which alone the power of Christ can shine". When I am weak, then am I strong. The power of a Christian comes from the patient enduring of suffering, reviling, hardship and of thorns in the flesh.

## 6. DOES LUKE 11:13 TEACH THAT WE MUST ASK GOD FOR THE HOLY SPIRIT? NO

"If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him."

This was a **valid request** for the disciples **up until the end** of Christ's earthly ministry just as with some Old Testament saints who received a temporary filling for a task.

At the end of Christ's earthly ministry, he said: "**I will pray** the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you forever." (John 14:16).

The disciples were now **not** to receive the Holy Spirit in answer to their own petition, but **in answer to Christ's petition**. Hence today the Holy Spirit is given to all who believe, because of Christ's prayer, without the individual asking for it. When we receive Christ as our Saviour, we immediately receive the Holy Spirit also. (Romans 8:9,14,16).

Believers today are not to pray for the Holy Spirit because this prayer of the disciples (for the Holy Spirit) was answered at Pentecost.

### Charismatic's Careless Handling of Scripture.

Charismatics use these verses to keep people from questioning the movement.

## 7. THE SIN AGAINST THE HOLY SPIRIT. Matthew 12:22-32.

When you oppose a Charismatic, they often become very angry, and reply with scriptures that are misinterpreted and misapplied.

They claim that if you criticize tongues or Charismatic doctrine, you are doing what the Pharisees did who opposed Jesus in attributing Jesus' work to Satan. They accuse you of coming close to committing the unpardonable sin of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit.

**Question:** What does Matthew 12:22-32 really teach?

**Answer:** Jesus had just healed a man possessed with a devil causing blindness and dumbness. The obvious meaning of this miracle was that Jesus was the Messiah. The Pharisees, however, not wanting to believe in Jesus, **attributed His miracles done by the Holy Spirit to Satan**.

This blasphemy against the Holy Spirit can only be committed when one observes Christ physically on earth doing miracles. Since Christ is not physically on earth today, it is impossible to commit this sin of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, that is, the sin of attributing the works of Christ to Satan.

**Note:** a) This sin was an historical event.

b) It can only be applied to one who rejects the work of the Holy Spirit in presenting Christ's salvation.

c) It can never be used in challenging a Charismatic viewpoint.

## 8. JESUS CHRIST THE SAME YESTERDAY, and TODAY, and FOREVER. Heb. 13:8.

Charismatics use this verse to teach that: What happened "yesterday" during Christ's earthly ministry and during the apostle's lifetime, is happening now. They use this to claim that: tongues are for today, new revelations happen now, healings continue, & miracles of first century magnitude still happen now.

Does the Charismatic interpretation of this verse stand up to hermeneutic principles?

Literally, Hebrews 13:8 means: Jesus Christ is unchanging yesterday, today and forever. This is true of **Christ's nature or essence**. But it is **wrong historically**, which disproves their claim. Why should "**yesterday**" only go as far back as Jesus' earthly ministry?

Note these problems with their position:

a) **Jesus never spoke in tongues** during His earthly ministry.

b) As far as "forever" is concerned, **none of the gifts are forever**. I Corinthians 13:8-13 clearly states that the gifts of prophecy, tongues and knowledge will not endure forever.

c) Do we still offer lambs as blood sacrifices? No, because while Jesus Christ is the same forever, **God's methods of operation change throughout history**.

d) Do we still walk about naked as Adam and Eve did in Eden before the Fall? No, because God's method of operation was different then. So with tongues. Charismatics force a meaning into Hebrews 13:8 that is not there in order to justify their belief that tongues, miracles, healing and prophecies are happening today just as they did in the first century.

## 9. THE PROMISES OF POWER IN MARK 16:17,18

"And these **signs** shall follow them that believe;

In my name **shall** they <sup>1</sup>cast out devils;

<sup>2</sup>they **shall** speak with new tongues;

<sup>3</sup>they **shall** take up serpents; and

<sup>4</sup>**if** they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them;

<sup>5</sup>they **shall** lay hands on the sick, and they **shall** recover."

Charismatics claim that today, these signs follow the preaching of the gospel where it is preached in the Holy Spirit's power and faith. These four "shalls" were deliberate proofs that the apostles performed to publically demonstrate their authority, yet nobody can do these at will today successfully.

This is shown to be false because of our previous discussion on Mark 16:11-20 (p.499-500).

## 10. WILL BELIEVERS DO THE SAME and GREATER WORKS THAN CHRIST'S MIRACLES AS JOHN 14:12 SEEMS TO SAY?

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the **works that I do** shall he do also; and **greater works** than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father."

Jesus' miracles were:

a) Creation - turning water into wine.

b) Healing the lame, lepers, blind and deaf.

c) Casting out demons.

d) Control of nature - stilling storms, walking on water, cursing the figtree, multiplying loaves.

e) Raising the dead.

**Question:** Are there any documented cases of ordinary believers since 96AD doing the above miracles to the same degree as Jesus? No, never. No one comes close to Jesus' miracles. John 14:12 means that Jesus referred to the total ministry of believers preaching the gospel after Pentecost.

The greater works applied initially to the apostles that Jesus was speaking to. They were given power to perform special miracles as credentials of their office (Romans 15:18,19; Hebrews 2:3,4).

For example, Peter preached one sermon and 3000 people were saved in one day. This may have been more than were saved in Jesus' entire three year ministry.

While Jesus' earthly ministry was confined to Palestine, the gospel in the church age would go to the ends of the earth.

These are the greater works that believers would do.

Believers works are greater in scope of influence and in number, but not greater in quality.

## 11. QUESTIONS ANSWERED

**Question 1:** What is the evidence of being filled with the Holy Spirit? Is it speaking in tongues?

**Answer:** This evidence of being filled with the Holy Spirit is:

- Exhibiting the fruit of the Spirit in Galatians 5:22,23 of "love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness and temperance."
- Walking worthy of the Lord as described in Ephesians 4,5,6. We are filled with the Spirit as we exhibit these 40 qualities.

Tongues are not the evidence of being filled with the Holy Spirit because:

- All believers did not speak in tongues (I Corinthians 12:30).
- The Holy Spirit distributes gifts as He wills (I Corinthians 12:7-11).

**Question 2:** What about miracles being done by Stephen (Acts 6:8), Philip (Acts 8:5-8), Barnabas (Acts 14:3), the seventy (Luke 10:1,9,17,19), or in Mark 9:38-41?

**Answer:** Sign gifts authenticated the apostles and their appointed representatives. Stephen and Philip belonged to the seven appointed by the apostles in Acts 6:1-7 by the laying on of hands (v.6). Paul and Barnabas had hands laid on them as commanded by the Holy Spirit to go on Paul's first missionary journey. (Acts 13:1-3).

The seventy that Jesus sent out did not have the office of apostle, but were "sent ones" to proclaim Christ's Kingdom as Christ personally directed His program on earth. Both the seventy and the man casting out demons were before the church age started, and does not establish a precedent to be done by all church age believers.

**Question 3:** Does 1 Corinthians 1:7 include miracle workers in the Corinthian church other than the apostles?

**Answer:** "so that ye come behind in no spiritual gift."

"In no gift" means "in no favour, or gracious endowment." The word used here (Charisma) does not necessarily refer to miraculous endowments, but includes all the kindnesses of God towards them in producing peace of mind, humility, steadfastness, etc. Paul is saying that they possessed, in rich abundance, all those endowments which were bestowed on Christians. This does not teach that non apostles did miracles.

**Question 4:** Why would God allow **error in Charismatic** meetings where the Holy Spirit was blessing?

**Answer:** We must not assume that because God is blessing a church, then **all** aspects of that church please Him. Many Charismatics assume that because people are being saved in Charismatic churches, and large numbers attend, then all aspects of Charismatic doctrine and practice are God approved. In Revelation 2 and 3, the churches at Ephesus, Pergamos, Thyatira and Sardis each had good and bad aspects. Hence we must not think

that because a church looks good in some areas, then all aspects of that church are good. Many people have been saved in churches with false doctrine.

**Note:** Satan's attacks are most pronounced in churches seeking to uphold sound **Bible** doctrine, who **win souls** to Christ, who seek to **live holy lives**, who **expose Satan's lies**, and who **attack Satan's Kingdom**.

Satan would not attack but help to build churches that teach error and promote Satan's Kingdom, such as JW's, Mormons, New Agers, etc.

**Question 5:** Do people have the genuine gift and power to "slay people in the Spirit?"

**Answer:** This has no Biblical basis whatsoever.

Any appeals to Daniel (Daniel 8:16-27), Peter, James and John on the Mount of Transfiguration (Matthew 17:1-7), John on Patmos (Revelation 1:17), Ezekiel (Ezekiel 2:1-3), or the multitude coming to arrest Jesus in Gethsemane (John 18:1-6), will not do, because in each case these people fell to the ground because of direct contact with **God** or an **angel of God**.

People instead **fall on their face**, (not on their back) and **worship God**, not become unconscious.

"and so falling down on his face he will worship God." I Corinthians 14:25.

This slaying in the spirit (falling backwards) is mentioned in Isaiah 28:11-13 where Israel was warned to repent after hearing other tongues (v.11), "yet they would not hear" (v.12) so God judged them by them "**falling backward**, and be broken, and snared, and taken." (v.13). Hence, people falling backward is a sign of God's judgment on those who refuse to hear God's warnings. This is a strong warning against the evil of Charismatic slaying in the spirit.

**Question 6:** How does the Holy Spirit lead us if not through revelations, visions, dreams & prophecies?

**Answer:** **1) "Thy Word** (Bible) is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path." Psalm 119:105. God may use a passage of Scripture personally applied to our situation.

**2) Circumstances.**

**3) Open and closed doors.**

**4) Wisdom of pastors.** Some believers are bad advisors. God speaks to us through the Bible as we apply it to each situation. Avoid the advice of fools, ignorant and wicked people. Leadings, impressions, hunches etc. are not always reliable because we may have overlooked some facts which lead us to a wrong impression. So, get all the facts, match them with Scriptures and make the choice based on whether a situation is in line with Bible truth, or against Bible truth. The Holy Spirit will then give you peace as you act according to the Bible.

**Question 7:** Isn't it a good thing for the Charismatic Movement to unite with Roman Catholics if they are winning Catholics to Christ?

**Answer:** The end never justifies the means. God calls us to be separate from sin and false doctrine. The Charismatic Movement has the approval of the Roman Catholic church who established the "Catholic Charismatic Renewal Office" in 1972.

The Charismatic Movement will bring about unprecedented ecumenical unity, which will lay the foundation of and usher in the worldwide harlot church of Revelation 17, Mystery Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and abominations of the earth. This church will bear the name of Christ, but give loyalty to the Antichrist who will be able to perform signs and wonders (Revelation 13:3,13,14,15).

**Popularity has slain more prophets of God than persecution ever did.** In Christianity today, whatever is popular, whatever is accepted, whatever brings good feelings, whatever brings unity, all become the accepted norm for the church.

Luther said: **“Unity without truth is treason.”** Truth is being set aside in the name of unity. Darkness and light are mixing and embracing.

In John 17:17-21, Jesus **first** prayed that we would be sanctified by the truth of God’s Word, (v.17), then He prayed for unity (v.21) based on truth. The basis for unity is always the truth of God’s Word.

**Question 8:** Why should we question the source of prophecies and knowledge if they come true?

**Answer:** The test of a true prophet is 100% accuracy. We should consider all a “prophet’s” predictions to see if every one always comes true. If he correctly predicts 99 times and one time he is wrong, then he is a false prophet (Deuteronomy 18:22). Also his prophecy must agree with all of Scripture. Demons have access to much information and can make correct predictions to win people over.

**Question 9:** Why do we have to go into such intricate and complicated studies to know the answers on these Charismatic issues? Why can’t we just accept the Scriptures at their first surface interpretation?

**Answer:** The Bible has shallow parts and deep parts. Even Peter said that some of the Bible was hard to understand (2 Peter 3:14-16). Hence we need to study the Bible carefully and thoroughly (2 Timothy 2:15). The problem with the Corinthian church was that they were content with immaturity. Hence they could not understand other spiritual truths (1 Corinthians 3:2,3). The Lord has given Bible teachers who must study the Bible to rightly divide it, so that Christians will not be tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine.

**Question 10:** Are you saying that it is impossible to cast out demons today because of Mark 16:17-20?

**Answer:** No. Nobody today has the gift of casting out demons (a type of healing). Demons are cast out today because of the prayers of Christians (James 5:14-16) and by the power of the Lord Jesus, not because someone has the gift of exorcism.

**Question 11:** How do you explain that some people seem genuinely healed at Charismatic meetings?

**Answer:** When John Wimber visited Sydney in March 1990. At his meetings he invited people to come for healing of disorders such as:

- a) Bad backs and necks.
- b) Problems with left big toe.
- c) Nervous disorders.
- d) Unequal leg lengths.
- e) Breathing problems.
- f) Barrenness.

These conditions are not in the same league as Jesus’ and the Apostle’s healing the blind, lame, deaf, raising the dead, curing the insane, etc.

When John Wimber was asked if he had success in healing Down’s Syndrome children, (a genetic disease which cannot be healed by psychosomatic factors), he replied that he had prayed over more than 200 such children, but he admitted that not one child had been healed. This shows the Charismatic healing Movement to be false.

In the Indonesian revivals it was claimed that God raised people from the dead. The trouble was that the locals had different definitions for death. If a person was unconscious they deemed him as dead.

**Question 12:** Doesn’t Joel 2:28-32 say that before Christ returns men and women will prophesy, etc.?

**Answer:** No, it doesn’t. Read Joel 2:27 which tells us that after Christ has returned in glory, Israel gets saved; then read Joel 2:28 which says **afterwards** (i.e. after Christ’s return) your sons and daughters shall prophesy. This happens in the Millennium, not in the church age.

## 12. COUNTERFEIT ECUMENICAL UNITY OF TODAY’S TONGUES

When tongues appears in **fundamental** and **evangelical** churches, strife and division result.

Yet when tongues occur in **liberal** churches where doctrine is not important, then unity results.

The Charismatic Movement produces a counterfeit unity.

- a) Instead of **Christ** being the centre, they give the Holy Spirit central attention. Jesus said of the Holy Spirit, “He shall not speak of Himself. He shall glorify me.” John 16:13,14.
- b) Instead of the **Bible** being the basis, their experience becomes the way of knowing God’s will. “If they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.” Isaiah 8:20.

Old liberalism and new Pentecostalism have joined and denominational barriers began to fall.

- 1) An Assembly of God Pastor refers to an **Episcopalian priest** who has recently received the Charismatic spirit baptism and ministry “power”, yet still does not believe in Christ’s virgin birth or resurrection. The Assembly of God Pastor well asks: “I can’t understand why God would give all that power to a fellow so far out on the liberal left.”
- 2) Pentecostal **Christadelphians** deny Christ’s deity, His pre-existence, and personality of the Holy Spirit, yet they speak in tongues. It does not matter what a person believes doctrinally, as long as he speaks in tongues as evidence of the “baptism of the Holy Spirit.”

**Question 13:** How can this experience be available to anyone regardless of how heretical are his views?

- 3) Rome took in the Charismatic Movement, when in 1975 Pope Paul VI blessed a gathering of Catholic Charismatics. Both Rome and the Charismatic Movement hold to similar positions on the Bible in that they both allow new revelations from God beyond the Bible.

Roman Catholic priest Edward O’Connor of Notre Dame writes in “The Pentecostal Movement in the Catholic Church”, p.23,28,32 that:

*“Although they derive from Protestant backgrounds, the Pentecostal churches are not typically Protestant in their beliefs, attitudes or practices. p. 23.*

*Catholics who have accepted Pentecostal spirituality have found it to be fully in harmony with their traditional faith and life.* p.28.

*It cannot be assumed that the Pentecostal Movement represents an incursion of Protestant influence.*” p.32.

O'Connor says that Catholic Charismatics have been brought back to Penance, devotion to Mary, and devotion to the Real Presence in the Eucharist, through their “baptism in the Holy Spirit.”

The Charismatic Movement does nothing to unsettle Roman Catholic faith or traditions.

**The Catholic “spider” is about to welcome the Charismatic “fly” into its parlour.**

Charismatics may have been “slain”, but not “in the Spirit”.

### 13. TRIBULATION APPROACH TO TONGUES

Tongues at best is a learned gibberish; at worst it is caused by demon possession as in occult tongues.

The devil uses tongues to:

**a) distract** from the real issue in salvation, which is faith in Christ as Saviour.

**b) distort spirituality**, as people think that tongues produces spirituality.

In Corinth, tongues had nothing to do with spirituality, but were associated with carnality.

Satan counterfeits Christ as the Head of the church, with the Antichrist to be the head of ecumenism.

In 2 Thessalonians 2:8,9 the Antichrist's coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders. The antichrist will have a false gift of miracles, healings and tongues.

Some illnesses can be demon induced, and cures can be achieved by Satan removing the demons from people in order to deceive the world. Hence the Satanic counterfeit of tongues and healing will confuse the lost and hinder them from receiving the gospel. They will reject the truth, hence 2 Thess. 2:11 says,

“And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion that they should believe a lie.”

As a person consistently rejects truth, his heart is hardened, and he is incapable of discerning truth from error, and chooses error. eg. Pharaoh, JW's, Mormons, etc.

“When they (religious leaders of the day) shall say unto you, seek unto them that have **familiar spirits**, and unto wizards that peep and mutter: should not a people seek unto their God.” Isaiah 8:19.

The Hebrew word for “familiar spirits” is “**OB**” and in the Greek Septuagint is “**EGGASTRIMUTHOS**”, both words meaning ventriloquist demons, fallen angels who control the vocal chords of their hosts. “Peep” means a high falsetto voice. o “mutter” means a deep hollow voice.

The best documented modern case of this is Helene Smith in Switzerland who spoke in an ancient language of India. At first, many thought that she had the gift of tongues. However, her “gift” proved to be a clear case of demon possession, because when the demon left her (Luke 11:24,28), she had no recollection of what had happened.

In 1 Kings 22:22, a wicked spirit appears in heaven, offering to fulfil a mission as a lying spirit in the mouth of false prophets on earth. Hence, a **lying spirit can impersonate the Holy Spirit**. Modern spirit-baptisms with tongues and healings are often due to demons impersonating the Holy Spirit.

**Question:** How will Satan successfully deceive the world into worshipping him?

**Answer:** By the Satanic **healing** of the Antichrist in Revelation 13:3,4,12-15, and by the miraculous gift of **tongues** that Satan gives to the Image (v.15).

Hence, Satanic healing and tongues will become a worldwide delusion as the Antichrist draws near.

In Matthew 24:4,5,23-26, “For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great **signs** and **wonders**, insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall **deceive** the very elect.”

**Question:** How will they deceive?

**Answer:** By signs and wonders.

**Question:** What will they be trying to make people believe?

**Answer:** That whenever they do these signs and wonders, it is the Holy Spirit manifesting His power.

Refuse to go and see what is going on.

Some Pentecostal preachers intentionally use hypnosis to temporarily heal people and to suggest to them to speak in tongues.

eg. An American Pentecostal “evangelist” and “healer” named Valdez, offered Franquin the hypnotist \$100,000 a year tax-free to be a Pentecostal evangelist and healer. Franquin refused. This was reported in the Sydney Daily Telegraph newspaper, Jan. 26, 1956.

### 14. HYPNOTIC IMITATION OF TONGUES AND HEALING.

Many Charismatic preachers are religious hypnotists.

Any good hypnotist can make his subject speak in tongues, or feel that he is healed of some illness (only to relapse later), or by a touch putting the poor victim into a trance (Charismatics call this “slaying in the spirit.”)

A Charismatic preacher can hypnotize people if the following conditions are met:

**a)** The person must be **convinced** of the hypnotist's ability,

**b)** The person must be a **willing** subject,

**c)** Repetitive, **rhythmic music**, as occurs in many Charismatic rock music bands.

**d)** The person must be **expecting** something to happen (e.g.: to be healed, or to speak in tongues, or be slain in the spirit).

Most people can apply hypnotic suggestions if they knew how. When a preacher has unknowingly produced the necessary mental condition in a susceptible person, things happen which may deceive the preacher into thinking that he has some special gift of the Holy Spirit. When others think that he has this gift, they are ready to be the next victims.

Hypnotists admit that it is very simple to give a person a headache, toothache, shorten a limb, remove pain, pass a needle through a man's hand painlessly, impart the “gift” of tongues, make a person feel and think that he is healed. (This is always a temporary healing just as Charismatic healings are). Religious hypnotists go on deceiving others, calling it the “Baptism of the Holy Spirit.”

Our body is like a **prison** to keep our spirit in, but it is also like a **fortress** to keep out the corruption of demon spirits. Normally our mind and body repels demonic attacks. But if we allow our mental fence to be broken down by surrendering control of our mind to another

person or spirit or to group pressure (as in blanking your mind to speak in tongues, or allowing yourself to be slain in the spirit, or healed) then we are exposed to demonic attack.

The victim is unable to restore the fence in his own power. He must re-submit to being only guided by the Bible, not by some religious hypnotist. The sad end of such a victim is that often, morality drops, Bible truth is rejected and error is embraced, spirituality wanes, tongues takes greater control, and mental breakdowns often occur.

Enoch Coppin, who was a hypnotist in his unsaved days had practised many hypnotic healings, the giving and taking away of bodily afflictions and speaking in tongues, insists that their source is the demonic forces of Satan.

## 15. MENTAL SUSCEPTIBILITY and SURRENDER OF THE WILL.

Once a person has been made mentally susceptible by:

- a) Wrongly applied, falsely interpreted **scriptures** (as in all cults),
- b) Listen to exciting **testimonies** of healings, tongues, and wonderful spiritual experiences, the door into his mind is open for Pentecostal seducing demons to enter, who impersonate the Holy Spirit.

Many Charismatic healers imply that someone in the audience has a very sinful sex problem. Many people have a temptation to sexual sin. This is used to make the person feel inferior, as a second rate Christian in need of so-called "Holy Spirit Baptism". This is a commonly used trick to make people's minds susceptible to think that they need tongues, healing, slaying, etc. as a solution to their problem. This is a high pressure selling technique. Many Charismatic healers trick people to believing that they are healers by claiming to make a person's legs equal in length, when they were equal in the first place.

**Example 1:** Two old ladies on crutches came to the front of a Charismatic service to be healed. After the laying on of hands they were hypnotically convinced that God had healed them. On the way out they both fell down the steps breaking their hips. Friends then sent for the Charismatic healer to heal them, but he refused to come, nor did he visit them in hospital.

**Example 2:** A young man claimed to be healed from sinus. When asked how he felt, he replied, "I am healed, but I still have the symptoms." He was surely deceived.

**Question:** What is the Charismatic spirit baptism?

**Answer:** The human being has two nervous systems, the voluntary in the brain, and involuntary which controls involuntary actions such as heart muscle contraction, breathing, etc. Normally the voluntary system is in control, but in the so-called spirit-baptism when one speaks in tongues, he by-passes his brain, allowing the subconscious mind to become active. Hence tongues comes from the involuntary nervous system as gibberish which is disconnected from the conscious commands of the brain. Hence, control of one's life is given to the subconscious involuntary nervous system, when real control should be given to the mind controlled by the Bible as it directs the voluntary conscious mind, and as it consciously weighs every decision in accordance with Scripture to be right or wrong.

**Question:** Is healing in the Atonement?

Charismatics claim that healing is in Christ's atonement for sin, as a benefit available to all believers today. If this were true, then no believer should ever get sick or die.

Physical healing has been secured by Christ's atonement but we only get it at Christ's return when we receive our resurrection bodies, not now in the Church age.

"with his stripes we are healed." Isaiah 53:5; "by whose stripes ye were healed." 1 Peter 2:24

Peter tells believers that the healing we have is "**past tense**", a spiritual healing received at salvation. We do not have complete physical healing today because:

- 1) Healing left Paul. "Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick." 2 Timothy 4:20. Paul couldn't heal him.
- 2) "Epaphroditus ... was sick nigh unto death." Philippians 2:25-27. Why did Paul let him get so bad? Why didn't Paul heal him straight away? Why didn't Epaphroditus heal himself, if every believer can do it? Did he not have enough faith? Paul never criticized him for lack of faith. His raising to health was an act of divine mercy, not an atonement right.
- 3) "Use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often **infirmities** (sicknesses)". 1 Timothy 5:23. This would have been madness if Paul could heal Timothy. Why didn't Timothy heal his own stomach and other **often** sicknesses by laying on of hands as Charismatics do? Why use wine? Did Timothy lack the faith to be healed?
- 4) "Luke the beloved **physician**." Colossians 4:14. Luke would not have continued as a physician if he (along with all believers) could heal at will.
- 5) "Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let **them** pray over him..." James 5:14-15. Why didn't the sick man heal himself if healing is in the atonement? The "prayer of faith," not the "gift of healing" shall save the sick. The sick believer was to call for the church elders, not the healer, or the person of great faith.
- 6) "I will glory in my **infirmities** (weaknesses, sicknesses).." 2 Corinthians 12:9,10.
- 7) "The creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of **corruption**." Romans 8:21.

## 102. FIRST CORINTHIANS 12.

### I. BACKGROUND OF THE CHURCH AT CORINTH.

Corinth was a city of commerce, culture, religion and vice. Strategically located it became a trade centre for merchants from East and West. As its wealth increased so did its need for banks provided by pagan temples which people thought would never be robbed. As people lost respect for the gods, they robbed the temples. Jews provided a better banking service, so Jews became wealthy at Corinth. Corinth was the capital of the province of Achaia, a city of 700,000 people in Paul's day. Its population was Greek, Roman and Jewish.

Paul, Silas and Timothy started the church at Corinth in Acts 18 in 54AD. Many unbelieving, intolerant, bigoted Jews living in Corinth was the reason why tongues were so greatly used here. Paul spent two years teaching, preaching and organising the church. Paul wrote 1 Corinthians in 59 AD after his three year stay at Ephesus. (Acts 19).

### II. PROBLEMS IN THE CORINTHIAN CHURCH.

Although they were "sanctified in Christ" (1 Corinthians 1:2), "enriched by Christ in all utterance and knowledge" (1 Corinthians 1:5), and "they came behind in no spiritual gift" (1:7), all was not well in the Corinthian church.

- i) **It was not a spiritual church, but a carnal church.**
- ii) **Division** (1:10; 11:18,19) and contentions (1:11). They followed human leaders (1 Cor. 1:12-15). Wherever tongues enters a church strong division will occur. The only tongues speaking church in the New Testament epistles was a carnal, divided church. Paul's answer to divisions is to preach the gospel (1:17).
- iii) **Selfishness.** They were carnal, babes in Christ (3:1). They were suing each other in court (6:6-8), they were misusing their Christian liberties (8:9-11), they were eating selfishly at their love feasts (11:20-22), and they were using the gifts for self-edification (1 Corinthians 12-14) just as many of today's Charismatics do.
- iv) **Criticism.** They thought that they had spiritually outgrown Paul (4:3). In 2 Corinthians 10:10 they said of Paul that "his speech is contemptible." Paul here describes the situation as "some are puffed up." (1 Corinthians 4:6,18-20).
- v) **Tolerance of evil in the church.** There was fornication (5:1,2) and they failed to separate from evil (5:7, 11-13).
- vi) **Heresy in the church**-usually accompanies evil. Some doubted the resurrection (1 Corinthians 15).

Paul established the church at Corinth during his second missionary journey (Acts 18), spending 18 months there, then he left. Other pastors came, then many problems arose, such as rebellion against Paul's apostolic authority, etc. They perverted almost every aspect of their lives. They brought problems from paganism into the church. They misunderstood the Holy Spirit and equated His work with pagan ecstatic activity of the Acropolis temple, with its 1000 prostitute priestesses. The mystery Babylon religion of Corinth aimed to get its devotees into a semiconscious ecstatic hypnotic spell to contact their deities. Their mind would go into neutral and their emotions would take over. This made them feel very good.

Many Charismatics today get into a similar state, attribute it to the Holy Spirit and conclude: "I felt so good, it must be of God." "Slaying in the Spirit" is a form of hypnosis and sometimes it is demonic. In 1 Corinthians 12:2, Paul says that they used to worship in the same way as pagans do in ecstatic demon religions. They were bringing these same old

patterns into the church and letting demons invade their worship services. They could not distinguish between the acts of Satan and the work of the Holy Spirit.

Does the New Testament teach that when a Christian goes out of control, falls into a trance, and faints that it is of God? No. People only counterfeit what is valuable. Satan was busy counterfeiting spiritual gifts at Corinth, as well as today. In accepting the counterfeit, we forfeit the genuine.

### III. THE NATURE AND PURPOSE OF GIFTS.

The Corinthians' self-indulgent spirit discussed in their sins of chapters 1-11, manifested itself also in spiritual gifts, thus producing selfishness, disunity, and chaos.

Do tongues turn a person inward to self concern and selfish interests, or does it open him up to others and their needs? Paul compares a church to a body, a family, an army, a temple, and a bride. The Corinthian church were like children with toys, instead of adults with valuable tools.

**12:1** - "I would not have you ignorant." Though the Corinthians possessed spiritual gifts, they were ignorant of their nature, purpose and rules of use.

**12:2** - "Ye know that ye were Gentiles, **carried away** unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led."

Paul reminds them of their past idol worshipping days, where they were **carried away**, led away or swept away in ecstasy, emotional hysteria, falling on the ground, and babbling in ecstatic speech, as Plato and Virgil record.

Paul is saying, "that is how it was when you were idolaters, but it should not be so now. Being swept away is not a sign of spirituality, but of your pagan days."

The Charismatic Movement today emphasizes "being carried away" or "slain in the spirit." The Holy Spirit does not produce what idolatrous worship produces. This practice is not in the New Testament, but is a worldwide occult experience. Paul here warns against false manifestations of spiritual gifts.

**Note:** In 1 Samuel 19:18-24, Saul has been trying to kill David. Saul sends three messengers after David, but the Spirit of God takes over them, restraining them from taking David (v.20), and causing them to prophesy. Finally Saul comes after David. The Spirit of God comes on Saul causing him to **prophesy** all day and all night, **take off his clothes** and **lie down naked**. This was God's **judgment** on him, to stop him from killing David. To suggest this is normal, desirable behaviour for all Christians today is absurd, it is not in the New Testament, and is ignoring the context. Such behaviour never happened to approved men of God.

Sadly, the modern Charismatic movement is ignorant of accurate knowledge of God's Word on tongues and other spiritual gifts. Paul's illustration in v.2 gently and firmly implies that demonic deception behind idols (1 Corinthians 10:20) can still harm the believer who enters the spiritual realm in ignorance of God's Word.

**12:3** - "Wherefore, I give **you** to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost."

Paul here warns the Corinthians and by application, the Charismatics today, that it is possible for Christians ("you" addressed) to speak by the Spirit of God or by another spirit. Some Corinthians became so confused, and their worship so paganized and frenzied, that they even allowed the Lord to be cursed in their meeting. Those who were saying "Jesus is accursed" claimed to be speaking by the Spirit of God. The Corinthians were warned of evil spirits who sought to creep in among them, pretending to be the Spirit of God. They too could give manifestations imitating the Holy Spirit's work. Before their conversion they had been led along blindly by the demon powers of these evil spirits, and had not gained sufficient maturity to be able to discern what was of the Holy Spirit and what was demon imitation, so they were given a way to test the spirits.

This tells us that evil spirits are still able to give manifestations of what seems like the Holy Spirit.

To truly say that Jesus is the Lord implies deity, as Lord implies sovereign authority. Old Testament Jews regarded Jehovah as too sacred to pronounce, so they used "Lord." When Polycarp was told to say "Caesar is Lord" (meaning God), he said "Jesus is Lord" (meaning God) instead.

"No man can say Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost." Jesus said that the Holy Spirit **would not speak of himself**, but would always speak of and promote the Lord Jesus Christ.

"Howbeit when he the spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for **he shall not speak of Himself; .....He shall glorify Me.**" John 16:13,14.

The Holy Spirit is never the author of a statement like this:

"Now that you have received Christ you have salvation, but you need to receive the Holy Spirit to be a complete Christian."

This wrong statement says that Christ begins the work of salvation, but that the Holy Spirit completes it.

"that in **all things** He might have the pre-eminence." Colossians 1:18.

Gardiner summarizes 1 Corinthians 12:1-3 as follows:

- i) God intends Christians to be concerned with the **total of spiritual life**, not just the spiritual gifts.
- ii) God does not want us to be **ignorant** of the purpose of spiritual gifts.
- iii) When the Holy Spirit controls a Christian, he is **not carried away** nor out of control as the idolaters were.
- iv) The **Holy Spirit does not exalt Himself**, but exalts Christ as Lord.

**12:4** "Now there are **diversities (varieties) of gifts**, but the **same Spirit.**"

**Charisma** (gifts) are divine abilities for believers to speak or serve in the power of the Holy Spirit.

Spiritual gifts are not natural talents or skills. God gives believers varieties of supernatural spiritual gifts just as players on a team have varieties of positions.

Two types of gifts are: Speaking gifts and serving gifts.

"If any man **speak**, let him speak as the oracles of God; .. if any man **minister**, let him do it as of the ability which God gives." 1 Peter 4:11.

A believer's gifts can be an overlapping combination of different amounts of several gifts, for example, 40% evangelism, 60% teacher. We may be strong in one gift, but not as strong in another gift.

**12:5** "Now there are **differences (varieties) of administrations**, but the **same Lord.**"

Differences of administrations = varieties of ministries.

Even Christians with the same basic gift, may manifest that gift in many different ways.

E.g. One **teacher** may specialize in teaching children, while another teacher may specialize with adults. One **evangelist** may be able to powerfully address large crowds, while another evangelist's strength may be in one-to-one evangelism.

Every gift is a help or service gift, never given for self-edification. A gift exercised in private is a perverted gift. God gives his gifts **to us**, but to use for others. If we are **personally blessed** by using our gifts, then that blessing is the by-product, not the purpose of gifts.

"As every man has **received the gift**, even so **minister (use) the same to one another**, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God." 1 Peter 4:10.

God lends us his gifts for us to use for other's benefits and for God's glory.

**12:6** **Varieties of results.**

"There are **diversities (varieties) of operations**, but it is the **same God** which worketh all in all."

- **Operations** (1755) = the results energized by God's grace.

Both the bestowing and the empowering of gifts are God's domain. God gives us power to use spiritual gifts. We should not all expect to see the same results, but different results of our gifts. Every gift is as spiritual and important as any other. We should aim to discover, to faithfully use, and be grateful for the gift the Lord has given us. No other believer can take our place in God's work. God has given no one else exactly the same gift or ministry as you. If we do not use our gifts or fulfil our ministry it will not be fulfilled. We see the Trinity in verses 4,5,6. "The same Spirit...the same Lord,...the same God."

**12:7** "But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to **profit** withal."

- **Manifestation** (5321) = to make visible. The work of the Holy Spirit is given to profit or visibly benefit individuals and the church as a whole. If we fail to use our gifts, we hinder others in using their gifts, and we cripple our own ministry.

**Four profitable benefits result from using our gifts:**

1. Christians benefit as individuals.
2. Churches grow in quality and quantity.
3. New spiritual leaders are raised up.
4. Unity, joy, love and fellowship blossom in a church.

Gifts are for the good of the whole church, not for the individual enjoyment. The Corinthians were using their gifts selfishly to promote themselves, and not to prosper the church.

**12:8-11** **Eighteen Gifts.**

**Question:** Why are gifts given?

**Answer:** To build churches by glorifying Christ, to edify others, to equip the church, and to arm soldiers.



| <u>1 Cor. 12:8-10</u>                                                                                        | <u>1 Cor. 12:28-30</u>                                                        | <u>Romans 12:6-8</u>                                 | <u>Ephesians 4:11</u>                                 |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|
| Prophecy                                                                                                     | Prophets                                                                      | Apostles<br>Prophets                                 | Apostles<br>Prophets<br>Evangelists<br>Pastor/Teacher |
| Wisdom<br>Knowledge<br>Faith<br>Healing<br>Miracles<br>Discerning spirits<br>Tongues<br>Interpreting tongues | Teachers<br><br>Healing<br>Miracles<br><br>Tongues<br><br>Helps<br>Government | Teachers<br><br><br><br>Interpreting tongues         |                                                       |
|                                                                                                              |                                                                               | Ruling<br>Ministry<br>Exhortation<br>Giving<br>Mercy |                                                       |

### 1. APOSTLE.

Apostolic requirements were:

- Must have seen the resurrected Christ. Acts 1:22; 1 Corinthians 9:1.
  - Commissioned directly by Christ. Acts 26:15-18; Mark 3:13-19; Luke 6:13-16.
  - Accredited by miracles. 2 Corinthians 12:12.
- Apostle means "one sent forth with orders."

Two kinds of Apostles are:

- Twelve Apostles of the Lamb. (The office). Luke 6:13; 22:29,30; Revelation 21:14.
- Apostles of the churches. Barnabus (Acts 14:14), Andronicus and Junia (Romans 16:7); Paul, Silvanus, Timothy (1 Thessalonians 2:6); Epaphraditus is "your messenger" (apostolos in Greek) Philippians 2:25; unnamed brethren as messengers of the churches. (2 Cor. 8:23).

The work of an Apostle was to:

- Lay the foundation of the church. Ephesians 2:20.
- Confirming (authenticating) the word preached, before the Bible was completed by the signs of apostles. 2 Corinthians 12:12; Hebrews 2:3,4.
- Oversight that Philip's work at Samaria, and that Paul's work amongst the Gentiles were according to sound doctrine. Acts 8:14 and 15:1-29.

**Miracles** of Apostles. "Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds." 2 Corinthians 12:12.  
Apostles could heal "**all manner** of sickness...Go to the **House of Israel.**" Matthew 10:1,5-8.

The Apostles' miracles authenticated the gospel message, the messengers, struck terror in the minds of opponents, and established Christianity. Also notice in Hebrews 2:3-4 how confirming signs refer to Christ's and the apostle's ministry.

In Romans 15:18-19, Paul says that the Holy Spirit "wrought by me...through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God."

**There are no Apostles today.** Having fulfilled their function, they passed off the scene. Since no one today can be an eyewitness of the resurrected Christ, and since the church foundation has been laid, there can be no apostles today (Revelation 2:2). The office ceased.

When people claim to be apostles today, it is because they are trying to usurp a pastor's authority.

2. **PROPHET** means "one who proclaims the will of God, one to whom &through whom God speaks."

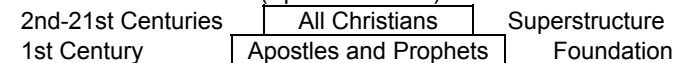
a) Sometimes it was **predictive** - Agabus predicted a famine (Acts 11:27,28), and sufferings for Paul (Acts 21:10-14).

b) Speaking the **mind of God** under immediate divine inspiration and revelation eg: instruct, warn.

**Note:** Direct inspiration distinguished prophecy from teaching. Before the completion of the scriptures, the prophets were the inspired revelators of God's teaching to the churches. They told the churches what to do, believe and teach. They spoke to edify, exhort & to comfort. 1 Cor.14:3.

Prophets: i) gave special **revelation** from God, and  
ii) their message had the **authority** of God.

c) The **Passing of Prophets and Prophecy**. Their purpose was to span the gap between the Old Testament and New Testament, and to establish the church upon a firm foundation of Biblical truth (Ephesians 2:20).



d) The church in Ephesians 2:20 is like a building with a **foundation** laid in the first century by Christ, apostles and prophets, and a **superstructure** being built after the first century. Once a superstructure is being built, you don't relay the foundation. The gifts of apostle and prophet passed away during the foundation period of the church. Montanus the heretic in 150 AD claimed that he was an apostle and prophet with new revelations, equal to or above the Bible. The early Christians responded by vowing that nothing could be added to scripture. New revelations of Joseph Smith, Christian Science, Ellen White and JW's are false prophecies. Scripture is now complete. "We have also a more sure word of prophecy." 2 Peter 1:19.

e) A secondary meaning of prophet is the **pastor/teacher** of today **proclaiming** the revealed truth of first century apostles and prophets. First century prophecy revealed new truth to mankind. Teachers have taken the place of the prophets.

### 3. WORD OF WISDOM.

"to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom." 1 Corinthians 12:8.

Distinguish firstly between the **gift** of wisdom that only some had in the first century, and the **quality** of wisdom which is available to all Christians who ask in faith. James 1:5.

a) **Definition:** an immediate grasp of the secret plans and purposes of God. It is direct intuition of the humanly unknowable mysteries of God. This wisdom became Scripture.

**b) Examples of the gift of word of wisdom:**

1. **James** used the gift of wisdom at the Jerusalem council in Acts 15:13-18 to reveal God's purpose for the Gentiles, so clearly that there was "one accord" v.25, and "it seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us." v.28.
2. **Paul** had the gift of wisdom, allowing him to know intuitively God's purposes, as stated by Peter: "Even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you." 2 Peter 3:15,16.  
"O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God." Romans 11:33-36.  
"Which things also we speak, not in the words which **man's wisdom** teacheth, but which the **Holy Ghost** teacheth." 1 Corinthians 2:13.
3. **Peter's** confession: "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God" (Matthew 16:16). Jesus replied "...flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my father which is in heaven." No man told Peter who Jesus really was, but God gave him the gift of the word of wisdom.
4. **Jesus** promised wisdom to his disciples when they would be taken to courts for Christ's testimony: "Settle it before in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: For I will give you a mouth and **wisdom**, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist." Luke 21:14,15.
5. **Stephen** speaking to the council who "were not able to resist the wisdom and Spirit by which he spake." Acts 6:10. Stephen spoke from God by a revelatory wisdom that amazed his opponents.
6. **Peter** and **John**, when called before the council to explain their preaching "through Jesus the resurrection of the dead", displayed this gift of wisdom that Christ promised, confounding the educated councillors at the spiritual depth and perception of their answers.  
"Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus." Acts 4:13.

**c) When did wisdom pass away?**

When the Bible was complete, there remained no more need for the **gift** of wisdom, although the **quality** of wisdom is available to all who ask for it in faith. (James 1:5). The Bible is now our source of wisdom. Doesn't the Bible tell us to pray for wisdom (James 1:5)?  
"If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally,...and it shall be given him." The gift of wisdom was not given to all men, but the quality of wisdom can be.

**4. WORD OF KNOWLEDGE.** 1 Corinthians 12:8.

- a) **Definition:** The ability to know and understand the mind and will of God. Knowledge is seeing as the Holy Ghost sees. It was not learned knowledge, but revealed truth.
- b) **Examples of knowledge:**
  - i) **Elisha** knew supernaturally about his servant Gehazi's greedy scheme to get money from Naaman. (2 Kings 5:20-27). (2 Kings 6:8-12).
  - ii) **Elisha** knew supernaturally of Syrian King Benhadad's war plans against Israel.
  - iii) **Peter** knew that Ananias kept back part of the price of the land. Acts 5:3,4.(Acts 27:21-24
  - iv) **Paul** knew from God that his ship would be wrecked, but that all would survive to land.

**c) It is not natural knowledge** acquired by study.

During the Reformation scholars like Erasmus, Luther and others saved the world from the grip of Roman Catholicism. If they had given in to laziness, or relied on some word of knowledge to come to them, they would have achieved very little. God tells us to: "Study to shew thyself approved unto God." 2 Timothy 2:15.

**d) Is the word of knowledge available for us today?**

"Whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away." 1 Corinthians 13:8. Knowledge will vanish away, make idle, be inoperative, rendered of no effect after it's temporary use was fulfilled by 96 AD. Hence, intuitive knowledge is not available today.

**e) When did knowledge vanish away?**

"When that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part (knowledge and prophecy) shall be done away." 1 Corinthians 13:10. The "perfect" is the completed New Testament by 96 AD.

**5. DISCERNING OF SPIRITS.**

**a) Definition:** Judgment by evidence whether spirits are evil or of God.

The danger of false prophets required this gift to recognize the truth or falsity of their utterances. Because the prophet spoke by revelation, false prophets were inevitable. Paul told his converts not to despise prophesyings, but to prove all things. (1 Thessalonians 5:20).

**b) Examples of spirit discernment:**

1. **Peter** clearly discerned Simon the sorcerer to be false, when Philip could not. (Acts 8:18-23).
2. **Paul** who had the gift of discernment saw clearly into the very soul of the false prophet Elymas who was seeking to stop the conversion of Sergius Paulus. (Acts 13:9-11).  
As the New Testament had not yet been completed, there was no written word to appeal to except the Old Testament. The New Testament's completion in 96 AD made this gift of discernment **obsolete**, as we can now check every statement with the Bible.  
Today we need discernment, but this is based upon knowing the Bible. Hebrews 5:11-14 states that, "by reason of use have their **senses exercised to discern** both good and evil."

**6. HEALING.** "To another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit." 1 Cor. 12:9. There are different kinds of healings for different kinds of sicknesses. We can be sick in our body, mind, or spirit.

**a) Errors about the gifts of healing:**

- i) **Healing is in the atonement.** "with his stripes we are healed." Isaiah 53:5.  
This predicts Christ healing people's souls of sin. If healing is in the atonement, why does any Christian ever die? We are not promised freedom from sickness or disease until after the resurrection. "For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth **in pain** together until now. And not only they, but **ourselves also**, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, **waiting for the adoption**, to wit, the redemption of **our body**." Romans 8:22,23.  
This redemption is at Christ's second coming, "Who shall change our vile body." Phil. 3:21.

ii) **All sickness is due to sin** - False.

Some sickness is due to sin, eg. 1 Corinthians 11:30-32.

Many other reasons for sickness are:

- a) Satanic in origin (eg. Job, the woman healed in Luke 13:11-26).
- b) Burden of serving God (eg. Epaphroditus in Philippians 2:25-30).
- c) From God to deepen our spiritual life (eg. Paul in 2 Corinthians 12:7-10).
- d) God's glory (John 9:1-3).

If all sickness was the result of sin, then Job's comforters would all have been right (Job 2:4,5; 4:7,8), and once the sin was confessed, he could claim relief from the illness.

iii) **God always wills to heal** - False.

If the sick person does not get healed, they claim it is due to sin in his life or lack of faith. **Trophimus** was left at Miletum sick (2 Timothy 4:20), **Timothy** needed to take a little wine for his stomach's sake (1 Timothy 5:23), Paul's thorn in the flesh (2 Corinthians 12:7-9), Jesus only healed one man at the pool of Bethesda (John 5:1-9), although many lay there sick.

c) **Gifts of healing in the first century, and God's general healing today.**

God often healed in answer to prayer. Examples include:

- **Abimelech** was healed in answer to Abraham's prayer (Genesis 20:7).
- **Miriam** was healed by God when Moses prayed for her (Numbers 12:14).
- **Hezekiah** was healed by God in answer to his prayer (Isaiah 38:4,5).

The Apostles could exercise gifts of healing at will, without faith or expectancy in the person being healed. Examples include:

- **Peter** healing the lame man at the temple gate (Acts 3:11).
- By the hands of the **apostles**...they were healed **every one** (Acts 5:12-16).
- **Philip** exercised gifts of healing at Samaria (Acts 8:5-7).
- **Paul** at Ephesus "God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul." (Acts 19:11,12).
- **Paul** healed Eutychus at Troas (Acts 20:6-12).

This class of men who had gifts of healing at will, ceased in the first century. Who can heal 100% of sicknesses today? No one.

d) **Gifts of healing were a sign.**

- i) "These **signs** shall follow them that believe,...they shall lay hands on the sick, and **they shall recover**...the Lord working with them (Apostles), and confirming the **word with signs** following." (Mark 16:17,18,20).  
These are clearly sign gifts. These signs were tokens, or marks of divine authority and power, to authenticate the Apostles and the New Testament as from God.
- ii) "**Jesus**....a man approved of God among you by miracles, and wonders, and **signs**.." (Acts 2:22 and John 20:30,31). Jesus' signs proved his claims about himself to be true.
- iii) "Was confirmed unto us by **them** (apostles) that heard him (Christ); God also bearing **them** (apostles) witness, both with **signs** and **wonders**, and with divers miracles, and **gifts of the Holy Ghost**, according to his will." (Hebrews 2:3,4.)  
Gifts of healing were God's signature on the truth of the Gospel.
- iv) Paul uses **signs** as a **proof** of his own apostolic ministry:  
"Truly the **signs** of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in **signs**, and wonders, and mighty deeds." (2 Corinthians 12:12).

Therefore, gifts of healing were a sign to authenticate the message, the New Testament as the word of God, and the messengers (apostles) in the founding days of Christianity.

e) **Gifts of healing were Temporary**

- i) When the word of God was **completed** (Greek "teleion"), and **codified**, the purpose for the gifts of healing was fulfilled and the sign gifts were no longer needed. Now the basis for belief is faith in the Bible's promises, not by sight of healing miracles, etc...In this post-apostolic age of grace, we are to "walk by faith, not by sight." (2 Corinthians 5:7).
- ii) **Note**: "the manna ceased on the morrow after they had eaten of the old corn of the land; neither had the children of Israel manna anymore..." (Joshua 5:11,12).  
The miracle of manna in the wilderness was no longer needed because Israel ate the fruit of the land from then on. So it is with us today. The miraculous sign gifts are no longer needed, because we have the written word of God to base all decisions on today. Since the purpose for gifts of healing are ended, the gifts of healing are withdrawn.

- f) We see this withdrawal of healing gifts develop progressively in Paul's life. There was a time when God wrought special miracles by Paul's hands "so that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the **diseases departed** from them, and evil spirits went out from them." (Acts 19:12).

**Question**: Why, later on, could Paul or Timothy **not** heal Timothy's stomach?(1 Timothy 5:23). Why could Paul, Epaphroditus, or any of his workers not heal Epaphroditus? (Philippians 2:25).  
Why? Because as the New Testament was progressively completed, so also were the temporary gifts of healing progressively withdrawn.

- g) Peter healed at will in Acts 3:1-9, Acts 5:12-16, Acts 9:36-42, yet modern "healers" can do nothing like the apostles.

- h) Dr. Nolen wrote the book, "Healing: A doctor in search for a miracle" after investigating worldwide claims of Charismatic healings like Kathryn Kuhlman's and others, he states:  
"I have been unable to find any such miracle worker."  
Claims of healing are cheap. Proof of healing is scarce. Don't be deceived by unsubstantiated Charismatic claims. Some claimed healings are due to hypnotism, and the power of suggestion related to the autonomic nervous system. Kuhlman had trained herself to deny, emotionally and intellectually, anything that might threaten the validity of her ministry. If you see a genuine healing today, it is an individual act of God, not due to a somebody with 'gifts of healing.'

i) **What about claimed healings today?**

- a) They may be due to **hypnotism**. Some healings can happen through hypnotherapy and the surrendered mind of the seeker.  
Let no one claim that these are the greater works than those of Christ (John 14:12). Two old ladies who were crippled in wheelchairs came out the front in a healing service to be healed. They got out of their wheelchairs after being told that they were healed. After the meeting they both fell down the steps breaking

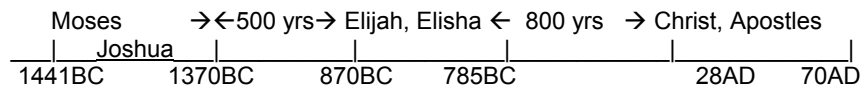
their hips. The “healer” never came near them then nor did he visit them in hospital later.

- b) **Often no real healings take place, in a miraculous sense.** How do false healers succeed and continue to operate? It is because 85% of all sick people get better by medicine or by natural means. To the other 15% they can say: “You don’t have enough faith to be healed”, or “you are tolerating some sin.” Sometimes people who are supposed to be healed stop taking medicine and die.
- c) **Some cures are Satanic.** If Satan can blind a person 18 years with a spirit of infirmity (Luke 13:10-16), surely Satan could undo this sickness if it would cause many to be deceived into accepting a false gospel and going to hell.
- d) **Some are real healings by God today** but the gifts of healing were temporary, passing away in the first century, as the Bible became completed.

7. **MIRACLES.**

“To another the working of miracles.” (1 Corinthians 12:10).  
 Miracles, healings and tongues all belong to the sign gifts of the infant first century church. The Book of Acts and Church history show that these gifts ended by 96 AD. They were the credentials of the apostles and their message. (2 Corinthians 12:12).

- a) Many Christians want miracles to **convince unbelievers to be saved**, but Abraham in Luke 16:29-31 says that they will not be persuaded even though one rose from the dead.
- b) Miracles can be “lying wonders” (2 Thessalonians 2:9), or they can be **mistakenly interpreted**, e.g. Matthew 12:24; Acts 16:16.
- c) **Definition:** The gift of miracles is the operation of God’s power in a believer’s life, giving him inherent ability to perform supernatural works. E.g.: Elisha’s axe head floating in 2 Kings 6.  
**A miracle can be described as a power, sign or wonder.**  
 Miracles called “**signs**” **authenticated the divine mission of the doer.**  
 Miracles called “**wonders**” produce **astonishment in the beholder.**  
 Miracles called “**mighty deeds**” were supernatural.  
 All 3 are mentioned in:  
 i) Acts 2:22 referring to **Christ’s** miracles, wonders and signs;  
 ii) 2 Corinthians 12:12 referring to **Paul’s** apostolic signs, wonders, and mighty deeds;  
 iii) 2 Thessalonians 2:4 referring to **Antichrist’s** power, signs and lying wonders;  
 iv) Hebrews 2:4 referring to the **Apostles’** signs, wonders, divers miracles, gifts of Holy Spirit.
- d) **Large periods of Bible history are without miracles.** For example: Abraham, David, Solomon, Daniel, and John the Baptist did not perform miracles. Miracles are found in three periods of Bible history:



Explained as:

- i) **Moses:** God authenticated Moses as God’s deliverer to convince Israel & Pharaoh. Ex4:1-5;7:3  
**Joshua:** “as I was with Moses, so will I be with thee.” Joshua 1:5.  
 Joshua’s miracles at Jericho, Jordan and elsewhere authenticated Joshua’s leadership.
- ii) **Elijah:** God authenticated Elijah’s message and God’s authority as Baal worship peaked, and as Jezebel sought to destroy the Levitical priesthood. Elijah’s miracles on Mt. Carmel of calling fire down from heaven had six authenticating purposes as seen by six “thats” in 1 Kings 18:36-37.  
**Elisha:** Did 16 miracles to maintain God’s authority in Israel.
- iii) **Christ:** God became man. This was proven by Christ’s signs, wonders and miracles. Acts 2:22; John 20:30,31.  
**Apostles:** Signs confirmed their work, word and authority.

**Key:** In each of these three periods of miracles, two things occurred:  
 1) **New revelation** came, needing to be verified;  
 2) A man or **men of God** whose credentials as bearers of that revelation, needed to be verified.  
 Miracles never broke out before the messenger and his revelation arrived, but only afterward.  
 Therefore, on this basis, we should not expect miracles before the next great epoch of human history (i.e.: Christ’s Second Coming), but only **afterwards**.

- e) **Purpose of Miracles in Scripture.** Why did God perform miracles in Bible times? 3 reasons:
  - i) To **introduce new revelation** (ie. **to verify a new message as from God**).  
 Miracles are only found at great points of spiritual history, to verify additions to scripture.
    - 1) **Moses:** Miracles introduced this era. Moses introduced the Law, Tabernacle, sacrifices, and priesthood. The Pentateuch is written to codify God’s new revelations to Israel.
    - 2) **Elijah and Elisha:** Revived the prophetic era in an age of drastic spiritual decline.  
 God gave miracles to draw Israel back to the institution of prophecy. Judaism was built on the law and prophets. (Matthew 22:40).
    - 3) **Christ and the Apostles:** The entire New Testament hangs on Christ and the apostles, whose miracles authenticated the new revelation of the New Testament.
  - ii) To **authenticate the messengers as being from God.**  
**Moses** (Exodus 4:1-8) and **Joshua** (Joshua 3:7), then **Elijah** (1 Kings 17:24) and **Elisha** (2 Kings 2:15), then **Christ** (John 10:25) and the **Apostles** (2 Cor. 12:12) were attested as authentic by the miracles that God performed by them. Miracles were God’s testimony that those bringing in the new revelations (additions to Scripture) were indeed God’s genuine official representatives, and not counterfeits, such as Joseph Smith, the founder of Mormonism, or Mohammed the founder of Islam.  
 “Believe me for the very works’ sake.” John 14:11.  
 Lack of miracles by modern cults show them to be false.

iii) To **instruct the observers**.

In each period the miracles had an impact on those who saw them:

- 1) **Moses: Pharaoh** (and the world) were taught the powerlessness of Egypt's gods, and the reality and power of Jehovah (Exodus 5:2; 9:27, 28; 10:16,17), when each miracle plague defeated an Egyptian god. **Lesson:** "Let my people go."
- 2) **Elijah: Ahab, Jezebel and Israel** were taught the powerlessness of Baal worship, and the need to turn to Jehovah (1 Kings 18:36-39), when the 450 prophets of Baal failed the fire test and were killed.
- 3) **Christ:** Taught **His disciples and Israel**, by His miracles that He was Israel's Messiah and God. (Matthew 8:26).
- 4) **Apostles:** Their miracles taught Israel and the church to honour and believe their authority (Acts 5:11-13), to accept the offer of salvation, the Kingdom, and the church.

f) **The Passing of Miracles in Scripture.**

i) **Gifts of miracles in the first century, and general miracles today.**

Those with the gift of miracles could perform any miracle any day at will ("the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets." 1 Corinthians 14:32). The gift has fulfilled its purpose and is gone. God still works miracles today in response to faith.

ii) **When the purpose of miracles was fulfilled, the gift ended.**

Until the Bible was completed, God often used miracles to authenticate a man's ministry and message as from God. Once the Bible was completed, the same need did not exist. This age is not an age of miraculous signs, but of spiritual power to convert sinners, and to build up believers. A gift of miracles implies a continued ability to do miracles again and again. No one has this gift today. The signs in Mark 16:17,18 are illustrated in Acts, the purpose being that of confirming the word (as from God) with signs following.

**Question:** Do people today raise the dead, call fire from heaven, walk on water, multiply loaves, fishes, oil, etc.? No. Never.

**Answer:** These were authenticating signs, and God has proven the reliability of the messengers and the message. Hence there is no longer any need for signs or miracles. The miraculous proofs of the gospel in Hebrews 2:3,4 are all in the **past tense**.

Today, the test of a man's authority is not his ability to work miracles. His authority comes from how faithfully he adheres to the Word of God. O.T. and N.T. miracles never lasted more than 70 years. N.T. miracles covered the lifetime of Christ and the Apostles, and then they ceased. They were done once, that they might be believed always.

iii) **The seeking of miracles is not a sign of spirituality.**

Jesus Christ says: "an evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign." Matthew 12:39. Rather than glorifying God, sign-seeking detracts from faith in the Bible alone.

Charismatics try to prove the Bible by "miraculous" external evidence. When the miracles don't come, or are proven false, does this disprove the Bible? No way, yet this is the logical conclusion to where the Charismatic signs movement leads us.

iv) **Miracles are not the ultimate proof of truth.**

Jesus emphasized this in Matthew 7:21-23, when supposed miracle workers are cast into hell. The Bible warns us in 2 Thessalonians 2:8-12 of a rise in the miraculous as a means of satanic deception in the last days. All miraculous power spoken of in the Bible does not originate with God.

**Note:** Revelation 13:13-15 "He doeth great wonders, so that he makes fire come down from heaven." Scripture alone keeps us from the serpent's bite, and the deceiver's snare.

8. **TONGUES.** "divers kinds of tongues." (1 Corinthians 12:10).

a) **What is meant by tongues?**

Tongues are human languages that are understandable and known.

i) **3 Bible words for tongues:**

- 1) *Glossa* refers to the **organ** of the body, eg. Acts 2:3 "cloven tongues of fire" and **language** knowable in common conversation.
- 2) *Dialektos* = the language or dialect of a country or district. Visitors to Jerusalem heard their own dialect (Acts 1:19; 2:8).
- 3) *Heteroglossa* = tongue of a different language (1 Corinthians 14:21). All three may be unknown to the speaker, but known to the hearer. It is an unlearned language, a gift of the Holy Spirit.

ii) **Tongues at Jerusalem at Pentecost.**

"*Glossa*" is used in Acts 2:4,11 and "*dialektos*" in Acts 2:6, 8.

In Acts 2:1-11 note that:

- languages spoken were known;
- no interpretation was needed;
- they were so well spoken that the dialect was correct.

iii) **Tongues at Caesarea** (Cornelius in Acts 10:46) and **Ephesus** (19:6).

"*Glossa*" is used in Acts 10:46 and 19:6 denoting a knowable, translatable, human language just as in Acts 2. It was no different from Pentecost. Note "the **like** gift," Acts 11:17.

iv) **Tongues at Corinth.**

"*Glossa*" is used 21 times to describe tongues at Corinth.

"*Heteroglossa*" is used only once in 1 Corinthians 14:21 to describe the actual language of Assyrian foreign invaders (Isaiah 28:11,12). None of tongues were **gibberish** (as is today in the Charismatic Movement), but were definite, translatable, human languages.

v) **Is the Baptism in Holy Spirit the same as speaking in tongues?** No!

Charismatic Kenneth Hagin wrongly says: "Speaking in tongues is always manifested when people are baptized in the Holy Ghost."

Pentecostalist Donald Gee wrongly says: "The distinctive doctrine of the Pentecostal churches is that speaking with tongues is the "initial evidence" of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit."

**Question:** What is the "Baptism in the Holy Ghost" according to the Bible?

**Answer:** a) It is an historic event **predicted** by Christ in Matthew 3:13, Mark 1:8, Luke 3:16, John 1:33 and Acts 1:4,5.

- 1) **It is an historic event** occurring on the day of Pentecost. Acts 11:15-17 and 1 Cor. 12:13.
- 2) Paul points **back to Pentecost**, the day the Holy Spirit came to indwell all believers. When somebody is saved today he is baptised in the Holy Spirit.

“For by one Spirit are we **all baptised** into one body, ... and have been **all** made to drink into one Spirit.” 1 Corinthians 12:13.

It is a definite act in the past in which every believer has participated at the moment of salvation. It does not occur **after** salvation, but **at** salvation.

vi) The Bible asks a series of questions in 1 Corinthians 12:30.

“Do **all** speak with tongues? do **all** interpret?”

**Key:** The answer to these is obviously “No.” “**All**” do not speak with tongues, yet “**all**” have been baptised in the Holy Spirit (1 Corinthians 12:13). Therefore Baptism in the Holy Spirit is not initially evidenced by the gift of tongues, nor is it involved at all.

vii) Tongues were given to a select band of first century believers.

The **Bible never urges believers to pray for the gift of tongues.**

b) **Regulation of the gift of tongues.** What rules does Paul impose?

i) **Tongues are inferior.** Tongues comes at the end of gift lists in 1 Cor 12:8-10 and 12:28-30.

ii) **No more than 2 or 3 people were permitted to speak in tongues at church.**

“If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret.” 1 Corinthians 14:27.

This limits the number who may speak in tongues in the church meeting. It insured against the danger of having an inferior gift monopolize the limited time.

iii) **They must speak one at a time, not all together.** “and that by course”.

iv) **Tongues must be interpreted.** “let one interpret.” 1 Corinthians 14:27.

“Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.” 14:13.

v) **If there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church.** v.28.

Tongues were to be planned. One had to first check to see if an interpreter was present. Then they had to limit tongues to three, and they had to decide who was going to speak first, second and third. It was not just unplanned as it happens today.

If he could keep silence, tongues could be easily controlled by the speaker.

Without an interpreter tongues were useless to the church. He was to speak to himself and to God. How could he himself be edified if he did not know what he was saying? (1 Cor. 14:2,14). God could understand him in his own language, so why speak in tongues?

vi) **Only men could speak in tongues, not women.**

“If any **man** speak in an unknown tongue.” 1 Corinthians 14:27.

“Let your **women** keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak”

(1 Corinthians 14:34). This forbids tongues by women in the assembly.

**Question:** But doesn't 1 Corinthians 11:5 contradict this verse:

“any **woman** who **prays** or **prophesies** with her head unveiled dishonoureth her head.”

**Answer:** This would be women praying with, prophesying, proclaiming or teaching to ladies or children, but not to men. (1 Timothy 2:12).

vii) **Only use tongues when unbelieving Jews were present.**

Since tongues were a warning sign of judgment to come on unbelieving Jews as 1 Cor. 14:21,22 states, then unbelieving Jews should be present for this gift to be used, so as not to create chaos (14:23) by Gentile unbelievers thinking you are

mad. Because of this, their use was limited. Only when unbelieving Jews were present were tongues to be used.

viii) **Tongues must edify others, not yourself.**

“...greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive **edifying**.” 1 Corinthians 14:5.

“Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, **what shall I profit you**, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?” 1 Corinthians 14:6.

“Seek that ye may excel to the **edifying** of the church.” 1 Corinthians 14:12.

“let all things be done unto **edifying**.” 1 Corinthians 14:26.

Edifying is the theme of 1 Corinthians 14. Whatever is done must edify others.

“He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, **edifieth himself**.” 1 Corinthians 14:4.

**Note:** The irony is clear. **Selfishness** edifies self, **selflessness** edifies others.

If tongues do not edify others, they should not be used. This verse is a criticism of the Corinthians wrong use of uninterpreted tongues, yet Charismatics use it to allow tongues in private.

ix) **Let all things be done decently and in order.** 1 Corinthians 14:40.

In their unconverted days, these Corinthians were “Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols.” 1 Corinthians 12:2.

They had been heathen idol worshippers out of control in emotional hysteria as a sign of being in touch with their gods. Now they were to wait their turn, only one speak at a time, and no more than three speak in tongues in one meeting.

x) **Forbid not to speak in tongues.** 1 Corinthians 14:39.

Tongues speakers point to this verse as their badge of freedom that no one should forbid tongues. Many non-tongues speakers are confused by this verse, so they permit tongues.

**Answer:** Place this verse in the first century context when tongues were given. When the purpose for tongues was **still valid**, one must not forbid the **right use** of tongues.

Today we can forbid to speak in tongues because:

1) Most tongues today are **gibberish**, and not real languages

2) Most tongues today are **not the right use**, and not true to these rules.

3) Since the **purpose** of tongues has been **fulfilled** of warning unbelieving Jews to repent (70AD), then we can forbid what is an unbiblical, obsolete gift.

In the time of Paul's letter being written (57AD), tongues were still needed and practised. The day of their demise had not yet come.

**Note:** Today, we should forbid tongues as an unbiblical practice.

c) **Reason for the gift of tongues.**

Very few people are willing to study the Bible to discover the purpose for tongues. Most speak in tongues today because someone asks them to.

There is only one primary Bible reason for tongues:

|                                                                   |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>TO WARN FIRST CENTURY UNBELIEVING JEWS OF JUDGMENT TO COME</b> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------|

**14:20** “...Be not children in understanding, ...but in understanding be men.”

When the Corinthians truly understood the reason for tongues, they would move from childhood to adulthood in their understanding, and from the selfishness of childhood to the selflessness of manhood.

“With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord” (1 Corinthians 14:21) is God’s warning sign to unbelieving Jews of Isaiah’s day as it is quoted from Isaiah 28:11,12.

Paul quotes this verse (1 Corinthians 14:22) as a warning of God to unbelieving Jews of the first century, “**Wherefore** tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that **believe not...**” **Note:** “**Wherefore**” links what Paul says in v.21 with the conclusion of v.22, which is the reason or purpose for tongues to warn Jews who believe not, of impending judgment.

If this is the reason for tongues, it should be verified in Acts, and it is in the following ways:

a) **Acts 2:1-13.** According to v.5 the people to whom languages were spoken at Pentecost were **unbelieving Jews** from other countries as seen from v.22,23, and by their cry of v.37. “What shall we do?” Thus, as Isaiah predicted, God spoke to “this people” through men using other languages, and the tongues were heard in their “own dialect wherein they were born.” (v.8).

b) **Acts 8:1-18. Question:** Why were there **no tongues** spoken when the Samaritans received the Holy Ghost by Peter and John laying hands on them?

**Answer:** Because there were no Jews present at Samaria. Jews hated Samaritans and would not be caught dead living at Samaria.

**Question:** Why could Philip **not impart the** Holy Spirit by laying on of hands?

**Answer:** Because he was not an apostle, and God wanted the Samaritan believers to be associated with the apostles. This shows that if Philip could not impart the Holy Spirit by laying on of hands, nor can we do it today. This refutes “slaying in the spirit.”

c) **Acts 10:44-48.**

**Question:** Why did Cornelius’ household, who were Gentiles, speak in tongues when they were not Jews.

**Answer:** Unbelieving Jews were present, who still thought that God only dealt with Jews alone and not with Gentiles. These Jews and Jews at Jerusalem needed convincing that God’s dealings were shifting from unbelieving Judaism which was under impending judgment to include Gentiles in the church.

“Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.” Acts 11:18.

Hence tongues spoken by Cornelius’ household convinced the Jews of God accepting Gentiles into the church.

d) **Acts 19:1-9.** John the Baptist’s twelve disciples at Ephesus were saved, baptised, Paul laid hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, then they spoke with tongues.

--Tongues warned the large Jewish community at Ephesus of judgment to come.

--Tongues also identified John’s disciples at Ephesus with Pentecost and the Apostles.

e) **Acts 18** and **1 Corinthians 12-14.** Tongues as a warning to Jews of coming judgment was relevant for the large Jewish community at Corinth who understood them (i.e.: as at Pentecost).

Because Gentiles were present at the Corinthian church who did not understand the languages, the tongues had to be interpreted lest they say “that ye are mad.” (v.23). Thus when no interpreter was present, there was to be no speaking in tongues. Hence the primary purpose of tongues was God warning the Jews to repent and believe or be judged.

The following chart summarizes the occurrences of tongues with Jews:

(See **Answers** book, Chapter 99, page 480)

## 9. INTERPRETATION OF TONGUES. 1 Corinthians 12:10,30; 14:5,13,26,27,28.

### a) **Definition:**

- 1) It is **not** the learned ability to translate from one language to another.
- 2) It is the **supernatural ability to translate** the meaning of the tongues speaker, who was using a language unknown to the people in the church assembly.
- 3) In 1 Corinthians 12:10 and 14:26 the Greek word is “hermeneia” meaning “to explain, or interpret” the words spoken in a tongue.
- 4) In 1 Corinthians 12:30 and 14:6,13,27,28 the Greek word has “dia” (through) at the start of the word, which adds intensity, meaning “to interpret fully, to explain thoroughly.”

### b) **The Purpose of Interpretation** is to edify the church.

Tongues of themselves do not edify, unless interpreted. The tongues gift was incomplete without interpretation, which allowed people to understand what was said.

### c) **Paul regulates tongues: If no Interpreter is present, then no tongues are to be spoken.**

At Pentecost there was no need for tongues to be interpreted, since these people heard what was spoken directly in their own language.

In Corinth the situation was different. Tongues did not occur in the open air, but in the church assembly. The gift of interpretation of tongues was very important to Gentiles in the assembly.

“If there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church.” 1 Corinthians 14:28.

The interpreter avoided the charge of madness (v.23), and fulfilled the need for edification (v.26). Interpreters were well known, and tongues could be avoided if the interpreter was absent.

### c) **When did Interpretation of tongues cease?** Interpreting ceased when tongues ceased in 70AD, when its purpose was fulfilled. Both gifts ceased together. W. Criswell records this:

*A seminary graduate who had majored in Hebrew attended a tongues-meeting in California: In the midst of the meeting he stood up and quoted by memory the first Psalm in the original language. After he had finished, the interpreter arose and solemnly, piously made known in plain English what the brother had spoken in an unknown tongue. The interpreter made it an utterance, Spirit-inspired, about women prophesying in church. When the seminarian made known what he had done and what he had said, pandemonium broke loose. (7:219).*

When people insist in using gifts which the Bible says are obsolete, much confusion can arise.

## IV. BAPTISM IN THE HOLY SPIRIT.

**12:13** What the Baptism in the Holy Spirit is, and what the Baptism in the Holy Spirit is not.

What the Baptism with the Holy Spirit is **NOT**:

- i) It is NOT a repeat experience. 1 Corinthians 12:3.  
At conversion we are baptized into the body of Christ, once and for all time.
- ii) It is NOT a subsequent experience to salvation.
- iii) It is NOT the same as the filling of the Holy Spirit.

### What the Baptism of the Holy Spirit **IS**:

- i) New Testament Baptism in the Holy Spirit is a **one-off** event.  
New Testament filling of the Holy Spirit is **continuous**. There are many fillings of the Holy Spirit, but only **one** Baptism of the Holy Spirit at salvation.
- ii) Baptism with the Holy Spirit is **never commanded** in the New Testament, but the filling with the Holy Spirit **is commanded** in Ephesians 5:18. "Be filled with the Spirit." "Filled" is in the imperative mood of command. "**Baptism of the Holy Spirit**" is **never** found in New Testament.  
We are never told to seek, tarry or pray for the Baptism with the Holy Spirit.
- iii) The Baptism is **positional**, the filling is the experimental inflow of Divine power, affecting how we live, how we witness, and all we do for Christ.
- iv) It is **NOT** for some believers only, but for **all believers**.  
I Corinthians 12:13 says that **ALL** members of the Corinthian church who were saved were baptised with the Holy Spirit, though **ALL** did **NOT** speak with tongues.
- v) It is **NOT** an answer to **agonizing prayer**.  
Many believe in "tarrying for the Holy Spirit", quoting Christ's words to His disciples in Luke 24:49, "And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but **tarry** ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high."  
This verse was for the disciples in pre-Pentecost days, as was Acts 1:4,5.  
John 7:39 explains this time period as "the Holy Ghost was not yet given." These instructions were specifically for the disciples (Acts 1:13-15) during the 10 days between the ascension of Christ, and the descending of the promised Holy Spirit.  
To one lady who had just returned from a tarrying meeting, Harry Ironside said: "You are 10,000 miles too far away, and 1900 years too late."  
Tarrying was for 10 days before Pentecost, at Jerusalem in 33 AD.

### vi) What the Baptism with the Holy Spirit **IS**.

- It is mentioned only seven times in the New Testament.  
"He shall baptise you **with** the Holy Ghost." Matthew 3:11; Mark 1:8; Luke 3:16.  
"Ye shall be baptised **with** the Holy Ghost." Acts 1:5.  
"Ye shall be baptised **with** the Holy Ghost." Acts 11:16.  
"So many of us as were baptised **into** Jesus Christ, were baptised **into** His death." Romans 6:3.  
"For as many of you as have been **baptised into** Christ have put on Christ." Galatians 3:27.  
"For by one Spirit are we **all baptised into one body**, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been **all** made to drink **into** one Spirit." 1 Corinthians 12:13.
1. It is baptism **in** the Holy Spirit.  
Baptism marks an initial experience. We are immersed in the Holy Spirit as we are immersed in water.  
"**by** (Greek: en) one Spirit...". "En" is Greek for "in".
  2. It is the **work of Jesus Christ**.  
In Spirit baptism, the element is the Holy Spirit (as water is the element in water baptism), but **the baptiser is Jesus Christ** (Matthew 3:11, "He shall baptise you **with** the Holy Spirit.")  
The Holy Spirit does **not** do the baptising. Christ is the Baptiser, who baptises us into His body with the Holy Spirit. Thus the baptism **with** the Holy Spirit, whether we are referring to Pentecost, or to the application of Pentecost to the newly regenerated soul at conversion, is the work of Christ Himself.

### 3. It is **linked to the local church**.

**Question:** What body are we baptised into in 1 Corinthians 12:13?

**Answer:** "Now **ye** are the body of Christ, and members in particular." 1 Corinthians 12:27.

Fundamental to Spirit baptism is membership in a local "body of Christ". To emphasize the baptism while at the same time downgrading membership in a local church is a contradiction in terms.

Charismatic prayer groups where Spirit baptism is sought, by-pass the authority of the local church, and the Word of God. Charismatics claim that when one receives the baptism he will speak in tongues as the initial evidence of Spirit baptism.

The **gifts** named in Mark 16:17,18 are **associated** with **belief in Christ**, not with Spirit baptism as a second experience.

Charismatic teachers all agree that you need the Spirit baptism, but they are **not agreed on how you get it**. eg. Some suggest prayer, obedience, repentance, sinlessness, yielding, tarrying, faith, etc. They talk much about the rest of this gift. Charismatic writer Robert Dalton expresses the effort required to receive this free gift of grace of Spirit baptism, "This experience ... is for all who desire it and are willing to pay the price."

**If you pay the price to get a gift, it is not a free gift!**

When a Charismatic asks us: "Have you had the baptism **OF** the Holy Spirit?" our first answer can be, "There is no such thing as the baptism **OF** the Holy Spirit. If you mean the baptism **WITH** the Holy Spirit, yes I have, and so has every other Christian." The baptism **OF** the Holy Spirit appears nowhere in Scripture, as the Holy Spirit does not do the baptizing, it is Christ doing it. Spiritual immersion, not water immersion is the subject of 1 Corinthians 12:13, Romans 6:3-5, and Galatians 3:27.

When Charismatics insist that there is a second experience to be called the baptism **OF** the Holy Spirit, they are actually **redefining the doctrine of salvation**. They are saying that **salvation doesn't really give us everything that we think it gave us, that we are still lacking, that we need something more**.

Nowhere in the Bible are Christians commanded to seek, or to receive the Holy Spirit or to be baptized "by" or "of" the Spirit.

**The Bible doesn't tell us how to get the baptism of the Holy Spirit**, but it tells us that we already have been baptized in the Spirit when we believed.

"And ye are **complete in Him**..." Colossians 2:10.

"His divine power **hath given unto us all things** that pertain unto life and **godliness**, through the **knowledge of Him** that hath called us to glory and virtue." 2 Peter 1:3.

Since we are "complete in Christ", and "we have been given all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Christ", **there is no point in seeking what is already ours**.

The Bible never teaches us to get with a group of people who can teach us how to speak in tongues. All we need to do is **yield to the Holy Spirit**, who is already there, **then we will have the Spirit's power**.

As **Saviour**, Christ baptizes with the Holy Spirit, and as **Judge**, He baptizes with fire. The baptism with fire is the judgment of hell, burning the chaff with unquenchable fire (Matthew



3:11). It is not the Holy Spirit's baptism, but Christ's baptism **with** the Holy Spirit that places us into the body of Christ when we receive Christ as Saviour. All believers have this. We must not seek, or ask for that which we already possess. At salvation we are baptized in the Holy Spirit, as well as being sealed, indwelt, filled and regenerated.

Key: A person cannot enjoy what he has if he is forever seeking a non-existent second blessing. What is lacking is people's full obedience, full trust and full submission, not Christ's full salvation, indwelling or second blessing.

#### **V. BELIEVERS WHO THOUGHT that they were SUPERIOR and OTHERS INFERIOR.**

**12:14-16:** "For the body is not one member, (eg. tongue) but many."

The Tongues Movement, by saying that all believers should speak in tongues, says that the entire body should be a tongue (or have a tongue in it), which is false. Verse 14 refutes this by saying that the body is not one member (tongue), but many members, each with their own, but different function.

The Corinthian church was **divided** where it should have been united (eg. each following different leaders, whereas they all should have one leader, Christ). They **tried to be uniform**, in all seeking to have the showy gifts like tongues, where they should have been diverse in each being content to use their own God given gifts.

Many were unhappy and discontent with their gifts, envying someone else's gifts.

The **foot** or **ear** represented believers who had developed an inferiority complex, perhaps because they had "behind-the-scenes" gifts like helps or mercy, etc. They felt inferior and useless because they were not given gifts like brothers **Hand** and **Eye** with the gift of tongues or interpretation of tongues.

Apparently, brothers **Hand** and **Eye**, being proud of their gifts, approached brothers **Foot** and **Ear** one day saying: "Unless you two can speak in tongues as we do, you are not spiritual; you will never make it in the Christian life. Quite possibly, you are not even saved."

In great distress, brother **Foot** tried hard to become a Hand, and brother **Ear** tried hard to become an **Eye**. They may have prayed, fasted, and tarried, but to their dismay, each remained a **Foot** and an **Ear**. Once a foot, always a foot. Once an ear, always an ear. Why? Because this was the gift the Holy Spirit chose to give them. It could not be changed by human effort.

**12:17** "If the whole body were an **eye**, where were the **hearing**." Common sense should have told them, that as a church, they could get the job done better by each performing different ministries. If everyone spoke in tongues who would do the teaching? The church would become grotesque if it consisted of only one gift. Gifts can only function properly when you are filled with the Holy Spirit.

**12:18,19** "But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him." And if they were all one member, where were the body?"

God allocates gifts to each believer as God sees fit.

By being discontent and wanting gifts that they did not have, the Corinthians insulted God's wisdom and goodness by saying that God had made a mistake.

By Charismatics saying that all must speak in tongues, they are contradicting God's giving of gifts as He sees fit.

For the body to perform all its functions, many different parts must all work together. So it is in a church. If most of a church is inactive, the active members must do work for which they are not equipped.

There are two main reasons why some Christians never become involved in ministry:

- i) **12:15-17.** Some (like Foot and Ear) feel that they have no gifts or abilities that are worthwhile, so they rest and let others do all the work. These have an inferiority complex, saying: "**They don't need me.**"
- ii) **12:18-21.** Others feel that they are so highly qualified that they do not really need the help of others to perform their ministry. These are the believers described in v.21, and counselled in v.22-31. Their attitude is, "**I don't need them.**"

**12:21** "The **eye** cannot say unto the **hand**, I have no need of thee: nor again the **head** to the feet, I have no need of you." (v.21).

God has made all of His creation interdependent, and so He has made members of a church interdependent. Several prominent and gifted members carried on their ministries as if they were self-sufficient. They disdained the less significant members.

**12:22** "Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be **more feeble**, are **necessary**:" Weaker, more feeble members of the body are necessary, such as heart, lungs, kidneys, etc.

These members are hidden, performing their work in secret, not being seen publicly, and are necessary to our survival. If we lose a prominent part like an arm or leg or eye, we can still live. But if we lose our heart, lung, or kidneys we will quickly die. The less noticed parts (internal organs) seem to be weaker than the rest of the body such as limbs (external organs).

The hidden, weaker, internal organs are more necessary to our survival. Therefore, internal organs are more closely protected by the skeleton. They are more vulnerable, more necessary to our survival, and are therefore given more protection. You can live without legs, but you can't live without lungs.

**Application and lesson:** The most important ministries in a church always include some that are not obvious, such as prayer warriors providing spiritual power, or behind-the-scenes helpers. The Corinthian church failed to appreciate those having behind-the-scenes gifts. They magnified the showy gifts such as prophecy, tongues, healing, etc., which is just what the Charismatic Movement does today.

**12:23** "And those members of the body, which we think to be **less honourable**, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our **uncomely parts** have more abundant comeliness."

"Less honourable" refers to private parts of the body such as thighs, waist, abdomen, buttocks, and chest. On these we bestow honour, meaning that we put attractive clothing on these parts, compared to the more presentable parts such as face and hands, which need no clothing.

"Uncomely" (Greek, "aschemon") means shameful, indecent, unpresentable or private parts needing to be covered. When people treat their uncomely parts with care and modesty, they come to have more abundant comeliness.

**Application:** A well known Christian with a prominent gift (like a face or hand), ought not to seek great honour for himself, but he should seek to help the well-being of those with less obvious gifts. Specially gifted Christians in leadership or prominence, should not look down

on those with less noticeable gifts, but should care for and protect them, and “comfort the feeble-minded (fainthearted), support the weak, be patient toward all men.” 1 Thessalonians 5:14.

**12:24** “For our **comely parts** have no need,” means that the more beautiful parts of the body need no special help.

**Application:** Those believers with more noticeable and attractive gifts are the **comely** members who have no need of encouragement and protection. Honour comes to them naturally (as the face), and that honour they should share with members whose gifts are less attractive. Spiritual greatness is determined by the spirit of servanthood, not by high position.

“God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked.” God rewards people according to our attitudes as well as to how we use our gifts.

**12:25** “That there should be **no schism** in the body; but that the members should have the **same care** one for another.”

God wants to avoid schism (or division) in the body, by everybody giving mutual support and encouragement. In ours and in God’s eyes, every believer should be regarded as highly important. God wants every church member to have the same care for each other. We should care just as much for the rough new convert and each Sunday school teacher as the Pastor.

**12:26** “And whether one member **suffer**, all the members **suffer** with it; or one member be **honoured**, all the members **rejoice** with it.”

The one who suffers is consoled, and the one who is honoured is rejoiced with. Only strong mutual love and concern can prevent or heal division and maintain unity in a church. There ought to be no envy, rivalry, competition, resentment, superiority or inferiority, only true Christian love.

**12:27** “Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.”

Paul reminded them that as a group they were the body of Christ, as well as individually they were part of Christ’s body. They were one in Christ and should be united with each other.

**12:28** “And God hath set some in the church, **first** (1) apostles, **secondarily** (2) prophets, **thirdly** (3) teachers, **after that** (4) miracles, then (5) gifts of healings, (6) helps, (7) governments, (8) diversities of tongues.”

There is a priority list of gifts, some having more significance than others. Numbering the gifts shows that the gifts are listed in order of importance. Apostles and prophets are mentioned first and second because the church is built on them. (Ephesians 2:20).

Tongues are last showing their least importance.

**12:29,30** “Are **all** apostles? are **all** prophets? are **all** teachers? are **all** workers of miracles? Have **all** the gifts of healing? do **all** speak with tongues? do **all** interpret?”

**Note:**

1) Each question strongly implies the answer “No”, not all speak with tongues, etc. Charismatics contradict this verse when they say that all should speak with tongues.

2) “**All**” is mentioned seven times, and in each case the Greek word “pantes” which is the **masculine** gender is used. This means that only men had the office of apostle, prophet and teacher. Only men, and not women worked miracles, had gifts of healing, only men spoke with tongues and only men interpreted. The feminine of “all” is “pasai” in Greek used in Matthew 27:5,7 “then all (pasai) those virgins.”

3) **Only men spoke in tongues** as seen in 1 Corinthians 14:27. “If any **man** speak in a tongue... if there be no interpreter, let **him** keep silence in the church; and let **him** speak to **himself** and to God.”

4) “Let your **women** keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak ... for it is a **shame for women to speak in the church**.” 1 Corinthians 14:34,35. Charismatic women do not obey these verses, and their menfolk encourage their disobedience.

**12:31** “But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet show I unto you a more excellent way.” Paul was commanding the **church as a whole** to appreciate those people with the best gifts, because most of them appreciated wrongly the least gifts. Paul was saying, “appreciate the apostles, prophets, teachers. Desire to have people in your assembly using these gifts.”

**Question:** On the surface some think that he is saying that if you haven’t got certain gifts, then seek them.

**Answer:** This cannot be right because it contradicts the many statements that God is the One who distributes gifts, not man. eg. 1 Corinthians 12:8,11,18,28.

Then Paul shows us the more excellent way of love.

Covet = “zeloo” in Greek which means “to be ardently devoted to.”

It is in the second person plural, and is therefore addressed to the entire church. Paul is saying: “Whenever you meet, you should always desire that the best spiritual gifts be used (ie. teaching) but not tongues, which was the least gift. Since tongues was the lowest and least desirable gift, they were never to covet tongues. In the light of these clear Bible passages, it is inconceivable that 21st Century Christians should seek to obtain a **gift that no longer exists**, and one that was **inferior** even while it was operational.

(for exposition of 1 Corinthians 13, see “Answers” Chapter 71, p.321 and Chapter 100, p.482)

## 103. 27 REASONS WHY CHRISTIANS SHOULD NEITHER SEEK NOR DESIRE TONGUES.

The Charismatic Movement contends that:

- i) The New Testament gift of tongues should be sought and spoken by ALL Christians today. They seek to revive all gifts, but none are given so great importance as tongues.
- ii) The tongues gift is the true Biblical sign of the "Baptism in the Spirit."
- iii) Those receiving tongues receive a second blessing after salvation, enabling them to live more sanctified, powerful and joyful witnessing lives.
- iv) The tongues movement is claimed to be the "latter rain" revival foretold in Joel 2:23.

We must test all religious movements on the basis of:

- a) Their doctrines. 2 Timothy 4:2,3
- b) Their fruits. Matthew 7:15,16
- c) Their spirits or powers behind a movement. "Test the spirits." 1 John 4:1-4..

Note the following reasons why tongues are not needed for Christians today:

### 1. Tongues were classed as one of the lowest gifts.

In 1 Corinthians 12:28 tongues are mentioned last in a list of 8 gifts. These are ranked in order of importance because we have "first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues."

### 2. God gives the gifts "according to his own will," not according to our seeking.

"Gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will." Hebrews 2:4.

1 Corinthians 12:8-11 lists 9 gifts, the last being tongues and interpretation of tongues:

"For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gift of healing by the same spirit,....

But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will."

**Note:** Tongues were spoken on 3 occasions in Acts (2:4; 10:46; 19:6), but on none of these occasions are the recipients seeking, waiting or expecting to speak in tongues. At Pentecost, only the Apostles (12) spoke in tongues, but all who were saved (3000) received the Holy Spirit (2:38,39).

- a) "Covet earnestly the best gifts"(12:31); tongues are not the best gifts, but one of the least gifts.14:1
  - b) Spiritual gifts could be desired (14:1) but not claimed in faith as a birthright. There is no command to seek them.
- ### 3. Most modern tongues are a learned behaviour.
- People are told to blank out their mind and say whatever comes out; then go home and practice it. This is foreign to the New Testament.
- ### 4. Tongues speakers may be deceived.

Because a person speaks unintelligible sounds, it is not proof that he has the N.T. gift of tongues. Few Charismatics are prepared to examine tongues. We must "prove all things" (1 Thess. 5:21). How do you prove that tongues are genuine languages? In 1 Corinthians 14:27-29, Paul discusses wrong tongues which are not interpreted in the church, and wrong prophecy, thus teaching that others need to judge a prophecy. Tongues have been spoken by heathen religions, Mormons, etc..

### 5. Tongues were a sign of God's wrath, displeasure and judgment on unbelieving Israel, never a sign of His blessing and approval on Christians.

"Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that **believe not**" 1 Cor.14:22

- a) Acts 10:44-47; 11:16-18. Tongues used by Cornelius' household was a sign to unbelieving Peter and unbelieving Jewish Christians, that Gentiles were to be received into the family of God. In Acts 11:15 the phrase "as on us at the beginning" means that tongues had not been spoken since Pentecost which was 10 years earlier.
- b) "Forbid not to speak in tongues" (1 Corinthians 14:39) was always on the understanding that tongues was a valid sign to warn Jewish unbelievers, until judgment came in 70AD. You don't warn people after judgment has come.
- c) In meetings where there were no unbelieving Jews, all teaching, praying etc. was to be in the language of those present (1 Corinthians 14:23-28). 1 Corinthians 14:19 states that in the church, 5 words understood are better than 10,000 words in tongues that are not understood.
- d) Israel wanted signs, but the church must live by faith. "An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign." (Matthew 12:39).
- e) The Corinthians were using tongues as a mark of spirituality, for personal gratification, and to gain attention. Paul rebukes this childish, selfish practice.

### 6. Tongues is one of several temporary gifts.

- i) Apostles. "are built upon the foundation of the apostles
- ii) Prophets, ...and prophets." Ephesians 2:20.  
Neither they nor the Lord appointed any successors to their office. "12 apostles of the Lamb." (Revelation 21:14). There are no Apostles or prophets alive today.
- iii) Knowledge. This was intuitive, revealed knowledge of doctrine before the Bible was completed. A completed, perfect Bible ended this gift along with prophecy in 96AD.1 Corinthians 13:8-13. Today we must study to gain Bible knowledge. 2 Timothy 2:15. (1 Corinthians 14:21,22.
- iv) Tongues. With the setting aside of Israel in 70 AD, tongues and other sign gifts ceased.
- v) Interpretation of tongues - ceased in 70 AD when tongues ceased.
- iv) Gifts of healing. Paul lost this gift, as he could not heal Epaphroditus in 64AD (Phil. 2:26,27), Timothy's stomach in 65AD (1 Timothy 5:23) nor Trophimus in 66AD (2 Timothy 4:20).  
In Acts 5:12-16, Peter healed every one in 33 AD.
- vii) Gift of miracles -no one can work miracles today at their will as could the first century apostles.
- viii) Discerning of spirits - no one today has this gift because discernment comes through Bible knowledge of strong meat, full age Christians who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil (Hebrews 5:14). No one today would claim infallible judgment always in every issue of life, which is what this gift demands (1 Corinthians 12:10).

### 7. Historically, tongues ceased after 63-70 AD.

Tongues were withdrawn when Israel deliberately rejected the apostles testimony of Christ, as seen in Acts 28:22-28 where Paul pronounces God's judgment on Israel (63AD). Judgment fell in 70AD. In all New Testament epistles written after this pronouncement in 63AD (Romans; Ephesians; Philippians; Colossians; 1 & 2 Timothy; Titus; Philemon; Hebrews; 1&2 Peter; John; 1,2 & 3 John; Jude and Revelation) there is no mention of tongues. Why? Because with the setting aside of Israel, and the

confirming of the word of God, sign gifts were no longer necessary. These facts of the gospel and the apostles message of the Bible having been established, confirmed, and authenticated for all time, it is now an act of unbelief to seek for signs today. Early church writers such as Polycarp, Papias, Cyprian, Chrysostom, Augustine, Origen, Clement of Rome, Justin Martyr etc. never mentioned tongues. Why? Because they had been withdrawn. Chrysostom says: "tongues....used to occur, but now no longer take place."

**8. Modern tongues and Charismatic Movement is not another Pentecost or "latter rain" of Joel 2:23.**

Joel's prophecy discusses Israel's restoration to their land in the Millennium. When this happens, and not before, the Holy Spirit will be poured out on all flesh. What happened at Pentecost was only an illustration, a small sample of what will happen in the Millennium. At Pentecost, there were no signs in the sun, moon etc, thus indicating that Joel's prophecy is to be fulfilled in the future Millennium. Joel said nothing about tongues being a sign of renewal. This age will end in apostasy and departure from the Faith, not in Joel's revival. **KEY:** "Afterward" in Joel 2:28 means that the Spirit will be poured on all flesh after Christ's second coming, and **not before**.

**9. Tongues is not a sign of the Baptism in the Holy Spirit.**

"For by one Spirit are we all baptised into one body." 1 Corinthians 12:13.

i) All believers have the Holy Spirit Baptism.

"If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his." Romans 8:9.

ii) All believers have the Holy Spirit, but few believers spoke in tongues.

If we have received Jesus Christ as Saviour, we also have the Holy Spirit in us, because we cannot separate members of the Godhead.

**10. Tongues were never intended to edify the speaker himself or the church.**

i) "He that prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort,"

Corinthians 14:3.

"For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted."

Corinthians 14:31.

The edification, exhortation, learning and comfort of the local church was always the responsibility of the one who prophesied (gave instruction in an understandable language).

ii) "He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself," (1 Corinthians 14:4) does not teach that personal holiness is found in tongues speaking. On the contrary it describes the Corinthians selfishness who used tongues for personal pleasure and public display. Tongues speaking in a church does not instruct, edify, warn or strengthen believers. Holiness through tongues will always be shallow because it is based on feelings, not on Biblical edification.

iii) Of all the tongues spoken today, new prophecies, new revelations and visions, not one iota of truth have been added to the inspired scriptures.

**11. Tongues were never intended for prayer, praise or worship of God.**

"For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries." 1 Corinthians 14:2.

God does not need to be spoken to in a foreign language. This verse teaches that the Corinthians were using the gift of tongues out of place. Tongues were meant to be spoken to men, that is to JEWS. A person praying or singing in tongues simply spoke

"mysteries" in his own spirit. He received no real benefit, the hearers were not helped, and God was not glorified. Prayer and praise must be with understanding in the common language. "What is it then? I will pray with the Spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also.....Else.....how shall.....the unlearned say Amen at thy giving of thanks?" 1 Corinthians 14:15,16.

This is not two different kinds of prayer, but two conditions of all prayer, praying in the leading of the Holy Spirit and with an understanding mind. If understanding is not present, hearers cannot say "Amen" to your prayer.

**12. Tongues is not a sign of salvation.**

Assurance of salvation comes from faith in God's Bible promises, not from any feelings of tongues.

**13. Tongues is not a condition of keeping us saved.**

Pentecostalism, as a movement, does not believe in the eternal security of the believer who trusts in Christ alone for salvation. Many Charismatics think that their future preservation depends on continuing in the Charismatic experience. Many fear of grieving the Spirit and losing the power, and hence losing salvation. Some Charismatics do believe in the security of a believer in Christ.

**14. Tongues are not a means of attaining holiness.**

The nine fruit of the Spirit in Galatians 5:22,23 have no relation to tongues. The Corinthians came behind in no gift (1 Corinthians 1:7), yet Paul called them carnal and babes (1 Corinthians 3:1). True spirituality is not determined by one's experience, gift or feelings, but by inner godly character (e.g. 1 Peter 3:4, "a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price", for ladies.) It is right to be happy, joyful and to praise the Lord, but valuable character is better seen in times of testing, persecution, misunderstanding and suffering.

**15. All spiritual gifts should exalt Christ, not the Holy Spirit.**

Many Charismatics exalt the Holy Spirit above Christ. The Holy Spirit seeks to exalt Christ (John 15:26; 16:14). Hence the mark of a Spirit filled believer is that in life and speech, he glorifies Christ. (1 Corinthians 12:3).

"Christ shall be magnified in my body." Philippians 1:20; 3:8.

All gifts are given so that we may grow to the "fullness of Christ." Ephesians 4:13.

Charismatics use the earthly, human title "Jesus", as did demons. No disciple ever addressed the Lord as "Jesus", but as Lord, Christ or Master, or Lord Jesus Christ. Let us give Christ His full honour as the Lord Jesus Christ.

**16. All gifts were given to produce church unity and harmony.**

All gifts were given that there be no schism in the body (1 Corinthians 12:25). Truth unites, error divides. The continual search for tongues, healing, prophecy, gifts etc., has split many churches, broken friendships and divided homes. The Charismatic Movement claims a new kind of unity not based on Bible doctrine, but on having the tongues experience. One can be a "spirit-filled" tongues speaker and believe almost anything. Many Christians who a few years ago opposed the heretical World Council of Churches, now cheerfully unite with Catholic Charismatic renewal, hence compromising essential Bible truths.

**17. Tongues and all spiritual gifts were to promote order and peace.**

"God is not the author of confusion but of peace." 1 Corinthians 14:33.

"Let all things be done decently and in order." 1 Corinthians 14:40.

Church services should have one person speaking or praying at a time. In today's Charismatic meetings, there is much unrestrained noise, singing, clapping, shouting, tongues and dancing.

#### 18. No Christian should surrender control of his mind and will.

Paul insisted that tongues and prophecy speakers should retain control of their mind and understanding:

"If there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church." 1 Corinthians 14:28.

"The spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets." 1 Corinthians 14:32.

Famous Charismatic leader, Oral Roberts, instructs tongues speakers as follows:

"We have to by-pass our mind and make it inactive for the moment. The mind slips into the background when we are praying in tongues and remains in a state of neutrality." [*Baptism With The Holy Spirit*, 1966, p. 42.]

New Age occult seminars similarly tell people to blank out their minds to yield control to some higher force, which in reality is to demons.

The New Testament never asks us to lay aside our sound mind, our self-control, our judgment or our reason, but to exercise these faculties in accordance with God's Word. Charismatics are told to overcome their inhibitions by by-passing their minds. People are brainwashed in cults like Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons and the Charismatic Movement by surrendering their minds and wills to the group or leader. The danger for a believer who submits his mind without resistance to outside influences to receive tongues, is:

- a) He opens himself up to psychic and demonic deception and control.
- b) He can place himself beyond the protection of the Holy Spirit, by asking for things contrary to God's will.

#### 19. The last days will be characterised by deception, signs, lying wonders and more demonic activity

Satan has always opposed believers and God's work. Satan opposes us as an angel of light (2 Cor. 11:14). The Corinthian believers were open to Satanic deception of another Jesus, another spirit, and another gospel (11:4) as Satan's ministers come as ministers of righteousness (11:15).

"There shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect." (Matthew 24:24).

In Old Testament times God permitted false prophets to work miracles in order to test His people.

Two tests of false prophets are:

- a) If he performs signs to turn you away from the Lord. (Deuteronomy 13:1-5).
- b) If he speaks in the name of the Lord, but the prophecy does not come to pass. (Deut.18:20-22).

Isaiah 8:19 describes familiar spirits that "peep and mutter", like tongues.

Israel rejected the Word of God for more sensational dealings with the spirit world.

Many see the Charismatic Movement as a Satanic deception permitted by God to test Christendom, and to pave the way for the Antichrist and the one world united Babylon religion of the last days.

"Even him (Antichrist) whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness....." 2 Thessalonians 2: 9,10.

"Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me ye that work iniquity." (Matthew 7:22,23).

#### 20. Charismatics confuse Baptism in the Spirit (a once only experience at salvation -1 Cor. 12:13) with the filling of the Spirit (a continual daily experience for service obtained by confessing sin, prayer, and yielding to Christ. (Ephesians 5:18).

#### 21. Doctrinal compromise.

Ministers who deny fundamental Bible truths such as the virgin birth, verbal inspiration, creation, etc. are often warmly welcomed and accepted if they claim a Charismatic experience. Charismatics warmly accept Roman Catholic priests and people who continue to seek salvation through the sacraments, who still pray to Mary, and still celebrate the mass. Doctrinal errors are ignored to keep Charismatic unity.

#### 22. Most Charismatics are not diligent students of Scripture.

One can remain comfortable in his false beliefs as long as he refuses to face Biblical evidence to the contrary. One Australian Charismatic pastor could not find the book of Daniel in his Bible. He had to look up the table of contents. He thought Daniel was near Exodus.

#### 23. Emphasis on Experience.

Personal experience is a great enemy of truth. When confronted with a mass of Biblical evidence, most Charismatics typically reply: "I know I am right. I have experienced tongues or healing myself. I have seen a prophet make correct predictions. I have seen people healed. The Bible teachings must have another explanation."

Tongues is mostly a learned behaviour. If you blank out your mind, anyone can say gibberish. Most healings are temporary and are achieved by hypnotherapy. What about the false predictions? These make him a false prophet. Studies show that most Charismatic healings revert back to the illness. Hypnotise a person, tell them they feel better, and they will feel better, for a time, but later they revert back to the illness.

#### 24. New Revelations.

Charismatics continually claim to receive extra-Biblical revelations from God by tongues, prophecy, visions and dreams. Cults and Catholicism also claim revelations outside the Bible.

#### 25. Damage to the local church.

Many Charismatics use a local church as a base for propaganda purposes to invite people to a home Bible study and prayer group governed by self-appointed spiritual leaders who instruct in tongues and try to heal people. A local church seems too confined, compared with many people from many churches coming together for a Charismatic rally.

#### 26. Laxity and moral danger.

Some Charismatics think that they have "arrived" spiritually. They often lack motivation to press on further. The goal has been attained. Time for relaxation has come. Such carelessness explains much worldliness, sin and a rock music party atmosphere among Charismatics. Some receive "revelations" to divorce their spouse and remarry another person. Truth and reason then take a back seat.

#### 27. Move back to Rome.

The Charismatic Movement reversed the decline of the Ecumenical Movement from 1960. It is not a threat to Rome. Both emphasise emotionalism, miracles, healing, and the lack of final Bible authority. Charismaticism is not true Protestantism because it is not solely based on the Bible.

# **COMING SOON!**

This page is still under construction.  
In the meantime, please visit our other pages.  
Thank you for your patience.

## 105. QUESTIONS TO ASK MODERN BIBLE VERSION USERS

1. a) **Which Bible version do you use?** (NIV)
  - b) I use the KJV because of how the NIV handles Matthew 17:21. (What's it say?)
  - c) Do you have your NIV handy? Look up Matthew 17:21
  - d) Look up Matthew 18:11; 23:14; Mark 7:16; 9:44,46; 11:26; 15:28; Luke 17:36; 23:17; John 5:4; Acts 8:37; 15:34; 24:7; 23:29; Romans 16:24
  - e) Is it all right to take verses out of the Bible?
  - f) We know these verses are in the Bible because Tatian in his Diatessaron quotes every one of these gospel verses in 150 AD. He had access to original autographs to copy these verses from. Even Codex Sinaiticus quotes Luke 23:17. Irenaeus (120-202AD, Vol 1, p.433) & Cyprian (200-258AD, Vol 5, p545) quote Acts 8:37.
2. **Would God use unbelievers and heretics** like Westcott and Hort to correct the Bible that has been used for 1500 years? NIV is based on W&H's mainly Vaticanus text.
3. **Has God preserved His Word to today** as Jesus promised in Matthew 5:18. "one jot or tittle shall in no wise pass from the law until all be fulfilled."
4. The United Bible Society (3rd edition) NT Greek text has omitted **2544** Greek words, (**2886** if you count Mark 16:9-20 and John 7:53-8:11), from the Received text (KJV).
5. Why were Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus (on which NIV is based) **not copied and distributed** if they are supposed to be the "oldest and best manuscripts?" **Answer:** Because Christians recognized their many corrupt readings, it became impossible to "sell" them. Nobody bought them. They were not copied or distributed.
6. Why are Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus in such **good condition** after 1500 years? **Answer:** Because nobody used them having so many corrupt readings. If they were recognized as the true text, somebody would have paid good money for them, used them regularly and worn them out. You can always sell a good manuscript, but you can't sell a bad manuscript, except to a fool or someone who doesn't know what the true text is such as Westcott & Hort, Griesbach, Tregelles, Tischendorf, and modern scholars.
7. **How do you explain the Majority Text's 95% domination of the manuscripts?** **Answer:** They had to be good copies of the originals, as recognised by Christians since 96 AD. This dominance worried Westcott and Hort, so they guessed that around 250 AD Lucian made a revision of the NT text from a Vaticanus type text to a Byzantine type KJV text. If this really happened, why is there no record of it in history, and why was there no protest against it which would surely have happened? **Answer:** Because it is a figment of W&H's imagination. They made up this lie to support their theory. It has no historical basis or support.
8. If Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus are the true text and so accurate, **why do they disagree between themselves 3036 times in the gospels alone?**
9. Would you trust men like **Westcott & Hort** to correct the Bible if you knew that they did not believe in ① Bible infallibility, ② New Testament miracles, ③ Creation, ④ Literal devil, ⑤ Heaven, ⑥ Second coming, ⑦ Christ's substitutionary death, ⑧ inviting people to receive Christ as Saviour, ⑨ Traditional theology?  
**Would you trust Westcott & Hort to correct the Bible if you knew that they:**
  - 1) decided between variant readings on the basis of their "inner consciousness?";

- 2) believed in Mary worship; 3) in sacrament devotion; 4) in baptismal regeneration; 5) purgatory; 6) private prayers for the dead; 7) Communism; 8) in contacting demons & working in "the Ghostly Guild?" See their biographies by their sons(Hort 2:248).
10. **Would the devil be interested in corrupting the New Testament text?** Yes certainly, because this was Satan's first temptation "Yea, hath God said?" (Gen.3:1), in getting Eve to doubt God's Word. Yet W&H and modern version editors never consider this possibility. They treat the NT just like any ancient document.
11. **Would you expect to find the true NT text in Alexandria in Egypt** where God continually warns believers to have nothing to do with? No! Yet this is where Vaticanus and Sinaiticus are supposed to have come from?
12. Why did Westcott and Hort and modern version editors **reject and ignore the 95% of Byzantine/KJV text manuscripts** in favour of 5% of the manuscripts which show great disagreement with each other and many corrupt and variant readings?
13. The **cornerstone** of Hort's theory was that readings characteristic of the Received text are **never** found in quotations of Christian writers before 350 AD. He said "before that date we find Alexandrian and Western readings, but never Syrian". Hort's statement is proven wrong by:
  - a) **Tatian's Diatessaron** (150 AD) ALWAYS gives the KJV reading for any Gospel verse that the NIV CHANGES.
  - b) The **Syriac Peshitta** version (170 AD) agrees with the KJV text and disproves W&H's theory of Alexandrian manuscripts being close to the original.
  - c) The **Gothic** version (341 AD) was produced by Ulfilas "little wolf", a missionary bishop to the Goths, and was circulating before Vaticanus or Sinaiticus were written in 350 AD. According to Kenyon, Aland(p.210) and all evidences, it was translated from the early Byzantine/KJV text manuscripts.
  - d) Modern version advocates only list 13 out of 96 papyri, 9 out of 299 uncials, and 22 out of 2812 minuscules supporting the Alexandrian text. This means that 86% of papyri, 96% of Uncials and 99% of minuscules show a Byzantine text.
14. If Egypt is the right place to find the correct NT text, then **why do the main Egyptian papyri show the greatest degree of corruption** of any manuscripts? For example, why do papyri p66, p45 and p75 have the following mistakes?  
Colwell, E C "Scribal Habits in Early Papyri", Bible in Modern Scholarship, ed. J P Hyatt. New York: Abingdon Press, 1965. P.370-389.
 

|                   | p66 | p45 | p75 |
|-------------------|-----|-----|-----|
| Careless readings | 216 | 20  | 57  |
| Singular readings | 482 | 275 | 257 |
| Nonsense readings | 200 | 28  | 64  |
| Leaps forward     | 54  | 16  | 27  |
| Leaps backward    | 22  | 2   | 10  |

 The Holy Spirit refused to send a single original autograph to Egypt, so what would Egypt know about the original correct readings? Very little.
15. Why did God cut off the power of speech from modern version editors such as Kenneth Taylor (Living Bible 1972), Philip Schaff (ASV 1892), Tregelles (New Greek Text 1857-72), Westcott (New Greek Text & RV 1870), J.B.Philips (1961), & Dr. Wilkins (New ASV)? Isaiah 8:19,20; Luke 11:14.
16. **If anyone says "Byzantine (KJV) readings are inferior to Alexandrian", say "Prove it !"**

## 106. SEPARATION FROM NEW EVANGELICAL ERRORS

**Aim:** To show that the Bible commands believers to separate from errors such as are in the New Evangelical movement in order to preserve the holiness and effectiveness of local churches.

**We must warn believers to reject and separate from these errors.**

**Bible Reading:**

a) "Now I beseech you, brethren, **mark** them which **cause divisions and offences contrary** to the **doctrine** which you have learned; and **AVOID them.**"

Romans 16:17.

What are we commanded to do about disobedient brethren? AVOID THEM! That is separation.

b) "Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye **WITHDRAW yourselves** from every brother that **walketh disorderly**, and not after the **tradition** which he received from us."

II Thessalonians 3:6

c) "**Proving** what is **acceptable unto the Lord**. And **have no fellowship** with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather **REPROVE** them."

Ephesians 5:10,11.

d) "I (Paul) **withstood** him (Peter) to the face because **he was to be blamed.**"

Galatians 2:11-13.

e) "If any man teach otherwise, and **consent not to wholesome words**, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the **doctrine which is according to godliness**; he is proud,...**FROM SUCH WITHDRAW THYSELF.**"

I Timothy 6:3-5.

**Introduction:** 'Speaking the truth in love' (Ephesians 4:15) is how we should approach people who hold wrong doctrinal positions. Many of us who hold true doctrines previously believed some false doctrines. We wanted people to tell us the truth in a kind way. We are all on a learning curve and we must be patient and loving to those who believe error. "The servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth." 2 Timothy 2:24,25.

This chapter teaches that:

a) **Pastors** should not affiliate their churches with other churches or groups that believe false doctrines.

b) **Individual believers** should not join or support churches that teach false doctrines. If you do, you will help them spread their errors and God will hold you accountable.

c) **God's work will grow faster** if we separate from churches teaching error and support a church that teaches true doctrines. If we join up with churches teaching error, numbers initially may appear larger, but multiplication of quality disciples will not take place and future growth will be of poorer quality.

d) We should **reprove (point out the errors of) those who believe false doctrines** so they may escape Satan's snare, bear fruit for Christ, and stop spreading error. Ephesians 5:11.

The New Evangelical disobeys God's command to separate from apostasy.

**God** says, 'Come out.' **New Evangelism** says, 'No, we will remain in a group with false doctrines, we will infiltrate it, we will associate with it, we will dialogue with it.'

**If this be correct, then we have no defence against error.**

**Illustration 1:** At the end of WWII my father, along with many fellow soldiers were told at the New Guinea airport to board one of two aeroplanes to fly them back to Australia. While

in the air, my father noticed that the other plane had changed course by a very small angle and was becoming further away until it passed out of sight. After several hours of flying, the plane on which my father was travelling safely landed at the Australian airport. The other plane which had drifted slightly off course was never seen again. It crashed in the sea, killing all those men on board.

What started as a small change in direction, later on resulted in the plane being hundreds of miles off course, running out of fuel and many men's death.

So it is with the New Evangelical movement which started in 1948 by Harold Ockenga who wanted to work with those having false doctrines. Today it has culminated in many false doctrines invading mainstream churches, so that many once-strong soul-winning fundamental churches have been polluted by error and worldliness, leading to splits and the death of a strong Bible-based testimony.

**Illustration 2:** Everybody has a fence around their home or farm, because it defines the borders of their property. If all boundary fences were torn down, things would go on fairly well for the generation who knew where the fences used to be. However, future generations, who never knew where the fence used to be, would have trouble and constant fights over what was the right boundary.

'Remove not the ancient landmark.' Proverbs 22:28.

New Evangelicalism's founding fathers (Harold Ockenga and Billy Graham) tore down the fences and **today's generation can't even remember where they were.**

We need to rebuild the fences, so that our churches know right from wrong, and are protected from the creeping influence of false doctrines. We pastors and workers must impress on our people the principles of separation from error.

**Question 1:** Is separation from error really that important?

What if we don't preach or train our people to separate from error?

**Answer:** Then II John 8 will result: "Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought; but that we receive a full reward."

If we fail to practise Biblical separation from error:

- 1) We will lose our **life's work**, that is strong Bible preaching fundamental churches; and
- 2) We will lose our **heavenly rewards.**

**Question 2:** Do we have to rebuke believers who hold error?

Can't we just keep quiet and love them?

**Answer:** When the apostle Peter defected in doctrine and practice by refusing to eat with Gentile believers fearing those of the circumcision, Paul said:

'I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.' (Galatians 2:11-13). The sad result of Peter's **weakness** and **compromise with error** was that other Jews, as well as Barnabas **followed his example**. If Paul had not had the courage to publicly rebuke Peter, then Peter's error may have split the church for the next 2000 years. If we **condone error by our silence, we aid its spreading**. We must reprove believers who hold to error: "And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather **reprove** them." (Ephesians 5:11).

It is wrong to treat apostate churches as if they are the same as fundamental churches. Some things, such as disagreements in politics, marriage and business, may be solved by compromise. On the other hand, there are some truths and convictions which cannot be compromised. **Martin Luther** refused to renounce his writings and said to his opponents: 'Here I stand, I can do no other.'

**Athanasius**, who successfully argued the complete deity of Christ against the Aryans who denied it, was warned by a colleague: 'The whole world is against you.' Athanasius replied, 'Then I am against the whole world.'



He would not compromise on so crucial a matter.

Two areas in which we are to separate are:

- 1) Personal separation from the works of the flesh and yield to the filling of the Holy Spirit;
- 2) Separation as a **church** from disobedient brethren (I Corinthians 5:5-13), apostate churches and denominations holding or endorsing false doctrines (II John 7-11).

**Separation** is the doctrine which stands at the cross-roads between Fundamentalism and New Evangelicalism. Why?

'Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?' (I Corinthians 5:6).

## **I. WOLVES IN SHEEPS' CLOTHING: THE FUNDAMENTALIST-MODERNIST CONTROVERSY**

**Jesus** warned us to: 'Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.' (Matthew 7:15).

**Paul** warned 'that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.' (Acts 20:29).

Wolves looking like sheep will creep in (Jude 4) with subtlety and stealth, to infiltrate churches, and hence would greatly impede the progress of the gospel. This is one of Satan's chief devices.

**Poison from Europe** (1600-1900). Unbelieving scholars in England and Europe, such as Voltaire, Rousseau, Kant, Darwin and the Jesuits, taught philosophies which undermined Biblical Christianity and led to the great apostasy which overwhelmed many churches.

For example, Evolution arose to try to explain away God's existence as Creator.

German philosophers, such as Hegel, tried to remove religious thought from being absolute to being tentative. Out of this came the movement known as modernism, now referred to as theological liberalism, the key beliefs being:

- 1) A rejection of Biblical inspiration and **inerrancy**.
- 2) A **tolerance of all views** within the religious community.
- 3) An emphasis on the superiority of **human experience** over the revealed word of God (Schleiermacher).
- 4) A denial of the absolute **Deity of Christ**.
- 5) Emphasising the dignity and **goodness of man**.
- 6) Rejecting the **sinfulness of man** and rejecting the necessity of the new birth.
- 7) Origin of all things by **evolution** rather than by creation.
- 8) Rejection of supernatural intervention of God in history, eg: **miracles, resurrection, providence,...**
- 9) Emphasis on the **social gospel**, that the main mission of the church is to correct social ills. They say that sin is socially caused by a bad environment and salvation involves correcting social problems. Established denominations and theological colleges took in these liberal views, claiming that because times have changed since Christ and that for Christianity to be successful, the gospel must change also. They claimed that the Gospel message must be changed to suit modern man. Because liberals gained control of decision making in denominations, they were able to quickly spread their doctrines, so that I Timothy 4:1 was fulfilled: "Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall **depart from the faith**, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils."

### **1. LIBERALISM CHALLENGED**

God raised many warriors to defend the historic Christian faith, such as Schofield, and W.B.Riley who published 'the Fundamentals' in 1910, in which great Christian scholars

wrote articles on the inspiration of Scripture, resurrection of Christ, virgin birth of Christ, His blood atonement, etc.

People believing these truths became known as Fundamentalists.

In 1919, some fundamentalist leaders formed the World Christian Fundamentalist Association, with **W.B.Riley** as its first president.

Tremendous controversies took place as fundamentalists struggled to expose and oppose Bible-denying modernists who were sapping the life from churches.

**J.Gresham Machen** led the protest in the US Presbyterian Church against rising liberalism. The result was that Bible believing professors left Princeton Seminary to form another seminary. Many Baptist churches left the liberal Northern Baptist Convention to join the General Association of Regular Baptists (GARB).

**J.Frank Norris** challenged the apostasy in the Southern Baptist Convention, as did other men in Congregational and Methodist churches. Those men were ridiculed in the media, but they were true to Christ and His Word. They could say: 'I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.' (II Timothy 4:7).

The Christian life is truly a fight. These men were fighting Fundamentalists.

### **2. DEVELOPING THE ART OF FENCE SITTING**

The 1920s and 1930s saw many great battles between fundamentalism and modernism.

The future of churches, colleges, seminaries and mission boards was at stake. Many Bible believers had poured their lives into churches and didn't want them to fall into the hands of the enemies of truth.

As the battle went on, some became weary of it, and did not want to be 'fighting fundamentalists.'

They thought it was time for a new approach, and out of this came 'New Evangelicalism.'

### **SIX FACTORS THAT CAUSED A RISE IN NEW EVANGELICALISM**

#### **1. A reaction against perceived negativism of some fundamentalists.**

Early New Evangelical leaders greatly emphasised the claim that Fundamentalists were too much 'against' and not enough 'for.' Their plea was "let's be positive and not negative." This is not Biblical. Scripture is both positive and negative. It is **for** some things and **against** others. We must strive for that same balance.

#### **2. A desire to be accepted by the scholarly world.**

Many young Fundamentalist scholars were viewed as deficient intellectually because they believed the Bible, so they adjusted their views to please the intellectual unbelieving leaders of the day.

Paul had people facing the same temptation.

"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ." (Colossians 2:8).

The desire to be intellectually respectable in the eyes of a Godless world, has ruined many a promising scholar. Why do believers think they need the support of unbelievers to do God's work?

#### **3. The influence of training in liberal unbelieving colleges.** A man generally reflects the philosophy of the schools he trained in. Many young Fundamentalist scholars studied in liberal colleges under unbelieving lecturers. They considered it a broadening experience and as a result many made shipwreck of their faith.

What some people feel is their mind broadening is only their conscience stretching.

'Cease my son, to hear the instruction that causeth to err from the words of knowledge.' (Proverbs 19:27).

4. **The spirit of the age** where dogmatism was becoming a hated concept. There was a call for openness to tolerate and accept many false viewpoints.
5. **Criticism that Fundamentalists lacked a concern for social action**. This resulted in New Evangelicals following a social gospel. The New Testament church did not organise social programs to alleviate suffering in the **unsaved** world. This is the task of government.  
The New Testament church did, however, meet the social needs of **believers**. (Acts 4:32-37).  
James 2:15 exhorts us to show our faith by helping fellow believers who are destitute of daily food.
6. **A growing ecumenical spirit which viewed Fundamentalists as too separatist**.  
The ecumenical movement of 'let's get together' gained momentum in the 1950s and 60s. Evangelicals were influenced to welcome those holding to error. They forgot II John 10,11:  
"If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds."  
They rejected the term 'fundamental' in favour of the term 'evangelical'.  
The founding of Fuller Theological Seminary in California in 1947 as the first and leading New Evangelical college was a major milestone of the evangelical left wing. 1957 saw Billy Graham conduct his first ecumenical crusade in New York City.

### 3. LOOKING AT NEW EVANGELICALISM THROUGH SCRIPTURE

Accommodation is not taught in the New Testament. We are not to trim God's message or method to win a hearing for the message. We must not seek to conform God's Word to man's desires. We must not be 'conformed to this world.' (Romans 12:2).

Some think that an ecumenical spirit is brotherly and kind, and that love is more important than doctrine, appealing to John 17:11 where Jesus prayed that 'they may be one.' They criticise fundamentalists who oppose the ecumenical movement with the charge of 'sowing discord among the brethren' or continuing the 'sin of division.'

**Answer:** Jesus' prayer for all believers to be one has already been answered. Since we are all baptised by the Holy Spirit into the body of Christ (Galatians 3:27; I Corinthians 12:13), 'we are all one in Christ Jesus' (Galatians 3:28) having spiritual unity in the bride of Christ. It is not talking about organisational unity.

#### New Evangelicals' Unwillingness To Separate From Churches Holding False Doctrine.

Fundamentalists believe in complete separation from all churches or fellowships which tolerate false doctrine, unbelief or compromise with error. New Evangelicals on the other hand believe 'let us compromise doctrinal matters for the sake of evangelism.'

**Question:** Why do some people not obey the Biblical command in II Corinthians 6:14-18 to break fellowship with those who promote unbiblical positions?

**Answer:**

1. Taking a stand against unbelief can be costly.  
If pastors left a denomination with false doctrines, they would lose many **friends** and their **retirement** money. For some this is too great a price to pay.
2. One's **prestige** and **influence** in denominational leadership would be lost if he separated to become an independent pastor. Are influence, respect and position more important than obeying God?

Wasn't **Noah** a preacher of righteousness who was only supported by seven people? Didn't **Jeremiah** get abused and imprisoned for rebuking the sinners of his day? Didn't **Paul** get beaten, hated and jailed for preaching against the Jews' view of Jesus? Didn't **John the Baptist** get imprisoned and beheaded for rebuking Herod's sins? Didn't **Jesus** rebuke the Pharisees, Sadducees and scribes, not fearing the consequences or seeking their acceptance?

Many New Evangelicals today honour Spurgeon, but few of them would have stood with him when he rebuked the Baptist Union for its apostasy and was excommunicated as a result.

3. New Evangelicals have a different concept of the purpose of the church from the Fundamentalists. Fundamentalists view the church as '**Donatist**,' which regards **holiness and doctrine** as more important than unity in local churches.  
New Evangelicals view the church as '**Augustinian**,' which regards **unity** as more important than holiness and doctrine. If a church has **holiness** and sound **doctrine**, it will have **true unity**, which leads to quality outreach.  
If a church has **external unity**, but **internal doctrinal divisions**, then the 'leaven will soon leaven the whole lump' (Galatians 5:9) and will hinder quality outreach.
4. New Evangelicals see the church's mission to **penetrate** the world with Christian values. Fundamentalists see the role of the church to **win the world to Christ** and to **disciple them** (Matthew 28:18-20). Satan will remain the political and religious head of this world's system until Christ returns to defeat him. (II Corinthians 4:3-5).  
'For we **preach not ourselves**, but **Christ Jesus** the Lord . . .' (II Corinthians 4:5).  
We don't preach ourselves as the agent of social change, but we preach Jesus Christ as the Saviour of the world. The early church never tried to reform social culture.  
The Holy Spirit today is moving among the nations 'to take out of them a people for his name' (Acts 15:14), not to Christianise the nations.

New Evangelicals try to be good guys by **avoiding controversial subjects**. This dulls the cutting edge of Christianity. We must guard against civility and courtesy breeding timid preachers. The contemporary worldly attitude is against all absolutes, dogmatism and exclusiveness. This thinking has crept into the churches, so that now many churches defend homosexuality, evolution, abortion, feminism. How did these churches degenerate so far? By twisting the Word of God to the latest intellectual fashions of the world.  
New Evangelicals have a burning desire to be accepted and recognised by the world, when the world despises the Word of God and has no intention of becoming Christian. This is pitiful and treasonous.

**Question:** What happens when people compromise sound doctrine?

**Answer:** Churches and Bible Colleges deteriorate spiritually.

Preachers seeking to be civil, de-emphasise the Bible's more offensive subjects such as accusations of heresy, sin, immorality, paganism, God's judgment, hell and intolerance of error. Did Jesus, Paul, and Peter seek to adjust their message to their worldly, unsaved hearers? No! Paul did not use flattering words (I Thessalonians 2:5).

#### 4. NEW EVANGELICALS SEEK TO CAPTURE THEOLOGICAL COLLEGES

Generally a preacher is the product of the theological college he attended.  
New Evangelicals, in order to spread their errors, had to capture theological colleges and seminaries, and thus mould the coming generation of leaders. Institutions that became New Evangelical were Wheaton College, Fuller Theological Seminary, Westminster Seminary, Talbot Seminary, etc. Each of these undermined the authority of Scripture, & denied the inerrancy and preservation of the Word of God.

**The demise of Fuller Theological Seminary** is a warning to all those who seek to change direction. How did this happen?

- 1) Fuller Seminary started with the goal of changing the direction and image of fundamentalism to seek to rescue the apostate denominations.
- 2) Its few Fundamentalist lecturers protested its change of direction.
- 3) Fundamentalists more and more began to reject the Seminary.
- 4) Faculty members conflicted over Biblical inspiration and inerrancy.
- 5) This led to the conservative faculty members resigning.
- 6) The Seminary then changed its doctrinal statement to accommodate those who denied Biblical inerrancy.

**Lesson:** Initial compromise grows with time. Vigilance, struggle, rebuking error and a certain militancy are required if we are to defend the 'faith once delivered to the saints.' Sadly, Bernard Ramm who as a young Fundamentalist wrote the helpful book '*Protestant Biblical Interpretation*', later on, in order to be academically acceptable, drifted to the point where he defended the theology of Karl Barth who denied the inerrancy of Scripture and other key doctrines.

**To propagate thoughts required the printed page.** New Evangelicals were quick to publish books which were filled with footnotes and quotes of liberal and Bible-denying writers, but were noticeably lacking in references to the writings of solid Biblical Fundamentalists. Why? They were trying to be modern and academically acceptable. They loved the praise of men more than the praise of God (John 12:43).

**5. NEW EVANGELICALS INFILTRATE PARA-CHURCH ORGANISATIONS** such as Bill Bright's Campus Crusade, Inter-Varsity Fellowship, Navigators, New Tribes Mission & World Vision.

- a) Campus Crusaders are taught not to use 'Christian jargon' such as repent, converted, blood of Christ, hell, sin, saved, apostate and baptism. They are not under the authority of any local church.
- b) Navigators rarely mention baptism, premillennial eschatology, or pastoral authority. Nor do they rebuke the errors of Calvinism, modern versions or infant sprinkling, in case they offend some of their members who believe such lies.
- c) New Tribes Mission's aim is to entice promising Christians away from being under the authority of their local church, to being under the authority of the New Tribes Mission denomination. They then tell the prospective missionary to ask local churches for money to pay their way to work overseas as a New Tribes missionary. When overseas, he is told that he must not ask a sinner to pray to ask Jesus Christ to be his Saviour (*Firm Foundations*, page 14). He must not present the Gospel until the natives have gone through a 2-5 year Old and New Testament Bible course called '*Firm Foundations*.' (*Brown Gold*, September 1995). Most natives don't stick out the 2-5 year course and hence never get a clear Gospel presentation.  
The Apostles Peter and Paul never taught a 2-year Old Testament course to unbelievers, because 'they receive not the things of the Spirit of God' (and would have no spiritual discernment before conversion), but he preached the Gospel immediately to them, and then challenged them to call on Christ to save them.

**Question:** How should we evaluate New Evangelicalism in the light of Scripture?

**Answer:**

- 1) Accommodating God's Word to win a hearing is not taught in Scripture. We are not to trim God's message or methods, nor are we to seek to conform God's Word to suit man's desires. 'Be not conformed to this world.' (Romans 12:2).
- 2) While an ecumenical unity may seem brotherly and kind, it is contrary to God's Word.

- a) Ecumenists claim that love is more important than doctrine, appealing to John 17:11 where Jesus prayed that 'they may be one.' They criticise Christians who oppose the ecumenical movement, accusing them of not obeying this command, and of promoting the 'sin of division.' This prayer ("to be one") has already been answered by believers being one in the body of Christ. 'Ye are all one in Christ Jesus' (Galatians 3:28; I Corinthians 12:13). Jesus is not talking about **organisational unity** under the authority of the Pope or the World Council of Churches, but about **spiritual unity** under the authority of Jesus Christ. Paul warns against seeking organisational unity at the expense of doctrinal compromise in Romans 16:17: 'Mark them which **cause divisions** and **offences contrary** to the **doctrine** which ye have learned and **AVOID THEM.**'
- b) Ecumenists accuse Fundamentalists of 'sowing discord among the brethren' (Proverbs 6:19), yet ecumenists are the ones guilty of sowing discord among the brethren by joining up with 'false witnesses that speak lies' (Proverbs 6:19) in the form of Catholics, Charismatics, infant sprinklers, Bible deniers, ordainers of homosexual priests, etc, all of whom speak the lies of unbiblical doctrines. Fundamentalists haven't moved; it's the liberals who have moved.
- 3) Bible believing Christians reject the Charismatic influence in New Evangelicalism. New Evangelical founders were not charismatic, but they insisted that we should accept Charismatic doctrines as a viable option, rather than denounce them as error. This gave the Charismatic error a new-found respectability. Charismatics are dead wrong in their views of the Holy Spirit slaying people onto the floor, giving new revelations that don't come true, speaking in gibberish that is claimed as tongues, and healing people who remain ill.

We vehemently reject Charismatic theology and practice as contrary to Scripture and as one of the greatest deceptions to hit the churches in 2000 years.

Some Christians think that to rebuke Charismatic error is unloving, divisive and confrontational. We are doing just what Paul commands in Titus 1:13, 'Wherefore **rebuke** them **sharply**, that they may be sound in the faith.'

It is not loving God or man to allow error to be freely propagated.

'Ye that love the Lord, **hate evil.**' (Psalm 97:10).

'Speak thou the things which become **sound doctrine.**' (Titus 2:1).

'I hate every **false way.**' (Psalm 119:104).

'I hate and abhor **lying**, but thy law do I love.' (Psalm 119:163).

'The fear of the Lord is to hate **evil.**' (Proverbs 8:13).

We are against lying, evil and false doctrines. Aren't you?

New Evangelicalism has done great harm. It has weakened the Biblical foundations of many churches, by teaching them to accept and tolerate error and to work with those who hold false doctrines.

Billy Graham has been the chief promoter of this erroneous approach.

## **6. THE HISTORY OF and HERESIES ENDORSED BY BILLY GRAHAM**

The New Evangelical movement grew due to the practice of 'ecumenical evangelism' where churches of widely differing doctrines **joined together to evangelise the lost.**

Bible believing Christians have always been concerned about evangelising the world.

Salvation by faith in Christ alone started the Reformation against Roman Catholicism's false gospel of salvation by sacraments.

Tragically, it was their interest in evangelism that caused many evangelicals to adopt a new method of evangelism (known as ecumenical crusades) which was contrary to God's Word. Billy Graham's ecumenical evangelistic crusades seemed so successful.

Who would ever be so unspiritual as to challenge an evangelist or his evangelism?

Billy Graham popularised the principles of New Evangelism.

In his early days, Billy Graham was a student at Bob Jones University and a great admirer of its founder. For a while, Graham preached in crusades sponsored by fundamental churches, and appeared to be a Fundamentalist.

But something happened to change Graham from being a Fundamentalist to become the leader of New Evangelicalism.

Some of Graham's actions began to alarm fundamentalist leaders. These included:

- 1) He publicly endorsed the **Revised Standard Version** of the Bible in his Pittsburgh Crusade before it had been released for examination. The RSV had been produced by unbelieving scholars under the control of the apostate National Council of Churches.
- 2) In Graham's **Japanese Crusade**, he appeared on the same platform as unbelieving liberals of the 'Kyodan' (like the apostate National Council of Churches). This caused great confusion because many missionaries had publicly opposed the apostate Kyodan, yet Graham endorsed it.
- 3) In his **British Crusades**, converts were advised to return to the Church of England with its so many Romish practices such as infant sprinkling, etc.
- 4) In his **Scottish Crusade**, he rejected the title 'Fundamentalist', believing it to show narrowness and bigotry.
- 5) In a letter to Tom Malone, defending his policy of co-operating with liberal unbelievers, he claimed that the doctrinal differences were not that serious. 'They differ from us on the inspiration of the Bible and on theories of the atonement.' (*Sword of Lord*, 17 May 1957, p 11). These surely are very key issues!
- 6) John R Rice wrote to Graham asking him, as a member of the Co-operating Board of '*Sword of the Lord*' magazine, if he could in good conscience continue to sign its doctrinal statement. It read: 'An Independent Christian Weekly, standing for the Verbal Inspiration of the Bible, the Deity of Christ, His Blood Atonement, Salvation by faith, New Testament soul-winning, and the Pre-Millennial Return of Christ. Opposes Modernism, Worldliness, and Formalism.'  
Graham in replying, stated that he did not believe he could any longer agree to this doctrinal statement and submitted his resignation from the Board.
- 7) In 1951 some Fundamentalist pastors in New York City invited Graham to preach at their Crusade. He replied that he would not come **unless every Protestant church in the area was invited** and had representatives on the various campaign committees. The Fundamentalist pastors insisted that each church sign a fundamentalist doctrinal statement, to which Graham approved. However, some of the Executive Committee rejected this doctrinal statement and hence resigned. Graham then wrote a letter to the Committee insisting that 'the Committee unanimously endorse the program of an ecumenical spirit to be exhibited throughout the campaign' and should 'present an ecumenical spirit of love toward those of all stripes.'  
(Source: *Billy Graham's letter to Executive Committee, New York Crusade*, 1951). Graham shortly thereafter rejected their invitation.
- 8) In 1957, Graham accepted a crusade invitation to **New York City** by the Protestant Council of Churches. Blatant left-wing unbelieving liberals were present, such as Henry Van Dusen, President of Union Theological Seminary in New York, whom Graham **praised as a great religious leader**.  
(Source: *US News and World Report*, 27 Sept. 1957, p.25).
- 9) In 1961, Graham said the following about infant sprinkling: 'I still have some personal problems in this matter of infant baptism, but, **all of my children**, with the exception of the youngest, **were baptized as infants**...I do believe

that something happens at the baptism of an infant. We cannot fully understand the mysteries of God, but I believe a miracle can happen in these children so that they are **regenerated**, that is, **made Christian, through infant baptism**.' (W.Bockelman, 'A Lutheran Looks at Billy Graham', *Lutheran Standard*, 10 Oct 1961).

- 10) Graham endorsed Gerald Kennedy as chairman of his 1963 **Los Angeles Crusade**. Kennedy in '*God's Good News*', p.125, wrote: 'I believe the testimony of the New Testament, taken as a whole, is **against** the doctrine of the **deity of Jesus** although I think it bears overwhelming witness to the divinity of Jesus.' John 8:24 declares Kennedy to be unsaved. How can an unbeliever be qualified to lead an evangelistic crusade? What does this say about Billy Graham's judgment and theology?
- 11) In Graham's **Uruguay Crusade** of 1963, he endorsed the crusade's vice president as the pastor of the First Methodist Church of Montevideo, who openly held **evolutionary** views and believed that the god of the Buddhists was the same as the Biblical God. (*Baptist Bible Tribune*, 8 March 1963).
- 12) In 1967, Graham received the **degree of Doctorate of Humane Letters** from the **Roman Catholic Belmont Abbey College** in North Carolina, a school which teaches prayer to Mary and popery. Graham said that he "knew of no greater honour than to be presented with this degree." He also said that "the gospel that built this school and the gospel that brings me here tonight is still the way to salvation." (*The Gastonian Gazette*, 22 Nov., 1967). How confusing! Everyone knows that Roman Catholicism preaches a different gospel to Protestants, except Billy Graham! God curses Rome's false gospel. (Galatians 1:6-9).
- 13) In September 8-13, 1969, Graham sponsored at his headquarters in Minneapolis, Minnesota, the US Congress on Evangelism, where 92 denominations were represented. **Two Roman Catholics appeared on the program**. Also, Ralph Abernathy, president of the Southern Christian Leadership Conference said: 'We are all sons and daughters of the most high Lord - we are all brothers. Take the Gospel of Jesus Christ into the alleys and byways. Tell all of God's children, "you are somebody; you are all worth something; you are God's children".'  
(Source: Merle Hull, '*US Congress on Evangelism*', *Baptist Bulletin*, Nov. 1969, p.11). What a heretic! He obviously doesn't believe John 1:12 or Galatians 3:26: 'Ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.'  
If everyone is already a child of God, why have a Congress on Evangelism?  
Did Graham rebuke Abernathy? Not likely.
- 14) **Catholic Support**: Regarding the Crusade in **Manila**, Philippines in 1977, Graham commented: 'We have received marvellous support from the Catholic Church.' (*Christianity Today*, 31 Dec. 1977, p.37). No wonder Rome supported Graham when he sent his converts back to fill Catholic church pews, & because he gave Roman Catholicism much-needed respectability in Protestant eyes. Billy Graham hence split Protestant opposition to Roman Catholicism. Just what the devil wanted.
- 15) **Praises religious freedom in Communist Hungary**. In the 1977 **Budapest Crusade**, he praised the religious freedom he found. He said nothing in defence of those Christians in Communist jails for their faith.
- 16) **Gave credibility to Charismatics**. Graham has given credibility to the Charismatic movement.  
He said: 'By and large, it has been a positive force in the lives of many people'.  
(Source: *Christianity Today*, 17 July 1991, p.23). But is it Biblical? No!
- 17) **Not speaking up for Russian imprisoned Christians**. In 1982, while he was preaching in the Moscow Baptist Church, a young lady unfurled a banner which read: 'We have more than 150 prisoners for the work of the Gospel.' Graham ignored it and

later said that in the US, people are imprisoned for creating disturbances. What a discouragement Graham was to the thousands of courageous Christians in Soviet concentration camps because of their loyalty to Jesus Christ and the Gospel. What a blow to them to hear that the world's leading evangelist declared that there was religious freedom in Russia. Why did Graham say nothing to defend them? God tells us: 'Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them.....' (Hebrews 13:3). Graham forgot them. *Time Magazine* said, 'Yet, throughout the week, Graham seemed oblivious to the precarious role of religion in a country that endorses atheism and outlaws public evangelism. The (registered) Baptists who heard Graham's Gospel can hold worship services, but they cannot preach the Word of God in public or bring up their children with religious instruction.'

(Source: *Time*, M.S.Evans, 'The Brainwashing of Billy Graham,' 5 June 1982, p.7). The unregistered Baptist leaders were sent to concentration camps, while their churches had to meet in secret. Graham should have shown more courage. For the sake of open doors, he compromised again. M.S.Evans of *Time* was correct when he said, 'Graham's trip was a mindless, stunning propaganda triumph for the Soviets.' The early Apostles who were imprisoned said, 'We ought to obey God rather than men.' (Acts 5:29) Did Graham denounce the apostate practices of the Russian Orthodox Church? No. He did not rebuke them as Jeremiah would have. Jesus rebuked the 'scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites' (Matt. 23:13-14). Graham instead made positive smooth statements that would soothe but not convict.

## 7. EFFECTS OF BILLY GRAHAM'S COMPROMISING WITH ERROR

Billy Graham's toleration of false doctrines and unwillingness to offend are now accepted by many evangelicals. He said, 'in the proclamation of the Gospel there is flexibility of fellowship.'

(Source: Open letter from Billy Graham, "Separation of Fellowship").

Never does Graham rebuke the apostasy of the World Council of Churches (WCC) or the NCC. The Bible commands faithful preachers of God to openly combat teachers of error:

"Them that sin **rebuke before all**, that others also may fear .....without preferring one before another.' (I Timothy 5:20,21).

'reprove, **rebuke**, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.' (II Timothy 4:2).

'**rebuke** them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith.' (Titus 1:13).

'**rebuke** with all authority.' (Titus 2:15). (I

Timothy 1:20.

**Paul** was bold enough to identify by name Hymenaeus and Alexander who made shipwreck of the faith

**John**, the Apostle of love, wrote against Diotrophes, the proud dictator &condemned his action. 3John 9.

When God commissioned **Jeremiah**, He told him to '**root out**, and to **pull down**, and to **destroy**, and to **throw down**, to build, and to plant.' (Jeremiah 1:10).

Here are four negatives and two positives to be accomplished before we can have revival.

**KEY: Error must be demolished.** Thorn-infested ground must be cleared before we can progress in building truth and having revival. **Destruction of wrong** must precede **building the right**.

Due to the efforts of Billy Graham, many feel that apostasy and false doctrines are not the enemies our forefathers saw them to be. Today, Billy tells us that liberals are not so bad. This idea came from Graham's crusades, where unbelievers and fundamentalists mixed readily.

Doubtless, Graham has done much to build the ecumenical church and to give it prestige.

The gap between unbelieving liberals and Fundamentalism is unbridgable. On one side is the true church, the Bride of Christ, and on the other is the Harlot Church of Revelation chapter 17. These cannot be joined.

Graham tells impressionable young church leaders to put away your doctrinal differences as not important. But God says that doctrine is important as seen in these 20 passages: (Acts 2:42.

'They continued steadfastly in the **apostles' doctrine** and fellowship, in breaking of bread, in prayers.'

'Ye have filled Jerusalem with your **doctrine**.' (Acts 5:28).

'Ye have **obeyed** from the heart that form of **doctrine** which was delivered you.' (Romans 6:17).

'Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the **doctrine** which ye have learned, and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ.....and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.' (Romans 16:17,18).

'that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other **doctrine**.' (I Timothy 1:3).

'if there be any other thing that is contrary to **sound doctrine**.' (I Timothy 1:10).

'a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good **doctrine**.' (I Tim. 4:6).

'give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to **doctrine**.' (I Timothy 4:13).

'Take heed unto thyself, and unto the **doctrine**; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself (from error), and them that hear thee.' (I Timothy 4:16).

'Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the Word and **doctrine**.' (I Timothy 5:17).

'If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the **doctrine** which is according to godliness..from such **withdraw** thyself.' (I Tim.6:3-5)

'But thou hast fully known my **doctrine**.' (II Timothy 3:10).

'All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for **doctrine**.' (II Timothy 3:16).

"Reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and **doctrine**."

For the time will come when they will not endure sound **doctrine**;" (II Timothy 4:2,3).

"Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound **doctrine** both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers." (Titus 1:9).

"But speak thou the things which become sound **doctrine**:" (Titus 2:1).

"In **doctrine** showing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity." (Titus 2:7).

"That they may adorn the **doctrine** of God our Saviour in all things." (Titus 2:10).

"Be not carried about with diverse and strange **doctrines**:" (Hebrews 13:9).

## II. ERRORS OF NEW EVANGELICALISM TO AVOID

How do you recognize a New Evangelical church?

How do you tell if a church is slipping into the errors of New Evangelicalism?

If you see the following errors in a church, you can be sure that you are dealing with a church which has succumbed to New Evangelical errors. In most cases they are not aware that these errors spring from New Evangelicalism. In each case they have accepted these false doctrines without asking the question, 'Is it Biblical?' Consider these errors:

### 1. **Disbelief in the Inerrancy of Scripture**

New Evangelicals say that 'yes the Bible is inspired, but it is not inerrant.' What they mean by this is that they consider the Bible to be inspired and/or infallible, but they think it contains errors in 'non-crucial' areas such as geography, history and numerology, but

that it is still reliable (infallible) when it comes to major doctrines.

What caused them to retreat from 'inerrancy'?

- a) It was their belief that **evolution** is true and hence they felt that the Genesis Creation in six days seemed unscientific.
- b) The introduction of the **erroneous Westcott and Hort new Greek text** of the New Testament. This sought to put away the Received Text of the New Testament on which the KJV is based (representing over 98% of the New Testament manuscripts). They replaced it with a Greek text based on the corrupt Vaticanus and Sinaiticus manuscripts (on which most modern Bible versions are based).

Many New Evangelicals are Charismatics who do not need an inerrant Bible because they claim to have inerrant gifts of prophecy as God communicates to them outside of the Bible. They do not see the Bible as God's Final Revelation for this age. Charismatics thus betray an ignorance of I Corinthians 13:8-13; 14:21-23 and of historic, orthodox Christianity. When the age of the apostles ceased, so did prophecy, tongues, knowledge and other sign gifts cease. (See page 482-500).

## 2. **Modern Bible Versions.**

New Evangelicals do not have an inerrant Bible when they use and promote modern Bible versions which omit thousands of words. A church which uses modern versions, reveals an unawareness of these omissions. Churches that use modern versions reveal a knowing or unknowing preference for a corrupt minority text which changes with every new edition. Modern versions attack the doctrines of inerrancy and preservation of Scripture. The NIV's Greek NT omits 2544 Greek words. This is a serious problem.

## 3. **Toleration of Error**

Evangelicals want to be accepted by everybody. Sin is rarely rebuked. Rare is a call for repentance. The attitude is, 'Let's not offend anyone by rebuking their false doctrines.' God says, 'Speaking the truth in love.' (Ephesians 4:15). New Evangelicals are afraid to speak the truth to those holding error. They just want to be nice and say nothing that might offend. The tolerant, nice, cowardly, inoffensive approach avoids mentioning the Gospel's potentially convicting aspects such as:

- a) an ingrained, inherited sinful nature;
- b) sinful conduct such as fornication, adultery, sodomy, lying, etc.
- c) unbelievers being 'punished with everlasting destruction' in hell. (II Thessalonians 1:8,9);
- d) declaring all non-Biblical religions as false;
- e) charging heretics with heresy. (The word 'heresy' has vanished from inter-religious dialogue);
- f) publicly rebuking the errors of Roman Catholicism.

Notice how the Bible speaks the truth:

- a) **Jesus** wasn't nice to the Pharisees when he said, 'Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites.' (Matthew 23:14). The NIV omits this verse.
- b) **Stephen** rebuked the entire Sanhedrin: 'Ye stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost.' (Acts 7:51).
- c) **Paul** rebuked Peter: 'I withstood him (Peter) to the face, because he was to be blamed.' (Gal. 2:11).  
Paul rebuked those preaching a false gospel, saying 'let him be accursed.' (Galatians 1:9).
- d) **Peter** rebuked Simon's heresy: 'Thy money perish with thee.' (Acts 8:20).  
Early Christians did not seek to make everyone happy and comfortable as do modern New Evangelicals. They spoke the truth in love, but clearly and forcefully.

Their attitude was: 'If I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.' (Galatians 1:10).

## 4. **Non-confronting Accommodation.**

This is seeking to adapt the Word of God to **conform to modern ideas**.

**Question:** Why has this happened?

**Answer:** Many modern New Evangelicals have become embarrassed to be seen holding ideas that are rejected by the unbelieving world, eg: Six-day creation; KJV; not-so-modern hymns; inerrant Bible, etc. They dislike being sneered at by unbelievers. Early New Evangelicals disliked being isolated in society. They wanted their articles and books to be recognized and published by respectable companies, and to be regarded as authentic scholars. They wanted to make the 'faith of our fathers' acceptable to the ungodly world. This is **pride of intellect**. God says, 'Be not conformed to this world...' (Rom 12:2). 'Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world.' (I John 2:15-17). 'Because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.' (John 15:19).

We all love people to admire us, but this must not be at the expense of God's disapproval. New Evangelicals do not want to be confronters, but want to build bridges with unbelieving liberals. This compromise on small matters, leads to compromise on larger matters.

## 5. **Evangelical Feminism**

Radical feminism since 1970, has been accepted by a spiritually blind, unsaved world as well as by New Evangelicals. Evangelical feminists believe that most theology has been written out of a male's experience of God. They believe that the Bible does not teach what it has been assumed to teach about the subordinate role of women in the church and society. They claim that Paul is wrong when he demands a submissive role of women to their husbands. They think that orthodox theology was thought up by males and reflects a masculine bias. They believe that ordination of women is desirable.

**Question:** How is it that none of the great Bible teachers in the last 2000 years have discovered these new 'truths' such as female ordination?

**Answer:** It is because feminism has become popular in the world and hence some New Evangelicals want to bring this worldly teaching into the church.

The rise of Evangelical feminism coincides with the rise of worldly feminism.

I Timothy 2:9-15 and Ephesians 5:21-33 teach that women should submit to their own husbands, and that they ought not to teach men, nor usurp authority over men.

The Bible does not teach that women are inferior to men, but that a woman is a helper suitable for a man (Genesis 2:18), not as the NKJV says, 'comparable to man.' Christian women must display a 'meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.' (I Peter 3:4). Saved women are to be 'discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands.' (Titus 2:5).

'I will therefore that the younger woman marry, bear children, guide the house,...' (I Timothy 5:14).

## 6. **Less Emphasis on Doctrine**

The teaching of sound doctrine is less popular today. New Evangelicals consider doctrine to be:

- 1) too divisive;
- 2) not practical enough, and
- 3) not helping to promote evangelical unity.

New Evangelicals seek to restructure preaching from a God-centred, doctrinal approach to a man-centred approach. New Evangelicals seek to minimise doctrine by pointing us to emphasise other things, such as:

- 1) **Loving Jesus.** A charismatic pastor once said, 'What we need to do is just forget all this doctrine stuff, and just love Jesus.' This sounds really spiritual, but once we seek to answer the question 'Who is Jesus?', we have entered the realm of doctrine.
- 2) **Cultivating the Inner Life.** One cannot have spiritual growth without 'growing in grace, and in the knowledge (doctrine) of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.' (II Peter 3:18).  
'Knowledge' involves an increasing grasp of doctrinal truth.
- 3) **Loving Others.** To them this means a toleration of error and accepting of all who call themselves evangelicals. This weak attitude allowed charismatic teachings to spread through many churches unopposed. Many Christian leaders, such as Charles Swindoll, will say things like, 'I am not a charismatic personally, but the charismatic movement has done a lot of good and we ought not to condemn it. We should love the brethren.' So, in the name of 'love', all manner of false teaching is condoned. The NIV teaches this toleration of error by its mistranslation of Romans 14:1, reversing the KJV's "not to doubtful disputations" to, 'Accept him whose faith is weak, **without passing judgment** on disputable matters.' Luther wisely rebukes this error in *This We Believe*, p.76:  
'Doctrine is not ours but God's...Therefore we may not yield or change even one tittle of it. Accursed be the love which is preserved to the detriment of doctrine.....If doctrine becomes wobbly in one part, it must necessarily become wobbly altogether. When that happens, love cannot help us.'

Charismatics say, "'Spirit baptism' unites, and other doctrinal differences can be overlooked."

Paul never downplayed doctrine while pretending to practise love. He commanded sound doctrine to be taught. See 20 scriptures showing the importance of doctrine.

'Give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.' (I Timothy 4:13).

**7. Contemporary Christian Music**, so loved by New Evangelicals today, is witness to the theological deterioration in the church. Shallow theology leads to people accepting shallow Christian music. God-centred doctrinal songs have been replaced by man-centred, experiential songs. Loud worldly rock music has been brought into churches, with a 'Christian' label and a few Christian words thrown in.

New Evangelicals claim that 'you can't reach the young people unless you employ their favourite music styles.' Pastors and church leaders felt they had to compete with worldly rock music to attract teens. What happened to the power of the Gospel of Christ to convert sinners (Romans 1:16)?

They made God a commodity for self-gratification.

CCM fits with the self-centred culture of today where people focus on 'meeting their needs.' Christian music must be firmly anchored in theology taught in the Bible. 'I will sing with the understanding also.' (I Corinthians 14:15). Much CCM is upbeat, shallow and suitable for dancing, but not suitable for serious God-centred thought.

**8. Psychology** replacing **Solid Bible Teaching**.

Many New Evangelicals do not desire doctrinal instruction from the Word of God, but rather discussions on 'how to' meet life's problems. They aim for psychological wholeness more than doctrinal correctness. One well-known New Evangelical Baptist Union pastor, in a message, declared that he had hypnotised a criminal to discover childhood problems that caused his unlawful adult behaviour. Did Paul hypnotise his converts? God's answer to the troubled soul is 'Thou wilt keep him in **perfect peace**, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he **trusteth in thee**.' (Isaiah 26:3).

'**Great peace** have they which **love thy law**; and nothing shall offend them.' (Psalm

119:165).

Solid Bible preaching is becoming less popular, and is being replaced by pulpit psychology.

### **9. Theological Colleges that Poison Students' Minds.**

New Evangelicalism was thought up by professors of some evangelical theological colleges. They twisted the thinking of many impressionable youngsters. Many Bible Colleges that were built by old-time fundamentalists fell prey to New Evangelicalism. How did this happen?

- 1) Many purportedly Christian colleges and seminaries are far more interested in employing lecturers with prestigious **academic credentials**, than in employing soul-winning lecturers with sound doctrinal commitment.
- 2) Those doctrinally unsound lecturers **teach their errors to their students** who often end up being more doctrinally unsound than their lecturers.
- 3) The students take up their lecturers' anti-Christian world views and **teach them to their church members**. This often results in church splits or in multiplying apostate churches. Paul in II Timothy 2:2 was greatly concerned that sound doctrine be passed from generation to generation. Timothy, in turn, had to ensure that sound doctrines were preserved intact and passed on by his disciples. Along with deterioration in doctrinal convictions came a deterioration in standards of conduct in the colleges. Many Bible Colleges provide a 'smorgasbord' education where the lecturer gives the students all viewpoints and the students are free to choose whatever view they like. Colleges adopt this view for **monetary reasons** because they wish to draw students (and hence their fees) from as many churches of varying doctrines as possible in order to keep the College doors open. For example, they will teach various views of baptism, prophecy, spiritual gifts, human origins, etc, without saying which view is right or wrong, for fear of losing some students or supporting churches. Often, high standards of conduct have been criticised as 'legalism', so some colleges scrap all the rules in order to cultivate 'maturity' in the students. In reality, scrapping rules cultivates immaturity, lack of discipline, and a rebellious attitude toward authority.

### **10. Acceptance of Evolution or Theistic Evolution**

Many New Evangelicals reject the literal six-day Creation 6000 years ago. They try to reconcile Biblical truth with evolutionary ideas. A student at a New Evangelical Baptist Union College asked me what were the differences between his Baptist Union and my Independent Baptist position. My first reply was that we believed in a literal six-day creation 6000 years ago. His stunned response was, 'Really?'

Evolutionists seek to explain the universe without the agency of God. New Evangelicals were embarrassed that Creation was looked down upon by some scientists, so they sought ways to harmonise the views of unbelieving scientists with the Bible. Many New Evangelicals say that the first eleven chapters of Genesis teach theological truth, but not scientific truth. But surely one category of truth will never contradict another category of truth.

We reject evolution as 'science falsely so called' (I Timothy 6:20), because it is based on unprovable assumptions. No man can observe the origin of life in the past. True science deals with what can be observed. Evolutionary scientists are willingly ignorant of, and have deliberately rejected Creation by God and Noah's worldwide flood. (II Peter 3:15).

### **11. The Social Gospel**

This means changing the Gospel from 'salvation from sin and hell' to 'salvation from social ills.' They misinterpret the leaven parable (Matthew 13:33) to claim that the church should be 'leaven for society', whereas leaven is always a symbol of evil. (Matthew 16:6,12). The Gospel is defined in I Corinthians 15:1-4 and this does not include any social action. Due to the churches' evangelistic efforts, many social ills are lessened. Neither Christ nor the Apostles endeavoured to rid unconverted society of its ills. James 2:15-17, Romans 15:26

and Acts 11:27-30 each show a Biblical precedent for believers to help other believers who are 'naked' or 'destitute of daily food' or in life-threatening situations, but not for the world in general. Our main thrust must be to win souls, baptise and teach God's Word to all nations. Fundamentalists who major on soul-winning have done more to relieve human suffering as a secondary emphasis, than have many liberals done by a primary social gospel emphasis. Fundamentalists, by soul winning, have started more malaria clinics, Christian schools, deaf ministries, prison ministries, and rescue missions, than have New Evangelicals by a primary social gospel emphasis. Many Fundamentalists have greatly helped sinners by leading them to eternal life in Christ. They then become better citizens after salvation, who then are well-equipped to help others.

## 12. Refusal to Preach Against Roman Catholic Errors.

The Roman Catholic church teaches the false doctrines of salvation by infant sprinkling, good works needed to enter heaven, repetition of Christ's sacrifice in every mass, the impossibility of knowing that one is going to heaven, the need to venerate Mary, confirmation, and many other heresies. In spite of this, many New Evangelicals follow Billy Graham's lead in not rebuking Roman Catholic errors. For example:

**Example 1:** The Baptist Union Theological College in Sydney, along with the Executive Committee of the Baptist Union of NSW, without the knowledge of the majority of NSW Baptists, incorporated 'The Sydney College of Divinity' on 15 September 1983. This comprised six (6) member institutions as follows:

| Member Institutions                    | Denomination       |
|----------------------------------------|--------------------|
| Baptist Theological College            | Baptist            |
| Catholic Institute of Sydney           | Roman Catholic     |
| Churches of Christ Theological College | Churches of Christ |
| St Paul's National Seminary            | Roman Catholic     |
| Union Theological Institute            | Roman Catholic     |
| United Theological College             | Uniting Church     |

The Chairman of the SCD's Council was a Catholic priest (J. P. Hill).

The *Articles of Association* state that one of the powers and duties of the SCD's Academic Board is 'facilitating the **exchange of lecturers** between institutions, and the **undertaking of courses** by students in Member Institutions **other than** the institution in which the students are enrolled.' (*Section 44, Subsection (X), p 12*). The SCD had its first graduation of students on 7 June 1985 at 8 pm in Pitt Street Uniting Church, Sydney. That evening, 30 RCs, one Church of Christ, and 10 Uniting Church students received their degrees.

(Source: 'Triumph or Tragedy?' J O Hogg, Stanmore Baptist Church, NSW, September 1985).

**Question:** How could any Baptist lecturer preach against Roman Catholic errors when he has already agreed to work with Roman Catholic priests in the SCD?

**Example 2:** When Billy Graham preached in Roman Catholic churches in Poland, he was warmly welcomed by their leaders.

**Example 3:** Cuthbert Allen, the Executive Vice President of Belmont Abbey College, Belmont, North Carolina, USA (the Roman Catholic school that bestowed an honorary doctorate on Billy Graham), said of the evangelist:

'I would state that he could bring Catholics and Protestants together in a healthy ecumenical spirit. Billy Graham is preaching a moral and evangelical theology most acceptable to Catholics.' (Letter to Julius Taylor).

Billy Graham continues to populate Catholic churches with his converts, rather than calling them away from idols and false doctrines, and into true New Testament churches.

A confused Catholic (in the 1960s) wrote to Billy Graham, expressing his concern about errors in the Catholic church. Graham responded in the *Chattanooga Free Press*: 'Above all don't pull out of the church! Stay in, stay close to the Lord, and use these experiences as an opportunity to help your church be what God intends and what the world needs.' (M Watt, 'Mission England: Is it Scriptural', *Bible League Quarterly*, Jan-March 1984, p 36).

**Question:** How can Billy Graham, as a Gospel evangelist, Biblically justify telling a believer in Christ to remain in an apostate church which denies the very truths that he is trying to preach? If one who is seeking to lead people into the light cannot distinguish light from darkness, how confused will be his leadership! How terrible an example he is to suggest that all the Protestant world should follow his lead!

'Woe to them that call evil good, and good evil, that put darkness for light, and light for darkness.' (Isaiah 5:20).

**Example 4:** Notice what Japheth Peres testified after his conversion at age 14 at Billy Graham's New York Crusade. Having told the counsellor that he was a Catholic, Billy instructed the converts to go back to the church from which they had come:

'Since Billy Graham sent me to the Catholic Church, I was under the impression that it was the right church.....What did I gain from the Billy Graham Crusade? I gained about a year and a half of darkness and ignorance of the Bible, because Billy Graham sent me to the Catholic Church.' (*Baptist Examiner*, 16 May 1964, p.1).

## 13. Ecumenical Co-operation and the World Council of Churches.

New Evangelicals aimed to infiltrate the apostate denominations with bright young Bible-believers who would 'turn things around.' Billy Graham helped to popularise the 'infiltration' approach, and many young evangelicals followed him with their own ecumenical evangelistic crusades by working with a variety of unbelievers. Young New Evangelicals promoted co-operation with the apostate World Council of Churches (WCC). Evangelicals should not assist or be in the WCC. The WCC is a wicked, pro-Communist, anti-God organisation which true Christians should avoid and expose, because of the following errors:

- 1) The WCC **donates money** given by its member churches to guerrilla organisations and Peoples Liberation armies controlled by **Communists** to buy guns to murder people in its fight against racism. '*Ecumenical Press Service*', 9 September 1971, lists WCC grants to these Communist revolutionary organisations:
 

|                                                 |           |
|-------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| People's Movement for the Liberation of Angola  | \$ 25,000 |
| The Revolutionary Government of Angola in Exile | \$ 7,500  |
| South West African People's Organisation        | \$25,000  |
| Zimbabwe Liberation Movement, Rhodesia          | \$10,000  |
| Mozambique Institute of Frelimo                 | \$20,000  |
| Malcolm X Liberation University                 | \$ 7,500  |
| Bolivian Project in Aid of Indian Liberation    | \$12,500  |
- 2) 'The WCC **does nothing to assist black Christians of Southern Sudan**, for years slaughtered by the troops of the Muslim Government at Khartoum. In 1967, Baptists in Soviet Russia appealed to the WCC for aid, sending proof that more than 200 Baptists were in Soviet prison camps due to deliberate persecution. The WCC has done nothing to intervene in favour of these Christians.' (*Christian Beacon*, 15 July 1971, p.8).
- 3) **Invitation to Rome:** At Uppsala in 1968 the WCC issued an open invitation to the Roman Catholic Church to join it. (*Courier Mail*, 20 July 1968).
- 4) **Denial of Bible Doctrine and Authority:** The WCC Control Committee, meeting in Addis Ababa (Ethiopia) in January 1971 stated: 'Because Christians cannot claim to have monopoly of truth, we need to meet men



of other faiths . . .’ (S J Samartha, *Christian Beacon*, 28 January 1971, p.8). This contradicts Christ’s exclusive claim, ‘I am the way, the truth and the life, no man cometh unto the Father but by me.’ (John 14:6). Also, Henry Van Dusan, a top WCC leader, officially sponsored the building of a Temple of Understanding in Washington DC, representing the ‘six rays of hope’ - Islam, Judaism, Hinduism, Confucianism, Buddhism and Christianity. (*Christian Beacon*, 25 July 1968, p.1).

5) **Humanist and Social Gospel**

6) **The Revised Standard Version** was produced under the auspices of the National Council of Churches (NCC) in the USA. The RSV changed many texts on the deity and virgin birth of Christ. The RSV opened the door to a flood of other Bible perversions. *The US Congressional Record* (March 3, 1960, p. 3981) stated that of the 95 people who translated the RSV, 25 had records of support for Communist causes. In the RSV preface they say of the Bible: ‘It is **a** record of God’s dealing with men.’ They should have said: ‘It is **the** record.....’ This change takes away from the Bible being the unique Word of God.

7) **Redefining Missions.** WCC mission policy is summarised by G.A.Taylor in the *Presbyterian Journal* (10 February 1960): ‘The radical theologian does not believe that anyone is actually “outside.” All are inside.....The churches’ task is no longer to go outside” and bring lost sheep in.’ (Source: *The Coming World Church*, p. 38, Back to the Bible Broadcast). Because of this attitude, traditional missionary activity has suffered a sharp decline in WCC associated bodies as a whole.

8) **Sexual Permissiveness.** Dr William Cole prepared a pamphlet for the WCC, entitled, ‘*Called to Responsible Freedom - the Meaning of Sex in the Christian Life*’ for singles, where he writes: ‘You have got to make up your own mind what your standards of conduct are going to be. There just aren’t any rules; you do whatever strikes your fancy.’ Here the WCC blatantly opposes God’s Biblical standards of morality, by endorsing fornication. God has given us His rules, yet Cole says there are none. God’s rule is no sex outside marriage.  
**Conclusion:** Get out of your church if it is a part of the WCC.

#### 14. Co-operation with Charismatics

New Evangelicals accepted fellowship with Pentecostals. Later the Charismatic movement became assimilated into the New Evangelical movement. The Charismatic movement changed evangelicalism to become more experiential, so that experience became more important than doctrine.

New Evangelical churches, while not always charismatic themselves, work with Charismatics and refuse to speak against them. The compromising Charles Swindoll summarizes this attitude in defending his concept of grace: ‘I’m not a charismatic. However, I don’t feel it is my calling to shoot great volleys of theological artillery at my charismatic brothers and sisters. Who knows how much good they have done? The church I pastor is not a charismatic church.....but that does not mean that we break fellowship with individuals who are more of that persuasion, or that we take pot-shots at them.’ ( *The Grace Awakening*, C Swindoll, p 188). His trumpet gives an uncertain sound.

**Question:** Are Charismatic teachings Biblical?

**Answer:** If yes, then we should all adopt them. If no, then we must oppose them. The issue is not whether the charismatic Christians are nice people, but whether the Bible teaches that the gift of tongues and other charismatic sign gifts are still operative for the church

today? If they are not for today, then faithful Bible teachers must speak up against false charismatic doctrines being spread abroad and infecting many people.

Paul constantly refuted false doctrines, as he told Timothy to ‘In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves.’ (II Timothy 2:25). Because Charismatics are wrong on sign gifts, then those who better understand Scripture should tell them they are wrong, show them why, and seek to win them to a more Biblical position. It is not a mark of Christian love and grace to quietly ignore errors that are spreading.

#### 15. Tolerating Various Views on Christ’s Return and Being Committed to None.

New Evangelicals tolerate various false views on eschatology (Christ’s return), such as Postmillennialism and Amillennialism. Up until the 1950s, most fundamentalists, taking a literal view of prophecy were Premillennialists. This is clearly the correct view by taking Revelation 19,20,21 at literal chronological face value.

One New Evangelical theology professor, when asked what scheme of theology he taught, said, ‘I teach them all and, when I get to the end of the course, the students don’t know what I believe.’ He felt that this was very clever, yet Jesus, on the other hand, ‘Taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.’ (Matthew 7:29).

Christ spoke plainly and with authority; not as the scribes who quoted what many scholars were thinking. The scribes avoided dogmatism on disputed or controversial points, while Christ fearlessly spoke the truth.

16. Departing from Dispensationalism as being too negative a view of human failure at the end of each age.

New Evangelicals disliked Dispensationalism, because it offered too pessimistic a view of world and church history. Dispensationalism taught that there would be a growing apostasy in the churches, for which there was no remedy but separation.

‘When the Son of Man cometh, shall He find faith on the earth?’ (Luke 18:8).

New Evangelicals were not separatist, and hence resisted these dispensational conclusions.

New Evangelicals opposed the view of the church as a refuge in a ruined culture.

#### 17. Scholarship

New Evangelicals desired to be accepted by the unsaved scholarly world. Budding New Evangelical scholars disliked the scholarly world of unbelievers and modernists, rejecting their own works. You would surely expect unconverted teachers of error to reject fundamentalist scholars who are loyal to the inerrancy of Scripture and are intellectually submitted to the authority of God’s Word. The Word of God, through Jeremiah, was certainly a scholarly work, having been produced by the Holy Spirit, yet it was rejected and cut to ribbons by the king’s knife. (Jeremiah 36:23-24).

Bible truth is always foolishness to the unbeliever, especially to the educated unbeliever:

‘For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness . . .’ (I Corinthians 1:18).

‘The world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.’ (v.21). Paul did not attempt to proclaim God’s Word in the enticing words of man’s wisdom, but in the power of the Holy Spirit. (I Corinthians 2:4).

New Evangelicals view Fundamentalists as anti-intellectual, because Fundamentalists were rightly suspicious of colleges who were opposed to Bible truth. The intellectual world is mostly under Satan’s control. Fundamentalists see the intellectual ungodly world as:

‘Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart.’ (Ephesians 4:18).

Many of those who seek intellectual respectability and acceptance have become the church’s worst enemies. If an ungodly intellectual does not accept the proof of the Bible as divinely inspired on the basis of its fulfilled prophecies, they are intellectually dishonest and God’s people should not bother trying to please them.

We must submit our minds to God and His Word, 'bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.' (II Corinthians 10:5). God has given us minds to be used for His glory, so we must 'gird up the loins of your mind.' (I Peter 1:13).

We must study God's Word to show ourselves approved unto God (II Timothy 2:15), not study the works of heretics and unbelievers in order to please them.

### **18. Meaningful Conversation with Liberal Theologians**

The New Evangelical problem here is that they do not recognize theological liberals as lost souls, groping in spiritual darkness, 'wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest: to whom the mist of darkness is reserved forever.' (II Peter 2:17).

Many New Evangelicals view unbelieving false teachers (liberals) as misguided but well-meaning Christians who need our love and fellowship. These liberals are blatantly rebelling against God and the authority of His Word.

God tells us: 'from such turn away.' (II Timothy 3:5).

'A man that is an heretic, after the first and second admonition, reject.' (Titus 3:10).

New Evangelicals are not heeding these warnings.

New Evangelicals say, 'Let us compromise doctrinal matters for the sake of evangelism.'

God says "No". 'From such turn away.' (II Timothy 3:5).

### **19. Dislike for Publicly Criticising the Theology of Other Evangelicals**

Church marketing supporters say that, to build successful growing churches, we must not criticise the views of fellow believers.

For example, it is unpopular to criticize Charismatic theology.

New Evangelicals have erected a large umbrella where a great range of churches of various convictions can feel comfortable in their error. The church growth movement advises their followers to downplay 'denominational distinctives' which appear divisive, such as the method of **baptism**, **charismatic** teachings, views of **eschatology**, **eternal security**, **Bible versions**, and **church organisation**.

### **20. Antagonism Towards Fundamentalists**

One Fundamentalist preacher observed that New Evangelicals are always preaching love toward liberals, unbelievers and heretics with their many false doctrines, but that they hate the Fundamentalists with a passion. Why? Because Fundamentalists tell them where they depart from Scripture.

Most Christians are totally unaware of the profoundly disturbing and deteriorating changes that have occurred in evangelicalism over the last 50 years.

Fundamentalists are accused of being such things as "Legalists" - because we have high standards of Biblical behaviour. A legalist is one who adds works to faith for salvation, something no true Fundamentalist would ever do. They accuse Fundamentalists of burdening God's people with ridiculous and impossible rules which stunt their spiritual growth. Rules are to protect God's people from the devil's traps, not to restrict our fun. Paul says "Warn them that are unruly." I Thessalonians 5:14.

Many people are attracted to New Evangelical churches because they carry chips on their shoulders against the Fundamentalist churches in which they were raised.

### **21. Ecumenical Evangelism**

The effect of Billy Graham's ecumenical evangelistic crusades was to develop a pragmatic attitude which said, 'Whatever tactics result in the salvation of souls, are acceptable.'

Whenever someone challenged this ecumenical philosophy, its defenders often replied, 'But people are being saved! How can you be against soul winning?'

Hence was encouraged the unbiblical practice of uniting liberals and Bible believers in the cause of evangelism. Many have blindly followed this practice.

Billy Graham's practice of ecumenical evangelism can be likened to a fruitgrower hiring someone to go and pick the fruit in his orchard. The fruitpicker bulldozes down every tree in the orchard, then picks the fruit off the branches, and proudly hands the fruit to the orchard owner. Sure he picked the fruit, but he ruined the harvest for years to come. Billy Graham picked the fruit of souls, but by uniting liberals, evangelicals and Roman Catholics he broke down the walls separating truth from error, so that few know or will speak up against error for years to come.

This same principle governs those who would tell us how to build churches. They recommend loud rock music in God's sanctuaries, because 'It fills our churches and reaches people.' As yeast puffs up bread, so the leaven of false doctrine often quickly inflates a church in size. Don't mistake this for God-sanctioned growth. It is not striving lawfully.

Billy Graham's policy of sending new converts to liberal churches has been defended by some Baptists who think that it helps to evangelise members of the apostate churches.

**Question 1:** How can Baptists who profess to believe in regenerate church membership, defend the practice of sending new converts to churches which do not practise regenerate church membership, but whose membership is based on unsaved babies being sprinkled with water?

**Answer:** A believer does not join a church in order to evangelise its members. One joins a church to:

- worship God with other true believers;
- be taught correct Bible doctrines, and
- go out and evangelise the lost.

**Question 2:** If Billy Graham is not a liberal, why do liberals support his crusades?

**Answer:**

- Because Graham does not rebuke and expose their errors as the old time evangelists did, but he applauds and honours them as worthy spiritual guides;
  - Because Graham fills the liberals' churches for them with his new converts.
- The British liberal, Leslie Weatherhead, said: 'I do not personally agree with some of Billy Graham's theology.....but Billy Graham is helping to fill our churches for us. We can teach people theology when we have got someone to teach.'

(**Source:** *City Temple Tidings*, quoted in *Banner of Truth*, May-June 1966, p.2).  
He is saying, 'My liberal theology is so empty of power that it can't fill churches, so we have to rely on evangelical theology that does fill churches. Billy Graham can fill my church with new converts, then I'll poison them with my false doctrines.'

Shame on you Billy Graham, shame for sending sheep (new converts) to the wolves!

This compromising of Graham's has spread everywhere. His attitude is, 'Do anything to get crowds and fill the churches.' God says, 'Yet is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully.' (II Timothy 2:5).

We must build churches according to God's rules, lawfully.

### **Seven Bible Principles that Disprove Ecumenical Evangelism**

#### **1) We must not fellowship with liberals in order to win them to Christ.**

This means don't co-operate with liberals in a religious context to achieve spiritual results. Just being nice to liberals won't save them, only the Gospel will (Romans 1:16). God is more concerned about preserving the holiness and purity of His church, than He is about results. Holiness involves separation from evil and error. Paul commands us to turn away from those who have a form of godliness, but who deny the power (of the Gospel and the Bible). (II Timothy 3:5). The Graham plan denies that we should turn away from error, but seeks to join with them to do God's work.

Billy Graham defends himself as follows:

'The stress of the New Testament is upon fellowship rather than separation. The call is not so much to come out, as to come together.' ('*Fellowship and Separation*', *Decision*, August 1961, p.14).

**Answer:** New Testament fellowship is always among born again believers, not between believers and unbelievers. Many religious leaders that Graham fellowships with are committed unbelievers. But Graham persists in spreading the myth that they are Christians with different views on some matters.

2) **We must not honour false teachers as true Christian leaders.**

When Graham first launched his ecumenical 1957 New York Crusade, he described the sponsoring committee as 'Godly men who are seeking to reach New York's population with the testimony of the risen Christ.' (**Source:** *Herald of His Coming*, 28 November 1956, p.8).

One Committee member was James Bonnell who did not even believe in the bodily resurrection of Christ. (**Source:** *Supplementary Statement of James Bennett*, 1954).

How can one promote the 'testimony of the risen Christ' when one does not even believe in the 'risen Christ'? Paul called false teachers who denied the faith 'men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.' (II Timothy 3:8). Paul would never have had them lead his evangelistic campaigns. They are lost souls needing to be saved.

3) **We must not disobey the Scriptures in order to win souls for Christ.**

Many New Evangelicals feel that they can disobey Bible principles to get people saved. Their attitude is that the end (salvation of souls) justifies the means (co-operation with unbelievers).

**Note:** The main business of Christians is not to win souls. The main business of Christians is to do the will of God. But we must win souls within the context of Biblical principles.

**Example:** King Saul lost the kingdom because he justified disobeying God's command to **destroy the Amalekites' animals**, so that he could obey God's other command about the required **animal sacrifices**. (I Samuel 15:2,3).

Saul disobeyed God by substituting a good thing in place of the best thing, namely total obedience to God. Samuel's rebuke applies to us today: 'Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry.' (I Samuel 15:22,23). Billy Graham and his followers have justified their disobeying God's commands against working with apostates, with the excuse that they are winning souls to Christ. This thinking is against the principle stated by Samuel, that:

"sacrifices were good, only when done according to the will of God.

But sacrifices done contrary to God's will were not acceptable."

**Key:** So it is with evangelism. The Bible commands both evangelism and obedience to God.

We cannot evangelise in a way that disobeys God.

4) **We must not disobey the Scriptures with the excuse that we are showing God's love.**

Many New Evangelicals have a wrong definition of love.

They say that: 'The badge of discipleship is not orthodoxy (sound doctrine), but love.'

They claim that Fundamentalists are harsh, separatist, and abrasive, while they themselves are loving. Their wrong definition of love says: 'Overlook false doctrines and embrace almost everyone who claims to be a Christian. Don't criticise or condemn, just go along for the sake of peace.'

Jesus tells us that **love** and **obedience** walk together:

a) 'If ye **love** me, **keep my commandments**.' (John 14:15).

b) 'He that hath my commandments and **keepeth** them, he it is that **loveth** me.' (John 14:21).

c) 'If a man **love me**, he will **keep my words**.' (John 14:23).

God warns us to 'have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather prove them.' (Eph. 5:11). Preachers of false doctrines spread works of darkness because they keep people in spiritual darkness. To fellowship with them is to disobey Ephesians 5:11 and is **unloving** toward God.

5) **We must not seek to please false teachers in order to preach the Gospel to their people.**

One of Billy Graham's main defences is that many people from liberal churches hear the Gospel because their pastors and churches co-operate in the crusades.

This 'end justifies the means' methodology was not that of the early apostles when Paul, Peter and Stephen preached against the Judaizers.

'If I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.' (Galatians 1:10).

Men pleasers, such as Billy Graham, do not rebuke those preaching a false gospel such as salvation by infant sprinkling. Men may approve, but God does not.

**Key:** Billy Graham's sending his converts to churches holding false doctrines helps these false churches to grow in error by providing them with labourers to spread their errors. These labourers would be spreading truth if they were sent to sound churches.

6) **We must not Condone False Doctrine as if it were of Little Importance.**

The Roman Catholic Church teaches many heresies contrary to the Word of God, yet Billy Graham condones and encourages Catholic leaders to work with his crusades.

Charismatics teach false doctrines, such as new revelations, false healings, gibberish disguised as tongues, thinking that sign gifts are still operable today. Billy Graham endorses them as reliable Christians. John, the Apostle of love, was not only concerned about showing love to God and man, but also about **rejecting error**. He said: 'Try the spirits whether they be of God.' (I John 4:1).

'The spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.' (I John 4:6).

'He that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.' (II John 11).

Billy Graham rejects God's Word in order to expand his empire. Resist this temptation.

7) **Sound doctrine is more important than fellowship. True fellowship is based on sound doctrine.**

Doctrine has fallen on hard times. Many Christians consider key doctrines as unimportant issues, preferring to seek a false unity with unbelievers.

**Question:** What was the first thing that the Jerusalem church continued steadfastly in? 'the Apostles' **doctrine**, fellowship, in breaking of bread, and in prayers.' (Acts 2:42).

Paul charged Titus to 'speak thou the things that become **sound doctrine**.' (Titus 2:1).

Sound doctrine is doctrine that is not contaminated with error.

**Conclusion:** Ecumenical evangelism is contrary to God's program and principles. It is an attempt to unite that which should not be united. 'Can two walk together except they be agreed?' (Amos 3:3). 'What fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what fellowship hath light with darkness?' (II Corinthians 6:14).

God has separated light from darkness; truth from error; and no-one, not even in the cause of evangelism, should try to take down those divinely erected barriers.

## 22. **Loose Standards**

New Evangelicals advocate a more permissive, freer moral lifestyle than has been commonly accepted among Godly Christians. Traditionally, Godly Christians regarded as wrong such things as smoking, drinking alcohol, dancing, theatre going, gambling, petting and pre-marital sex. Many New Evangelicals, however, reacting against what they consider

excessive legalism, have allowed such practices. If we take a stand against these issues, we are called legalists. Paul speaks of the 'truth which is after godliness.' (Titus 1:1). Truth leads to Godliness. There is a powerful and vital connection between one's theology (the truth) and one's lifestyle (Godliness). Compromise in theological areas has led to compromise in lifestyles as well.

### **23. Marketing the Church to Give the Unsaved Community What They Want**

Some churches try to find what the community wants and they then adjust their ministry to the community's demands. The Apostles never surveyed the pagans in order to see what kind of church to build, as has Bill Hybels of Willow Creek Community Church. They followed God's pattern, not the pagans' self-centred demands.

**Question:** What do spiritually blind, rebellious unbelievers know about the proper nature of a church? Nothing. The kind of church desired by the average unbeliever may be the opposite to what the New Testament requires:

- a) The unsaved person wants a church that will make him feel good, but God wants a church that will make the person feel the heavy guilt of his sins so that he will repent.
- b) The unsaved person likes contemporary rock music, but God likes music that exalts Jesus Christ.
- c) The unsaved person wants a church with few standards or requirements, but God wants a church that calls people to selfless, sacrificial service. God does not invite the unsaved to critique His Church because they are 'haters of God,...proud,...and without understanding.' (Romans 1:30-31).

God's will for the local church's message, methods, and organisation is revealed in the New Testament. These revelations are not open to debate or correction by those with no spiritual discernment.

Many churches downplay the importance of commitment and obedience, achieving growth by compromising their convictions. 'Woe to them that go down to Egypt for help.' (Isaiah 31:1).

God rebuked Israel for leaning on the arm of the flesh instead of on the arm of the Lord. Many churches today fall into the same trap.

Many pastors preach man-centred sermons and not God-centred sermons, thinking that God-centred sermons are not practical enough. This is a serious error that strikes at the heart of Biblical theology.

**Question:** Is the Bible a God-centred book or a man-centred book? Was God's main purpose in revealing Himself to man, to bring honour to Himself, or to bring comfort to man? We must challenge people to salvation and to discipleship.

**Question:** Pastors, are you building a church that is honouring to God and is according to the Bible? Pastors must take care how they build, as I Corinthians 3:5-17 describes how to build a church. All pastors and church planters must give account to God for what kind of church they built. 'The fire shall try every man's work **of what sort** it is.' (I Cor. 3:13). The quality of each church will be tested and pastors will be rewarded according to the quality of the church ('of what sort it is') and not necessarily quantity (numerical size). The 'marketing concept' of giving unbelievers what they want, is not found in Scripture. The Apostles and early Christians simply preached the Gospel in the filling of the Spirit and God 'added to the church daily such as should be saved.' (Acts 2:47).

### **24. Church Entertainment**

Jesus said, 'Feed my sheep', not 'entertain my goats.' We live in an entertainment mad world where television has taught people to expect a thrill a minute. Many today believe that church meetings should entertain unbelievers, so that Christ is more palatable to them. The New Testament reveals an absence of entertainment in church worship and evangelisation. They emphasised what people need, not what they want. The early Christians met to

worship, pray, fellowship, be edified, and scattered to evangelise.

Many 20th Century Christians have become God's demanding little brats whose emotions must be entertained with amusing programs and the best the world has to offer. The *Wall Street Journal*, 13 May 1991, describes the program of the Second Baptist Church of Houston, Texas, as 'a Broadway-style show with a religious message. They offer as much activities and entertainment as they do religion.

In the place of hymns, teenagers sway and clap at "Solid Rock".

Biblically speaking, New Testament churches were marked by the Apostles' doctrine, fellowship, breaking of bread, prayers (Acts 2:42), preaching (Acts 20:9), singing (Ephesians 5:19), giving (I Corinthians 16:2), baptizing (I Corinthians 1:14-16), observing the Lord's Table (I Corinthians 11:20-34), and encouraging one another (Acts 14:22). The church's ministry is to be spiritual and instructive, not a sports or entertainment club.

**Note:** Some churches' growth is not always a result of evangelising the lost, but by rearranging the saints, playing musical churches, with people moving around to more exciting and larger churches.

**Question:** What has led to the rise in consumer religion and worldly church growth schemes?

- 1) The break-up of the monopoly of large denominations on religious life.
- 2) The glorification of success.
- 3) The vast commercialisation of our culture.
- 4) The effort of Christians to influence and imitate the culture.
- 5) The abandonment of God-centred theology in favour of an expedient, man-centred theology.

**Question:** What is wrong with the worldly church growth movement?

- 1) It uses worldly methods which give only short-term results.
- 2) Principles of business are revered more than doctrine.
- 3) They are not separated from those holding false doctrine. In order to gain more numbers, they will join up with Charismatics and with others holding to error.
- 4) They seek to make people feel comfortable with themselves by non-threatening messages, so that they accept Christianity as an affirming influence.
- 5) It defines success mainly by numbers of people attending.

### **25. Forsaking Preaching for Sharing**

New Evangelicalism has had a bad effect on authoritative preaching, replacing strong preaching with 'sharing ideas', and 'observations.' This is humanism in preaching. Modernists consider negative preaching to be a cardinal sin. They want the hearers to feel comfortable about themselves. Strong preaching, like a torchlight searched out the sins in people's lives, causing them to repent and forsake them. An example of wrong modernist preaching is how Robert Schuller of Crystal Cathedral learned from Norman Vincent Peale that we should avoid making people feel guilty (by rebuking sin), but rather make them feel good about themselves, and tell them how to succeed in life. This will draw quite a crowd. Much New Evangelical preaching today is centred on psychological themes such as: meeting a person's emotional needs; helping individuals achieve self-esteem; child rearing; solving relationship problems; how to do this or that, etc.

They will be less inclined to preach on sin, holiness, doctrine, premillennial prophecy, separation from error, soul winning, missions, etc.

The Bible was written to reveal the thoughts of God and to direct man away from himself and towards the Lord. Many preachers today emphasise 'my needs' rather than focusing us on **God's person** explicated from Scripture.

When 'preaching' is changed to 'sharing', one's attention is immediately diverted from **God's revelation** to **man's perception**. Older style preaching used words such as 'ought', 'should' and 'must', but today many people don't want God telling them what to do. They just want God and preachers to help them solve their practical problems.

For centuries Christians have found the answers to life's deepest problems by applying great Biblical truths about God and His works. Preachers, declaring the mind and purpose of God from Scripture, have met human needs as people submitted to God and to His Word.

Preachers must first begin with an exposition of what God says, then make application of it to man's personal needs.

One of the chief errors of New Evangelicals is their tendency to magnify experience over knowledge, so that experience judges knowledge, and sound teaching is neglected. Charismatics have led the way in this thinking and have sought to influence evangelicalism to be more experience based.

This is why so-called 'Christian rock music' is popular, because many people want to 'feel' something rather than 'learn' something. New Evangelical preachers rarely tell people what is wrong with the Catholic church, or 5-point Calvinism, or infant sprinkling, or charismatic errors, or Amillennialism. That would be too negative, confrontational and divisive. There are far too many 'trumpets giving uncertain sounds' (I Corinthians 14:8) in pulpits today. How then can believers prepare themselves to do battle when they don't know **who** or **what** is the enemy?

If someone is teaching error, a pastor or teacher should speak words of correction to them. Strong religious convictions are not popular today. Let us not be conformed to this world, but let us present our bodies as a living sacrifice to do and speak God's will and words. (Romans 12:1,2).

Hence, New Evangelical preaching can be summarised as follows:

- i) Neglecting to **warn against false doctrine**;
- ii) occupation with **psychology**;
- iii) '**sharing ideas**' instead of authoritative doctrinal preaching;
- iv) preaching on **issues**, instead of reasoned Bible exposition;
- v) preaching **what people want** (man-centred), instead of what they need (God-centred);
- vi) retreat from **dogmatism** of 'thus saith the Lord'.

**Question:** What are Biblical guidelines for preaching?

- 1) A preacher must be fully committed to the **inspiration** and **inerrancy** of the **Bible**. Much weak preaching is due to weak commitment to Biblical inerrancy. If a preacher doubts the Bible's inerrancy, he won't be able to preach it with authority and power.
- 2) A preacher must **preach expositively** as stated in Nehemiah 8:8: 'So they **read** in the book of the law of God distinctly, and **gave the sense**, and **caused them to understand** the reading.'

Hence the **three elements** of expository preaching are:

- a) What does the passage **say**? Read it and give its background.
- b) What does the passage **mean**? Correctly interpret it by applying rules of grammar, context, history and theology.
- c) What does it tell **me** to do? **Apply** it so people can live it and obey it.

**Benefits of expository preaching are:**

- a) It **holds the preacher to the text**, emphasising the inspiration of God's Word;
- b) It keeps the preacher from getting **side-tracked** into error;
- c) It helps the preacher to **cover many subjects** within the passage, rather than him concentrating on his favourite subjects;

- d) It produces **spiritual maturity** and **depth of Christian living** in the congregation if consistently practised over a long period of time.

Those who would preach like Jesus did, must be definite, clear, decisive and settled, as a herald (**Greek:** kerox (preacher) in II Timothy 1:11) conveyed the official messages of kings, princes, magistrates and military commanders (*Thayers Lexicon*).

- 3) A preacher must boldly **preach** against error: 'Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.' 2 Timothy 4:2.

Jesus, Paul, Peter, Isaiah, Jeremiah and other preachers all rebuked the errors of the day. God is opposed to preachers who 'speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the Lord.' (Jeremiah 23:16).

They are 'prophets of the deceit of their own heart.' (Jeremiah 23:26). Many modern New Evangelicals would not rebuke error as Isaiah said of Israel: 'Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters.' (Isaiah 1:4).

**Note:** Our aim is to 'speak the truth in love' (Ephesians 4:15). Some preachers in their zeal to take a stand, become mean, rude, nasty, insulting and arrogant in their pulpit ministry, harp on petty issues, and fail to feed the flock of God. God is entirely against arrogance such as this. **Only a Spirit-filled preacher who loves God, the Bible and people can display this right balance.** Because of the lack of sound doctrinal preaching (Titus 1:9) many believers are weak and tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine.

**Warning to Pastors:** Before you approve any Bible college for your church members, ask the College who the lecturers are and from where did they receive their theological training. Don't let your people attend a college where its lecturers studied at New Evangelical colleges. They will poison your students minds and turn them against you and what you believe.

A good minister of Jesus Christ will nourish up his people in the words of faith and good doctrine.

(I Timothy 4:6). Pastors, are you doing this properly?

## **26. Failure To Discipline False Teachers**

Many Baptist churches and unions of churches continue to honour and give equal recognition to pastors who teach blatant errors. A Sydney Baptist Union church was quite happy to tolerate two of its pastors who publicly stated their belief in evolution. Such men ought to be put out of the pastorate, because they are calling Jesus a liar in Mark 10:6 when He declared that humans were created by God, "But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female." God says in Romans 16:17 to 'avoid them' and not to honour them as good Bible teachers.

Many denominations give equal recognition and honour to all pastors alike, regardless of their theological views. This is wrong to honour false teachers.

## **27. Acceptance and Fellowship with Para-church Organisations**

Almost every para-church organisation has been infiltrated by New Evangelical errors. How can this be? Because of money and their need to draw students or workers from as wide a belief system as possible. Because they are not a church, they don't have people who give weekly offerings, so they must entice people from churches to come and work with them. This weakens local churches because such people are no longer under the authority of a local church, but are under the authority of a non-church organisation.

Para-church organisations, in widening their net to gain supporters, must go easy on error, in case they offend their supporters who hold false doctrines.

Consider the following example: Two New Tribes Mission families were being supported financially by a local church to go to the mission field. After a few years it became known that they were not presenting the Gospel until after a 2-5 year Bible course, nor were they

challenging sinners to pray to God to call on Christ to save them (Romans 10:13; Acts 2:21). When their supporting church pastor corrected them and told them to submit to their sending church's authority on these matters, they both refused and resigned from their local church in favour of staying loyal to the New Tribes Mission denomination.

Hence, it is a foolish waste of time, money and effort for a sound local church to support people who are not loyal to nor under the authority of the supporting or sending churches. Another bad effect of supporting para-church workers who are not fully loyal to your local church is that when you cut their support (because you discover that they are teaching error) this may lead to a split in your church when some people oppose you cutting the support of such "nice" people.

The attitude of para-church organisations is, 'The local church can do the hard work of winning the lost to Christ, then spend several years training them, then as soon as the convert is strong enough to be a worker to put something back into the church that helped him, the para-church group entices him to come and work with them. Their attitude is "You have minimal future in your church; come to us and we'll help you do something really big for God."'

Para-church groups do not have pastors, deacons, Lord's Supper, baptisms, a long term church membership, weekly offerings, independence of each local group, nor do they have doctrinal correctness (especially they are weak on or never mention the local church).

**Note:** Ask para-church organisations the question: 'Which local church's authority are you under?' They will reply, 'None, just our para-church headquarters.' They hence are working outside of Jesus Christ's plan when He said, 'I will build my church.' (Matthew 16:18). Para-church groups always believe in the false Roman Catholic idea of the universal church. This is wrong because:

- The universal church has never met and will not meet until after the rapture.
- How can you have an assembly that has never assembled?
- Most Bible references of "ekklesia" are to local assemblies. A few refer to the church as an institution (like the family). None refer to the universal church (except Hebrews 12:23 which takes place in heaven. This is the only place where the universal church meets).
- Although para-church groups believe in the universal church, they always ask local churches for money to finance their activities.

**Conclusion:** Avoid New Evangelical errors and expose them in your preaching, otherwise you will lose your people to New Evangelical churches or to para church organisations.

Notice four downward steps in compromise:

1. Toleration of error;
2. Co-operation with error;
3. Contamination by error;
4. Capitulation to error.

Which step are you and your church at today?

New evangelical philosophy has infected much of Christendom, that so very few Christians see the dangerous consequences. The downward path is best illustrated by the following.

Where are you on this slide?

The Christian recognises the error

He tolerates the error

He excuses the error

He defends the error

He condones the error

He embraces the error.

### Questions To Ask Pastors Or People To See How New Evangelical They Are:

**Q1:** Do you believe that the Bible today is **without errors**?

**Q2:** Do you believe in six-day creation 6000 years ago, rather than **evolution**?

**Q3:** Does your Pastor preach against the errors of the **Roman Catholic Church**?

**Q4:** Does your Pastor and church use only the **King James Version Bible** (or a foreign language equivalent based on the received text)?

**Q5:** Does your Pastor believe and preach **premillennial truths**?

**Q6:** Does your Pastor preach against **Charismatic errors**?

**Q7:** Does your denomination or church forbid **ordination of female pastors**?

**Q8:** Does your church support **overseas mission** soul winning, church planting projects?

**Q9:** Does your church reject and keep separate from the **World Council of Churches**?

**Q10:** Does your Pastor refuse to **fellowship** with those holding false doctrines?

**Q11:** Does your church or Pastor baptise adults by full immersion, rather than by **sprinkling water** on babies?

**Q12:** Does your church refuse to **join evangelistic crusades** with other churches which believe error?

**Q13:** Does your church forbid **rock music** bands?

**Q14:** Does your Pastor **preach separation from worldliness**, Charismatics and other errors?

**Q15:** Does your church have a weekly soul winning **visitation program**?

**Q16:** Does the **Pastor** regularly lead people to Christ?

**Q17:** Does your local church possess and own the **church property title deeds** (rather than the denomination having them?) If the denomination owns them they can put you out at any time they please. They control your local church. This is wrong.

**Q18:** Did the theological college where your pastor was trained, teach the above truths?

**Q19:** Does the **theological college** recommended by your pastor for students to attend, teach the above truths?

**Q20:** Is this college loyal to and in **full doctrinal agreement** with your local church?

**Answers:** The above questions should all have been answered with a YES, in order to be Biblically sound. Any NO answers indicate areas of New Evangelical error.

What did your church score out of a possible 20 correct answers?

### III. BIBLE RULES ABOUT SEPARATION FOR ALL CHRISTIANS

**RULE 1:** The Bible forbids us to fellowship with unbelief (Ephesians 5:11a).

'And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.'

II John 7-11 states that Christian fellowship should not be extended to religious unbelievers and apostates. 'If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.'

Many people in John's day called themselves Christians but did not hold the doctrine of Christ as set forth in Hebrews 6:1,2, (this being: repentance from dead works to be saved; faith towards Christ (who is God) for salvation; baptism with the Holy Spirit **at** salvation, and baptism in water **after** salvation; laying on of hands to set men apart for a ministry; resurrection of the dead; and eternal judgment in the lake of fire).

The Bible tells us to have nothing to do with those who don't hold the doctrine of Christ. 'Whosoever transgresseth and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God.' (II John 9).

This is a very serious statement showing how important God sees this matter.

**Definition of Apostasy:** A 'falling away' or a 'defection from truth' in Greek (646).

Apostasy means a departure from spiritual truth by individuals, churches or organisations which once possessed the truth.

The first two areas of apostasy are:

1. Departure from the inerrancy and inspiration of the Bible.
2. Disbelieving the Deity of Christ.

**RULE 2: The Bible Commands us to Reprove Apostasy** (Ephesians 5:11b).

One thing that irritates and upsets apostasy is the **criticism of apostasy**.

'Why be negative?' 'Why criticise apostasy?' 'Why not just be positive?'

Because Ephesians 5:11 says: 'And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather **reprove them**.' The Greek word for 'reprove' means 'to oppose', 'to show to be guilty.'

We are to **separate** from apostasy, and then to **expose it**.

Unbiblical apostasy always masquerades in respectable garments such as:

It claims to be spreading Christian love;

It claims to eliminate prejudice (eg: WCC fighting racism);

It claims to bring people together in unity;

It claims to be crusading for peace;

It claims to be cleaning up man's environment (by a social gospel).

It never unveils itself as hateful, ugly unbelief with a veneer of humanistic good works. God has given us the job of unveiling it and exposing it as error.

The spirit of today is 'don't be negative', but God commands us to reprove apostasy.

If you knew the bridge was washed out, your first responsibility is to avoid driving into the ravine, and your second responsibility is to warn others to avoid the danger.

**RULE 3: The Bible commands us to purge unbelief if we can.**

The Corinthian Church had a clear case of immorality. Most of the church was moral, but they had ignored one man's fornication, which corrupted their fellowship. If we tolerate immorality or unbelief, it will usually build a sympathetic following.

**Note:** God did not command the Corinthians believers to leave the church in order to separate from the man. Instead, He commanded the believers to purge the church of the unrepentant man.

I Corinthians 5:1,2,6,7 describes the situation: 'It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you . . . ye have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be **taken away from you** . . . Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven.'

**Key:** Church discipline is God's provision for keeping a church **pure morally and pure doctrinally**.

**Question:** Why do we have apostate churches and denominations today?

**Answer:** Because church discipline is rarely practised.

**Result:** Unbelief flooded into the theological colleges, flowed into the pulpits and trickled into the pews. Churches and denominations failed to stem the tide by failing to purge unbelief and false doctrine. The failure to practise Biblical discipline will always lead to the need for separation from such churches or denominations.

**Example:** When Robert Ketcham could not purge the modernism out of the Pittsburgh Baptist Association, he became a separatist.

**Question** Can you clean up your apostate church?

**Answer:** The Bible commands us to purge unbelief. But this is no longer possible in 95% of apostate churches. No person can possibly clean up the National Council of Churches. Its theological colleges are apostate, its denominational hierarchy is apostate, and its

connections are apostate. Fortunately, the sincere believer who seeks to purge the apostasy, will usually be put out by the apostasy and will end up a separatist.

**RULE 4: God commands Believers not to be yoked together in Spiritual Endeavour with Unbelievers.** (II Corinthians 6:14-18).

'Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? and what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.' (II Corinthians 6:14-18).

'Thou shalt not plow with an ox and an ass together.' (Deuteronomy 22:10).

The yoke was an instrument that joined two animals together in an endeavour. An ox is a reliable, hard-working, strong animal that is a willing worker. He well pictures a believer. An ass is a stubborn, unreliable animal that is difficult to work with, and uncooperative, who often wants to go his own way. He well pictures an unbeliever. God forbids both animals ploughing together. God also forbids believers and unbelievers allying together. This is because the unbeliever is not submissive to God's rules, but he makes his own rules as he sees fit, to the detriment of the believer.

You may be yoked with an unbeliever to produce a report at work, or to build your boundary fence, but you must not yoke with an unbeliever in any spiritual endeavour, even a money-making spiritual endeavour.

This passage (II Cor. 6:14-18) talks about righteousness, light, faith and the temple of God. These are spiritual or religious things. 'Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers.' (v.14).

'Come out from among them and be ye separate.' (v.17). Biblical separation is God's preventative medicine to protect us from the cancer of apostasy. **Separation** is to the whole ministry of the Word of God and the service of Jesus Christ what sterilisation and sanitation are to surgery.' (Paul Jackson).

**Objection:** Some sincere believer may say, 'I am the only testimony in this apostate church.'

Human reason says to you, 'I must stay, for if I leave, there will be no witness left in this church.'

**Answer:** Notice that your human reason is opposite to God's clear command in II Corinthians 6:14-18. God says, 'Come out from among them and be ye separate.'

If the lump is already leavened with error, you'll never change it. Nobody ever has in all of Christian history. You remaining in an apostate church encourages it to spread error.

**Objection:** But if I leave a secure, well-paid position in an apostate denomination, who will pay my salary to support my family?

**Answer:** God will. Trust Him as He promised: 'Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing: and I will receive you, and **will be a Father unto you**, and ye shall be **my sons and daughters**, saith the Lord Almighty.' (II Corinthians 6:17,18).

**Separation from Disobedient brethren.**

The non-separatist Dallas Theological Seminary desired to cease reprovng apostasy. This characterises the decline of every fundamentalist group because it tolerates and gives respectability to error, which then spreads through the group.

**Question:** Is it ever right to separate from individual believers? **Answer:** (See Rule 5).

**RULE 5: The Bible Commands us to Separate from Disobedient Brethren.**

**Question 1:** What is **Biblical Fundamentalism**?

**Answer:** 'Biblical Fundamentalism is the militant belief and proclamation of the basic doctrines of Christianity. This leads to Biblically separating from those who reject them.' (Source: "Axioms of Separation", John Ashbrook, Mentor, Ohio).

**Note:** There are three keys to this definition:

- (a) Militant belief - these basic doctrines are held as strong convictions;
- (b) Proclamation - these doctrines are not only believed, but taught to congregations and preached to the lost;
- (c) Separation - a man is not a true fundamentalist unless he practises separation where necessary.

**Question 2:** What is **New Evangelicalism**?

**Answer:** Harold Ockenga, its founder and First President of Fuller Theological Seminary, defines it:

'New Evangelicalism was born in 1948 in connection with a convocation address which I gave in the Civic Auditorium in Pasadena. While reaffirming the theological view of fundamentalism, this address repudiated its **ecclesiology** and its **social theory**. The ringing call for a **repudiation of separatism** and the summons to **social involvement** received a hearty response from many evangelicals ....It differed from fundamentalism in its **repudiation of separation** and its determination to engage itself in the **theological dialogue** of the day.'

This tells us that New Evangelicalism differs from Fundamentalism in three ways:

- (1) It repudiates separation;
- (2) It summons Christians to social involvement with the world. This traces back to the modernist Social Gospel.
- (3) It shows a determination to engage in theological dialogue with liberals and unbelievers. It says, 'We will not come out from apostates, but we will sit down and talk with them.'

**Key:** "Separation from apostasy" is the fork in the road between fundamentalism and new evangelicalism.

- a) Fundamentalism says 'Be not unequally yoked', 'Come out from among them', 'Be ye separate', 'Touch not the unclean thing', 'Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness.'
- b) New Evangelicals say, 'stay in', 'associate', 'infiltrate' and 'dialogue' with error.

**Question:** Which set of words is Biblical? Clearly the first.

Biblically, New Evangelicalism seems easily defeated, but overwhelmingly it has won the hearts of the 'Christian Public.'

Many Fundamental Colleges, publishers and churches of the 1940s are now mostly New Evangelical. New Evangelicalism has captured the mass of professing Christians with:

- (1) its appeal to man's intellect;
- (2) its offer of a non-controversial road;
- (3) its adjustment to the world's lifestyle, and
- (4) its use of the rich and famous.

**Objection:** Some say, 'We should not separate from other believers, because we will all be together in heaven.'

**Answer:** The difference between heaven and now is that in heaven we'll see sin as God sees it, and there will be repentance where we have been in error. When repentance takes place in heaven, there will be no trouble being together in heaven. But if that same repentance were to take place on earth right now, we'd maintain fellowship on earth. The one who divides the body of Christ is not the Fundamentalist who insists on obeying

the Bible, but the New Evangelical who insists on fellowshipping out of bounds with those in error.

Note these five key **commands** in Scripture:

- (1) 'let him be unto thee as a **heathen** man and a publican.' (Matthew 16:18).
- (2) '**Not to keep company**, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, covetous, idolater, railer, drunkard, extortioner.' (I Corinthians 5:11).
- (3) 'If any man teach otherwise . . . from such **withdraw thyself**.' (I Timothy 6:3-5).
- (4) '**withdraw yourselves** from every brother that walketh disorderly.' (II Thessalonians 3:6).
- (5) 'Mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned and **avoid** them.' (Romans 16:17).

**Question:** What is God's command about disobedient brethren?

**Answer:** Avoid them, withdraw yourselves from them, not to keep company, let him be as a heathen. In other words, separation.

**RULE 6: God's Work done in God's Way Produces only Good Results.  
God's Work done in Man's Way Produces Good and Bad Results.**

Religious magazines constantly tell us about the good done by New Evangelicalism. We read about thousands of decisions at Billy Graham's or Luis Palau's latest ecumenical crusade. Is New Evangelicalism now the official channel of God's blessing? Three observations need to be made:

- (1) **God never calls us to judge obedience by results**.  
God never commanded us to co-operate with apostasy and then evaluate the results. God says, 'Come out . . . and be separate . . . touch not the unclean thing.'
- (2) If something is to be measured by results, **we must evaluate all the results**.  
**Question:** What are other results of New Evangelical compromise?
  - i) When New Evangelicals breach the Biblical principle of separation, the **line between belief and unbelief is obscured**. For example, **before** Billy Graham's 1957 New York Crusade, the religious people of New York clearly knew which churches were fundamental Bible believing and which were not. After the crusade, that line was erased. People were then not sure which were sound churches. **Erasing that line was not good, but evil**.
  - ii) Because **unbelieving churches** co-operated with the Crusade, they **now have Billy Graham's stamp of approval**, and hence are now recognized as true churches. This results in spiritually hungry Christians being turned back into these modernistic churches. They starved in these churches before their conversion, and they have been pointed back to these churches to starve some more after their conversion, when they could be winning souls and bearing much fruit in a sound church. **Pointing Christians to churches with error is not good, but evil**.
  - iii) **Spiritual babes are left on the doorsteps of unbelieving churches**.  
Do you believe in abandoning babies on doorsteps to starve? Then how can you defend Billy Graham openly returning new converts to blind Catholic churches or apostate Protestant churches to be fed false doctrine? That is not good, but is evil.
  - iv) **People are weaned from service in their local churches**. Who wants to sing in a volunteer choir of 10 when they have sung with 2500 under a world famous director? Your local church of 100 looks very small compared with 50,000 at a crusade meeting. The New Testament emphasizes the local church, not the ecumenical crusade. Where is an ecumenical crusade in the New Testament?



- v) Pointing new Christians to churches with error **kills multiplication** of soul-winning Christians and **aids multiplication of error**. **It stops these new believers from becoming strong soul-winners** and it stops them from becoming **multipliers of disciples**. This is a most serious failure because we never see what might have been.

(3) **Results alone do not mean that something is the will of God**. For example, in Numbers 20, when Moses angrily struck the rock in order to fetch water, he had great results of God opening the rock to supply water that quenched the thirst of millions of people. However, because Moses disobeyed God's command to 'speak to the Rock' (not strike the rock as he did), God forbid Moses entering the promised land. The good results did not justify the wrong way in which the thing was done. Great loss resulted. In navigation, a small deviation in course would lead a ship hundreds of miles from its intended destination. In 1948, when Harold Ockenga set a new course for New Evangelicalism, he did not intend to make much of a course correction. He just intended to reject separation, add social involvement and win over some liberals. But this small deviation has sent many people to unite with apostasy.

It has multiplied apostasy rather than multiplying soul-winners and true disciples. Satan is always inviting fundamentalists to co-operate, join, associate, stay in and dialogue with error.

**Key:** We must separate from disobedient brethren who continue in toleration of unbelief.

**Why should we endorse believers who bring leaven into our churches, and break down the fences between truth and error by their endorsing of men who hold false doctrines?** Henry Crowell, who built the Quaker Oats Company, sums it up well:

'Workers and leaders must be intolerant of unbelievers in church office.

Faith must not support men in authority who, though they themselves are Bible believers, are tolerant of others in positions of trust & authority who do not so believe. The battle against the leaven was being lost in Christendom today because of tolerance toward believers who were tolerant toward unbelievers.'

**Key:** One ability every Christian needs is the ability to say 'NO' to error.

Satan is building his ugly one-world-church.

He aims to attach every church to this ecumenical monstrosity.

a) He started with the World Council of Churches.

b) To this he has tied in the Roman Catholic Church.

c) Also the Charismatic churches have been attached with the cement of the false tongues experience. If a Catholic priest speaks in tongues, Charismatics call him brother.

d) He has added New Evangelical churches with the cement of toleration of error.

e) Now he is adding heathen religions using the trick of praying for world peace.

f) The devil is applying pressure for your church to join this hideous ecumenical harlot. The only thing that will stop churches from being swept into Satan's counterfeit church is our ability to say 'NO'. Four rules on this are:

**RULE 7: Don't Affiliate Your Church with any Church, Mission, Movement or Evangelistic Effort Which Does not Fully Believe the Inerrant Bible.**

Beware of the 'Good Cause Syndrome.' Many groups will want your church to join them in promoting a good cause, such as opposition to pornography, abortion, communism, racism, etc. These are good causes that you may agree with, but, if you join up, it will ally you with Catholic priests, apostates and Charismatics.

**Question:** Why not join apostates to support a good cause?

**Answer:**

- 1) These groups want your support, but they don't want your Gospel or doctrines;

- 2) Compromise ties your tongue so that you cannot rebuke their errors;

- 3) You will teach your people not to rebuke error but to tolerate it for any reason.

**Example 1:** In II Chronicles 18, Godless Ahab trapped Godly Jehoshaphat with the 'good cause' trick. The Syrians held the border town of Ramoth-gilead. For the safety of both Israel and Judah, that town needed to be taken. On the basis of that good cause, Jehoshaphat joined with Ahab. Jehoshaphat could see that Ahab's false prophets were not men of God. When Micaiah, a true prophet, spoke God's words, Jehoshaphat was so bound up by compromise that he stood with Ahab instead of with godly Micaiah and he almost got killed in the battle. When King Jehoshaphat returned home to Jerusalem, God sent Jehu the prophet to rebuke the king: 'Shouldst thou help the ungodly, and love them that hate the Lord? therefore is wrath upon thee from the Lord.' (II Chronicles 19:2). Jehoshaphat said 'Yes' when he should have said 'No' to Ahab.

**Example 2:** In Ezra 4:1-4, when Zerubbabel was building the temple of God, their adversaries offered to help them. Building the temple was a good cause and help was needed. The adversaries claimed to worship God in some sense, but Zerubbabel correctly saw that they did not fully believe the Bible, so he declined their offer.

'Now when the **adversaries** of Judah and Benjamin heard that the children of the captivity builded the temple unto the Lord God of Israel; then they came to Zerubbabel, and to the chief of the fathers, and said unto them, **Let us build with you; for we seek your God, as ye do;** and we do sacrifice unto him since the days of Esarhaddon king of Assur, which brought us up hither. But Zerubbabel and Jeshua, and the rest of the chief of the fathers of Israel, said unto them, **Ye have nothing to do with us** to build an house unto our God; but **we ourselves together will build** unto the Lord God of Israel, as King Cyrus the king of Persia hath commanded us. Then the people of the land **weakened** the hands of the people of Judah, and **troubled them in building**.'

Zerubbabel's 'No' caused his enemies to trouble him, but it kept God's hand of blessing on the work. If you contract with an unsaved builder (who doesn't care about the gospel) to build your church, he can stop the job for any reason, demand extra money, sue you in court and send you bankrupt from interest and legal fees. No other builder will be willing to complete the job for fear of them being sued at a later date for the first builder's possible defective workmanship.

**Note: 'Evangelism is the soft underbelly of fundamentalism.'**

The line which has trapped more fundamental pastors into ecumenical evangelism is:

'Brother, this is for the cause of souls.' Don't allow any cause, even evangelism, to get you to disobey God's commands.

**Note: You can be for or against a cause without joining anything.**

You don't need to join a society to fight abortion. If you are uncertain about any invitation, say, 'Let me think about it for a while.' That will let you check it with the Bible and by prayer.

**Key:** Keep your church pure, so God can use you and it.

**RULE 8: Do not Affiliate Your Church with Any Church, Mission, Movement or Evangelistic Effort which does not Practise Biblical Separation.**

Missions and other groups will come to your church, seeking your monetary support. Some groups will seem to have good policies, but they will not declare themselves to be separatists. Actively reproving apostasy is a part of Biblical separation. If a group will not reprove false doctrine, it will lead to the assembling of a mixed multitude.

**Example 1:** Church growth seminars, counselling seminars, etc will draw their people from a wide range of churches. They will not separate from apostasy or false doctrines. The

fundamentalist at such a meeting will be seated next to Catholics, Charismatics or apostates. Why does that crowd feel comfortable together?

Because it has been quietly agreed that for the sake of their work, they will not reprove error or apostasy, and that Ephesians 5:11 will not be practised.

**Example 2:** Groups which preach indiscriminately in fundamental, modernistic and charismatic churches are saying to the whole community that: 'Fundamental churches and modernistic churches are about the same . . . they support the same things.' Examples include moral majority, Christian political parties.

**Question:** Why should we not join groups such as Moral Majority or Promise Keepers?

**Answer:** Because they will not practise Biblical separation.

Every fundamentalist knows that we are a minority. You can't practise Biblical separation and build a majority. The world's way is always to win with a majority.

**Think.** Can you think of any place in Scripture where God used a majority? Truth is usually in the minority in this evil world. The battles in Scripture were always won by an obedient minority (so God would get the glory, not man), and not by a diverse majority.

### **RULE 9: You Cannot Preserve a Position Without Crusading for it.**

Some fundamentalists want to take a stand quietly, without being offensive. They do not want to talk much about apostasy and separation. They do not want to be outspoken fundamentalists in the front line of the battle. 'Be positive' is their watchword.

Trying to take a stand, while remaining all positive, is the half-way house between Fundamentalism and New Evangelicalism.

Not being outspoken always leads to the weaker position, not the stronger one.

Many churches have become New Evangelical while trying to be silent fundamentalists.

Groups such as Billy Graham, Christianity Today, Fuller Seminary, Wheaton College, National Association of Evangelicals, and many Christian bookshops, have made a massive blitz to sell the Christian world on New Evangelicalism.

Fundamentalism met this blitz with a great silence. Many Bible believing churches were stolen by vocal New Evangelicalism. Early fundamentalists were fighters, and namers of names: 'Tell (Herod) that fox.' (Luke 13:32). They identified liberals. They quoted their false doctrines. They reprovved their apostasy.

New Evangelicals criticised fundamentalists for being too unkind to liberals, saying it was wrong to name names. (But Jesus often did. Check it!) Under pressure of this criticism, many of the fighting tigers of Fundamentalism have turned into the pussy cats of quiet Fundamentalism. Many a quiet Fundamentalist now purrs on the hearth of New Evangelicalism.

The last 40 years show that you can't preserve a position without crusading for it.

### **RULE 10: When in Doubt, Don't Join.**

Every Christian ought to be a member of a Bible believing church. If there are none in your neighbourhood, you should start one. If you don't have perfect peace about joining some church or group, don't join. You'll never have to apologise for what you don't join. Ask the 20 test questions to see if the church or group passes every area of Bible truth before you decide to join it.

### **RULE 11: What Separation is Not.**

**Separation is not the Answer to Every Disagreement Between Brethren.**

The traits God uses to make separatists strong (eg: reprovving error) must be controlled, or separation can turn to fragmentation. Notice 3 areas where separation is not the answer:

(1) **Personal Disagreement.** Believers should not separate over personal differences. The answer is face-to-face talking, confession, forgiveness, prayer and forgetting according

to Matthew 18:15-19. If pastors and people will settle their problems Biblically, they can have a long and fruitful ministry in the one church. Some pastors and people who can't resolve their problems, change churches every few years. Both the offender and the offended have an equal obligation to find one another and get things right.

(2) **Be patient with other believers as we all learn by making mistakes.**

Don't separate from believers for every mistake or differing decision they make. If a man dogmatically holds to error, it is time to separate. Please remember that we have all held wrong beliefs in the past which we would not hold today. We are all learning and growing. Show love to those who may not have come as far as you have on some issues, and help them to see the truth on these issues.

'In meeekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.' (II Timothy 2:25).

(3) **Difference in standards.** Some churches have minor differences in standards that do not contradict any Biblical principles. We should love and fellowship with them, in spite of these minor differences.

**Conclusion:** When we obey the Bible, we enjoy victory. New Evangelicalism takes God's Word and mixes it with human reason and modern culture.

The enemies of the Gospel today are actively seeking the support of the Lord's people.

These doctrine-free, false prophets of ecumenicalism invite us to co-operate, share pulpits, join campaigns, support good causes and reach communities with them.

The New Evangelicals have heeded their siren songs and gone over to dialogue.

The Fundamentalist, as the prophet of old, must see them as the devil's invitations.

Faithful pastors have never dialogued with wolves.

**Note:** If we cease speaking against error, this will cut us off from the fellowship of strong Christians who are fighting for the truth.

The unnamed prophet of I Kings 13:18 believed a lie because the lie came from a friend. I Kings 13 has three characters in it:

King **Jeroboam** (representing the liberal apostate crowd of today),

the **unnamed prophet** (representing the Fundamentalists of today), and

the **old backslidden compromising prophet** (representing New Evangelicalism who have decided to ignore and disobey God's command to separate from error).

**Question:** Would a brother lie to us?

**Answer:** Yes, many believers who intend to follow some unbiblical conduct say to us: 'We have prayed about this and we know the Spirit of the Lord led us to join this ecumenical crusade, etc.'

How do we know this is a lie? Rule 12 is the answer.

**RULE 12:** The **Spirit of God** has never led any Christian Contrary to the Word of God.

The New Evangelical comes to us as a brother, but his philosophy of ministry ignores God's commands such as: 'avoid them', 'withdraw yourselves', 'be ye separate.'

When he tells us that the Spirit of God has led him in this New Evangelical direction,

he is **lying** because the Spirit of God has never led one Christian contrary to God's Word.

**Key:** The most dangerous deviation is the one closest to your own position. New Evangelicalism sprang out of Fundamentalism. Jerry Falwell has swallowed the lie of New Evangelicalism by deciding that there is really no difference between fundamentalist and new evangelicals. This has led many to follow his path into compromise with error.

**Question:** Is it right to speak approving words about disobedient brethren from your pulpit? Is it right to allow the cream of your young people to be educated in New Evangelical Theological colleges and to be used in their enterprises? No.

**Question:** Why was God so severe on the young prophet, but did not discipline the old prophet for lying and causing the young prophet's downfall? **Answer:** (See Rule 13).

**RULE 13: God is most Severe on those whom he is Using at the Moment.**

God was not using the old prophet, but the young prophet was God's man of the hour, being used so greatly against Jeroboam. God had to treat his disobedience very seriously. The Bible believing, separated, fundamental church is God's instrument for today, but sadly, we are seeing some decline:

- a) Some fundamental churches are becoming more New Evangelical.
- b) Many fundamentalist meetings have less protest against error.
- c) Many fundamentalists are more tolerant of New Evangelical speakers.
- d) Some Fundamentalist's desire for souls and growth have opened the door to New Evangelical methods.
- e) Some Fundamentalist's music has more New Evangelical notes.
- f) Many Fundamentalists have adopted the silent stand and allowed vocal New Evangelicals to spread its message unrebuked.

God does not have to use Fundamentalists. If we forsake His truth, God can leave us lying in the middle of the road between the lion and the ass.

When Ockenga led the way in dialoguing with apostates and religious unbelievers, he led the movement away from the Word of God. You can't dialogue with religious unbelievers and open the Bible to say, 'Thus saith the Lord'. New Evangelicals took their movement away from allegiance to the Bible. Fundamentalists can put their finger on a Bible text and say, 'This is it. God said it, that settles it'. You can't say this if you work with liberals.

Many pastors have failed to impress these 13 principles on their people.

**Question:** What do we lose if we do not practise these Biblical principles of separation?

**Answer:** John's answer in II John 8 is that we lose our life's work, 'those things which we have wrought.' 'Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought; but that we receive a full reward.'

Many great fundamental churches have not taught their people these principles and they have now become New Evangelical churches overcome by much error, and are well on their way to reuniting with apostasy from which they once separated.

Teaching and practising these 13 principles is the only way to keep from losing your life's work in this generation or the next. If the fences are allowed to be torn down, the next generation will not know where they should be. Let us re-dig the wells of truth that have been filled in by the New Evangelicals (Genesis 26:17-25).

Source: '*Axioms of Separation*' by John Ashbrook, (with permission) 8686 Hilltop Drive, Mentor, Ohio 44060.

## 107. CALVINISM: Table of Contents

### 1. TOTAL DEPRAVITY. Ephesians 2:1 'dead in trespasses and sins'. (p.611,613).

Q: Does man have **free will** to receive Christ, and to do good? (p.610,613).

Calvinist inability to receive Christ is based on:

- i) John 1:13 'nor of the will of man, but of God.' (Ans: 'as many as..' John 1:12). (p.614).
- ii) Romans 9:16 'not of him that willeth, but of God' (Ans: John 5:40; Romans 6:17; Luke 15:24).
- iii) John 8:43,44 'ye cannot hear my word.' (Ans: Luke 15:24; Luke 16:23-28). (p.615).

#### Refuting Calvinists' 'Proof Texts' for Total Depravity

- i) Someone who '**cannot**' do something:  
John 8:43 'ye cannot hear my word.' (John 8:44,45,46,24). (p.615).  
John 14:17 'the world cannot receive.' (p.615).  
Romans 8:8,7 'in the flesh cannot please God.' (I Corinthians 1:21 preaching to save). (p.615).
- ii) Someone's '**inability**' but with a reason given for it:  
John 6:44 'except the Father draw him.' (Ans: John 6:45; 12:32; 1:9; 16:7-11). (p.615,616).  
John 6:65 'except it were given unto him of the Father.' (p.615,616).  
John 12:39-40 'they could not believe, ... He hath hardened their heart.' (John 12:37,39; Matthew 12:15; Acts 28:27). (p.615; 631-632).
- iii) Romans 3:11 'none that seeketh after God' (Ans: Acts 10:2; Isaiah 45:19; 55:6; Psalm 10:4) p.616.  
I Corinthians 2:14 'natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God.' (Ans: Eph.1:13)

#### Two Kinds of Scriptures that Overthrow Total Depravity Inability:

- i) Scriptures containing a **command to believe**: Acts 17:30; Isaiah 45:22; Mark 1:15; Matthew 11:28; I John 3:23; John 7:37; Revelation 22:17; Isaiah 45:19. (p.618).
- ii) Scriptures **implying the possibility** that a man can believe: John 5:40; I Thess. 2:16. (p.618).

### 2. UNCONDITIONAL ELECTION. (P.618-643)

Q1: Are men elected to salvation or not? (Calvinists confuse election and predestination with salvation).

Q2: What does the Bible say about God's decrees? (Ans: None involve salvation: Isaiah 10:1).(p.619).

Q3: What is the problem with Calvinists' view of God's sovereignty? (Ans: They exalt it above His other attributes). (p.620).

Q4: Has God from eternity past foreordained all things that happen? (Ans: Herod's massacre).(p.620)

Q5: Does God foreordain the time of one's death? (Ans: Isaiah 38:5; Ecclesiastes 7:17; Psalm 55:23).

Q6: Does God foreordain sin? (Ans: Jeremiah 19:3-5). (p.621).

Q7: Why does God bring evil on people and places? (Ans: Because of their sins). (p.621).

#### God Has Not Foreordained Everything In One All-Encompassing Decree Because:

- 1) God says so: 'neither came it into my mind' (Jeremiah 19:5). (p.621).
- 2) God's Holy nature would not allow Him to be the author of sin. (p.621).
- 3) God permits something when He is said to do it, eg: Satan provoking David. (p.622).
- 4) Man's responsibility is destroyed if God has predestined all things. (p.622).

5) Man's free will is destroyed if God has predestined all things. (p.622).

- See 10 examples of man's free will in Scripture refuting God foreordaining all.

6) Prayer changed things for Moses (Deut. 9:18-29); Hezekiah (II Kings 20:1-6); Righteous men

7) Calvinists' Admissions that it seems 'unscriptural, absurd, impious'. (N L Rice). (p.622).

8) Calvinists' Rejections. (p.622).

9) Other False Philosophies are same as Calvinism, eg: Islam. (p.623).

10) Semantics, accepted word meanings, eg: 'Whosoever' disprove it. (p.623).

11) Contingency verses showing the possibility of an event happening disprove it, eg: Matthew 11:21; John 5:30; I Thessalonians 2:16. (p.623). (eg: Luke 10:31; Deut. 22:6.

12) Chance disproves it. Some things happen by chance, not by foreordained decrees, (p.623)

13) Common Sense disproves it. If all was foreordained, nobody could avoid carrying out God's decree.

Unconditional Election Blasphemes God's Character in 4 Ways. (p.624).

Bible teaches Election to 6 Things. (p.625,626).

Three Systems of Calvinism: Supralapsarianism, Infralapsarianism, Sublapsarianism.(p.628,629).

Refuting Unconditional Election to Reprobation 'proof' texts (Jeremiah 6:30). (p.629).

- i) Proverbs 16:4 'The Lord hath made the wicked for the day of evil'. (Psalm 76:10).
- ii) I Thessalonians 5:9 'God hath not appointed us to wrath ...' (p.630).
- iii) I Peter 2:8 'stumble at the word ... being disobedient ... as they were appointed'.
- iv) II Peter 2:12 'made to be taken and destroyed ...in their own corruption'. (p.631).
- v) II Peter 2:17 'mist of darkness is reserved forever'. (Jude 13). (p.631).
- vi) Jude 4 'who were before of old ordained to this condemnation'. (p.631).
- vii) Isaiah 6:9,10 'blinded their eyes, hardened their hearts'. (p.631).
- viii) Romans 9:13 'Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated'. (p.632).
- ix) Romans 9:18 'Pharaoh ... whom he will he hardeneth'. (p.633).
- x) Romans 9:22 '... the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction'. (p.633).
- xi) Jeremiah 18:1-10 Potter = God; Clay = Israel; Marring of clay = Israel's disobedience; God remaking clay = discipline. (p.633).

Refuting Unconditional Election to Salvation 'proof' texts: (p.633).

**1. God's People.** i) Acts 18:10 'I have much people in this city'. (p.634).

ii) Revelation 13:8; 17:8 Book of Life. (p.634).

iii) John 10:14-16, 26 God's Sheep. (p.634).

**2. Given to Salvation.** iv) John 6:37; 6:39; 17:2; 17:6 Given to the Son. (p.634).

**3. Ordained to Salvation.** v) Acts 13:48 (p.635).

**4. Chosen to salvation.** i) Matthew 22:14 and 20:16 (p.635).

ii) John 15:16 'ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you'.

iii) Acts 9:15; 22:14 'He is a chosen vessel ...' (p.635).

iv) Galatians 1:15,16 'God separated me from my mother's womb'

v) I Peter 2:9 'Ye are a chosen generation.' (Exodus 19:6).(p.636)

vi) Psalm 65:4 'Blessed is the man whom thou chooseth..' (p.636)

vii) James 2:5 'Hath not God chosen the poor of this world'(p.636)

viii) 2 Thess 2:13 'God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation'

I Peter 1:2 'Elect according to the foreknowledge of God'(p.637)

ix) Eph. 1:4 'he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world'

x) 2 Tim 1:9 'grace...given us in Christ Jesus before the world began'

xi) Jeremiah 31:3 'I have loved thee with an everlasting love'(p637)

### 5. Elected to Salvation. (p.638).

- i) Jesus is called 'elect'. How is Jesus Christ 'elect' when He never sinned? (value, worth).
- ii) Angels are called 'elect' in I Timothy 5:21 'I charge thee before ...the elect angels' (p.638).
- iii) Israel is still called 'elect' in the New Testament: (p.638).
  - a) Matthew 24:22,24,31 'but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened'. (p.639).
  - b) II Timothy 2:10 'I endure all things for the elect's sake ... may obtain salvation'.
  - c) Luke 18:7,8 'Shall not God avenge his own elect ...' (p.639).
  - d) Romans 9:11,12 'purpose of God ... election ...the elder shall serve the younger'.
  - e) Romans 11:28 'As touching the election, they are beloved ...' (p.639).
  - f) Romans 11:5,7 'the election of grace, ... the election hath obtained it'. (p.639).
- iv) Church is called 'elect' nine (9) times in the New Testament: (p.640).
  - a) I Peter 5:13 'The church at Babylon, elect together with you ...' (p.640).
  - b) I Thessalonians 1:4 'knowing brethren, your election of God.' (Acts 16:9,10). (p.640).
  - c) II Peter 1:10 'brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure.' (p.640).
- v) Christians are called 'elect' 6 times in the New Testament: (p.640).
  - a) Romans 8:33 'who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect?' (p.640).
  - b) Colossians 3:12 'Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved ...' (p.640).
  - c) Titus 1:1 'Paul, a servant of God ... according to the faith of God's elect'. (p.640).
  - d) I Peter 1:2 'Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father ...' (p.640).
  - e) II John 1 'The elder unto the elect lady, and her children'. (p.640).
  - f) II John 13 'The children of thy elect sister greet thee'. (p.640).

Believers are described as elect, holy, justified, beloved and having faith.

Calvinists read unconditional election into every verse discussing election. (p.641).

- i) I Peter 1:2
- ii) Romans 8:29,30
- iii) Ephesians 1:4,5
- iv) II Thessalonians 2:13
- v) Acts 13:48
- vi) Romans 9,10,11

What does the Bible say we are predestined to? (p.642).

- i) Ephesians 1:5 'Son-placing' in heaven.
- ii) Ephesians 1:11,12 Praise His glory.
- iii) Romans 8:29,30 Conformed to the image of Christ in heaven.

Six Bad Conclusions about Unconditional Election. (p.643).

- i) Non-elect are predestined to hell.
- ii) Fatalism – Nothing we do makes any difference.
- iii) Shaky Assurance of Salvation based on decrees, not on Bible promises.
- iv) Missions and Evangelism change no-one's destiny.
- v) Confusing, unbiblical terminology.
- vi) Makes vain all preaching, holiness, comfort, zeal and Scriptures.

### 3. LIMITED ATONEMENT (p.644).

Question: Did God intend to save all men, or not? (p.644). Four Point Calvinism. (p.645). Calvinists' 5 arguments for Lim. Atonement. (p.646).

Two Old Testament examples proving the Atonement and its Application are different. (p.646).

- i) Passover lamb's blood was efficacious only after applied to the doorpost. (p.646).
- ii) Snake-bitten Israelites in the wilderness had to look at a brass serpent on a pole. Numbers 21:5-9

Calvinist argument 3 refuted – Christ died for Old Testament saints. (Hebrews 9:15). (p.647).

- Calvinist argument 4 refuted – Romans 5:17 says Christ's gift must be received. (p.647). Calvinists inconsistently define MAN, ALL MEN, ALL in:
- i) Romans 5:15 'offence of one MANY be dead ...gift hath abounded to MANY'. (p.647).
  - ii) Romans 5:18 'judgment came on ALL MEN ... free gift came on ALL MEN'. (p.647).
  - iii) Isaiah 53:6 'ALL we like sheep ... iniquity of us all'. (p.647).

Calvinist argument 5 refuted – John 3:18 'he that believeth not is condemned'. (p.647).

Christ died for 'the WORLD', 'ALL MEN', and 'ALL': (p.647).

- I. Christ died for 'the WORLD', eg: John 12:19 'The world is gone after him.' (p.648).
  - i) In John, the word 'world' occurs 89 times but never means 'elect'. (p.648).
  - ii) John 1:29 'Behold the lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of world.' (p.648).
  - iii) John 6:33 'and giveth life unto the world'. (p.648).
  - iv) John 3:16 'For God so loved the world..that whosoever believeth in him should not perish'.
  - v) John 4:42 'This is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world'. (p.648).
  - vi) John 6:51 'my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world'. (p.648).
  - vii) In Paul's letters, the word 'world' occurs 69 times, but never means 'elect'. (p.649).
  - viii) Corinthians 5:19 'God ... reconciling the world unto himself, ... committed to us.' (p.649)
  - ix) Galatians 1:4 'Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world'.  
Key: Paul differentiates between 'us' believers and the 'world'. (p.649).
  - x) In I John, the word 'world' occurs 23 times and never means 'elect'. (p.649).
  - xi) I John 2:2 'he is the propitiation for our sins...not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world'
  - xii) I John 4:14 'The Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world'. (p.648-650).
  - xiii) I John 5:19 'We know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness'.(p.650)
- Calvinist Objection: John 11:49-52. Are the 'children of God' the church or Israel? (p.650). (Deuteronomy 14:1; Psalm 82:6; Isaiah 43:6; John 7:35).
- II. Christ died for ALL MEN, eg: Matthew 10:22 'hated of all men'. (p.651).
  - i) Isaiah 53:6 'All' means the same in both places. (p.651).
  - ii) II Corinthians 5:14,15 'elect' are 'us' and 'we', so three 'alls' mean 'all men'. (p.651).
  - iii) I Timothy 2:1-6 Three 'alls' don't mean 'elect', because 'elect' is 'we'. (p.651).
  - iv) I Timothy 4:10 'Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe'. (p.652).  
This contrast between 'all men' and 'those that believe' occurs in four places:  
- Galatians 6:10 'do good unto all men, especially to them who are of the household of faith'

- Romans 3:22 'the righteousness of God ...unto all (100%) and upon all them that believe'.
- Titus 2:11,12 'the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared unto all men (100% of men), teaching us (the 'elect') that, denying ungodliness...'
- v) Hebrews 2:9 'that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man'. (p.652).

### III. **Christ Died for a Particular Group: His People, Sheep, Church of God, Many.** (p.653).

- i) **Many:** Matthew 20:28 'Son of man came ... to give his life a ransom for many'. (p.653).  
Matthew 26:28 'This is my blood ... shed for many for the remission of sins'.  
Hebrews 9:28 'Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many'.  
(Ans: Romans 5:15,19. Did Adam's fall affect all or only some of his descendants?).
- ii) **His People:** Matthew 1:21 'He shall save his people from their sins'. (p.653).  
(Ans: Matthew 2:6; Luke 1:68 'His people' = Israel)
- iii) **Sheep:** John 10:15 'I lay down my life for the sheep'. (p.653).  
(Ans: Matthew 10:6; 15:24 'lost sheep of the house of Israel'. Sheep = Israel).

### **Other Groups Christ Died for that Prove Unlimited Atonement**

- i) Those Christ died for **who will ultimately go to hell**. (II Peter 2:1). (p.654).
- ii) Those Christ died for that describe **everybody, all mankind**: (p.654).  
- Luke 19:10 'Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.'  
Are all lost or only the elect lost?  
- Romans 5:6 'Christ died for the ungodly'. Are all ungodly, or only elect ungodly?  
- Galatians 4:5 'To redeem them that were under the law'. Are all under the law?  
- I Timothy 1:15 'Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners'. Are all sinners?  
- I Peter 3:18 'Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust'. Are all unjust?
- iii) Christ died for **His friends**. 'that a man lay down his life for his friends'. (John 15:13).  
(Ans: Judas was one of Christ's friends: Matthew 26:50). (p.654).
- iv) Christ died for **whosoever believeth** may claim Christ's atonement. (p.654).  
- Acts 10:43 'whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins'.  
- Romans 10:11 'whosoever believeth in him shall not be ashamed'.  
- Romans 10:13 'whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved'.  
- I John 5:1 'whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God'.  
- Revelation 22:17 'whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely'.

### 4. **IRRESISTABLE GRACE** (p.656).

- I. Scriptures Refuting: Acts 7:51; Genesis 6:3; John 16:8; 5:40; 3:19; Romans 1:24; Matt.23:37;13:15
- II. Results of IG: Hopelessness; Wrong Conclusions; General & Effectual Call; Makes God a liar. **657.**
- III. Verses Calvinists use to support IG: John 1:13; Matthew 20:16; 22:14; Acts 13:48. (p.658).

### 5. **PERSEVERANCE OF THE SAINTS**. Arminianism; Lordship Salvation; 4 Definitions; Romans 9. (p.660)

## QUESTIONS TO ASK CALVINISTS

- Q1: How many of the 5 points of Calvinism do you believe?
- Q2: Does man have free will to receive or reject Christ as Saviour? (Revelation 22:17). (p.613).
- Q3: If man has no free will, and the non-elect cannot believe, how can non-elect people be held responsible for what they cannot do? (p.614).
- Q4: Why do men not seek God? Is it Total Depravity? No, it is pride. (Psalm 10:4). (p.617; Q5).
- Q5: Is a man responsible for what he is unable to do? Yes and No. It depends on why he is unable. **618, Q8**
- Q6: Would God offer salvation to men, knowing that they couldn't receive it? Are God's offers genuine? (Isaiah 45:19). (p.618; Q10).
- Q7: Are some men elected to salvation or are they not? (p.619; Q1).  
(Ans: No. Calvinists confuse election and predestination with salvation).
- Q8: **Does God foreordain sin**, suffering, the Fall, and all things? No. (p.619; Q2).
- Q9: Show me where God decrees some people's election or predestination to salvation or hell in the Bible? (Ans: There is no such eternal decree of God in Scripture. Isaiah 10:1). (p.619-620; Q3).
- Q10: If predestination is a secret decree of God, how come Calvinists know so much about it? Deut 29:29
- Q11: What is wrong with Calvinists' view of God's sovereignty? (p.620; Q5).  
(Ans: It means arbitrariness, and is exalted above His holiness, mercy and other attributes). (Q10)
- Q12: Did God eternally decree for Herod to massacre children under 2 years of age? Sodomy? Rape?
- Q13: Why does God bring evil on people or places? (Jeremiah 19:3-5). (p.621; Q14).  
(Ans: Because of their sins, not by any arbitrary decree).
- Q14: How could God decree and foreordain sin if it never came into His mind? (Jer 19:5). (p.621; Q15)
- Q15: Do you know 13 reasons why God has not foreordained all things? (p.621-623).
- Q16: Do you know 8 reasons why man has free will? (p.622; Q17).
- Q17: Does anything happen by chance? Jesus & Moses say so. (Luke 10:31; Deut 22:6) (p.623; Q19).  
(Response to Calvinist accusing you of being Arminian or Pelagian: You: "I believe some things that Arminius, Pelagius and Calvin believed. I reject some things that they believed.")
- Q18: What are 4 bad effects of Unconditional Election? (p.624).
- Q19: Is God just in electing some and passing by the rest? No. (p.629; Q25).  
(Ans: The Calvinist god is like the priest and levite who 'passed by' the half-dead man. (Luke 10:30-32). Did Jesus recommend their behaviour? No. Then neither does God behave this way. Jesus commands us to 'Go and do thou likewise'. (Luke 10:37), as the Good Samaritan did. Does Jesus practise what He preaches? Surely.
- Q20: Has God made two groups of men as elect and non-elect? (p.633).  
(Ans: No, because 'he fashioneth their hearts alike'. Psalm 33:13-15).
- Q21: When are people put 'in Christ', from eternity past or when saved? (Romans 16:7). (p.636).
- Q22: Can the 'elect' be 'dead in sin' and yet be 'in Christ' at the same time?
- Q23: Have the 'elect' ever been in danger of going to hell? (Calv. say No) **p637, 8. Q38**. (I Peter 2:6. **p.638**.)
- Q24: What does it mean to say Jesus Christ was 'elect' in Isaiah 42:1? Might this apply to Christians?
- Q25: Is Israel still called 'elect' in NT? Yes. (p.638-640).
- Q26: Why would Paul endure stonings, beatings, shipwreck for the 'elect' if they were sure to be saved? (II Timothy 2:10). Do you? (p.639).
- Q27: In II Peter 1:10 what is the significance of calling coming before election? 'Make your calling and election sure'. (It destroys Calvinism, as Calvinists think that election comes before calling). (p.640)
- Q28: In II Peter 1:10, how could man make sure what God has already made sure? (Ans: Calling and election relate to service). (p.640).
- Q29: What is the true meaning of NT election from I Peter 2:9; Exodus 19:6; Deuteronomy 14:2? (Ans: NT election is of the church as a body. As the nation of Israel was corporately elected as a body, so also was the church corporately elected as a body.) (p.641).
- Q30: Is your pay packet predestined? (If yes, why go to work?)  
Are souls predestined to heaven? (If yes, why don't you work to win them?)
- Q31: Show me one NT verse teaching that some are predestined to heaven? (Ephesians 1:5 adoption of children = son placing in heaven). See Romans 8:23. (p.642).
- Q32: Do dead babies go to heaven or hell? (p.643; Q47).
- Q33: Do you want all people to be saved? (Yes). Does the devil want all people to be saved? (No)  
Does God want all people to be saved? (Calvinists say No). Are you more merciful & loving than God?
- Q34: What two OT examples refute Limited Atonement by showing that the Atonement and its Application are to be distinguished? (Passover lamb, and brass serpent on a pole). (p.646).
- Q35: Do the first 'many', 'all men' and 'all' mean the same as the last 'many', 'all men' and 'all' in Romans 5:15; 5:18; Isaiah 53:6? (p.647). (p.652).
- Q36: Which 4 verses contrast 'all men' with 'elect'? (II Tim. 4:10; Gal. 6:10; Romans 3:22; Titus 2:11,12)
- Q37: What 4 groups did Christ die for, that prove unlimited atonement?  
(Ans: Those who will go to hell, everybody, Jesus' friends, and whosoever believeth).
- Q38: How does a Calvinist know if he is saved or not? (By Perseverance or Promises). (p.655; Q14).

## 107. REFUTING 5-POINT CALVINISM (TULIP)

“My wrath is kindled against thee....for ye have **not spoken of me** the **thing that is right.**”  
Job 42:7.

Calvinism or Reformed doctrine was completely expressed by the Swiss reformer John Calvin (1509-64). It is noted for its emphasis on Predestination and the Sovereignty of God. Martin Luther's views on the sovereignty of God were similar to Calvin's as seen by his tract on “The Bondage of the Will” which spoke strongly of Total Depravity.

After the Reformation, a reaction against Calvinism arose and in Holland, Jacob Arminius (1560-1609) taught a greater emphasis on free will. His 5 theses were condemned by the Synod of Dort (1618) which formulated the 5 points of Calvinism remembered by the acronym TULIP, standing for: Total Depravity of man, Unconditional Election, Limited Atonement, Irresistible Grace, and Perseverance of the saints.

**Question:** Is Calvinism Biblical? Does God want some to be saved, or all to be saved?

“God our Saviour; who will have all men to be saved...”

The man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all...” 1 Timothy 2:3-6.

“The Lord...is not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.” 2 Peter 3:9.

### **Five point Calvinists teach that:**

- God does NOT want all to be saved.
- Christ did NOT give himself a ransom for all.
- God does NOT love all the world.
- God wants most people to go to hell.
- God created most people to send them to hell, as a means of glorifying Himself.

### **The Effect of five point Calvinism is that it:**

- Presents God as unjust.
- Presents Christ as a liar and a false advertiser.
- Changes the doctrines of God, man, the Gospel, prayer and evangelism.
- Presents the God of love as a monster.
- Is a teaching that produces atheists.
- Has no remedy for sin for some people.

Once a person accepts that Total Depravity means “Total Inability”, they must accept ULIP. If man is not able to call on Christ to save him, then God must elect people unconditionally if anyone is to be saved.

Calvinists start with a wrong understanding of man's nature as having a will bound to his sin nature. They must then adjust the gospel facts to fit their theory.

The TULIP error seeks support from Scripture, but takes these verses out of context.

### **Question: What are the Errors of 5- point Calvinism?**

1. **TOTAL DEPRAVITY** of man, or **TOTAL INABILITY** of man.

(A false view of the nature of man leads to 3 other false views about God).

By Total Depravity of man, Calvinists mean “Total Inability of man” to believe or call on Christ to save him. Calvinists mean that sinners cannot come to Jesus Christ to receive Him as Saviour, unless they are foreordained or predestined to come to Christ.

### **Answer:**

a) We agree that man is totally depraved in the sense that he is “born in sin.” (Psalm 51:5); “he goes astray as soon as he is born.” (Psalm 58:3); “in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing” Romans 7:18.

b) We agree that man does not initiate any move to God and salvation on his own. “there is none that seeketh after God.” (Romans 3:11; Psalm 14:2,3).

c) We strongly disagree with “Total Inability of man.”

The Bible never hints that people are lost because they have no ability to come to Christ. Jesus said to unsaved Jews, “**Ye will not come to me**, that ye might have life.” John 5:40. Here Jesus states that lost sinners have the will to come to Jesus for salvation if they so choose.

If nobody has the ability to come to Christ, Jesus would have said, “ye cannot come unto me.”

Jesus wept over Jerusalem saying that **he would have** gathered them for salvation, but **they would not** be gathered.

“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,...how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as an hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not.” (Matthew 23:37). Not that they “could not”, but that they “would not.” Jesus laid the responsibility for them not being saved squarely on their own rejection of Christ. Jesus did not say that they were unable to come, but that they were unwilling to come. Their unwillingness to come was the cause of their damnation, not God's failure to elect them as Calvinists say.

d) Jesus in Revelation 22:17 invites all people to exercise their free will to come to Him for salvation. “And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.” Revelation 22:17.

“If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.” John 7:37.

If Jesus invited people to come, knowing that some were unable to come, he would have been guilty of falsely advertising something that he knew they were unable to take.

**Question 1: Objection:** Calvinists claim that **John 6:44** proves man's inability to come to Christ: “No man can come to me except the Father which hath sent me draw him.”

**Answer:** It is true that no sinner can come to Christ unless drawn by the Holy Spirit. We believe, however that Christ, through His Holy Spirit, draws every man sufficiently to Himself, to enlighten every man as much as is necessary for that individual to make a decision of his own free will.

Jesus states that from the cross of Christ issues a drawing power that all men experience. “And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.” John 12:32.

All men are drawn to Christ, in **4 ways**, but not all men will receive Christ as their Saviour.

a) **Christ:** The Bible teaches that all men receive light from **Christ**, enabling them to come to Christ: “That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.” John 1:9.

b) **Creation:** God calls every sinner to Himself through the witness of **Creation**, so that they are without excuse if they reject Christ. “The invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen; ...so that they are without excuse.” Romans 1:19,20.

c) **Conscience:** God calls sinners through the convicting voice of their **Conscience**, even when they have not heard God's Word. “their conscience also bearing witness.” Romans 2:11-15, **16**.

d) **Bible:** God calls sinners through the **Bible**: “The entrance of thy words giveth light.” Psalm 119:130



Hence, everyone who has ever been born, has been given light by Christ, by Creation, by their Conscience, and by the Bible (Canon of Scripture). To this light they are capable of responding, and are accountable to God if they reject Christ.

Hence Total Inability of man to come to Christ is a false doctrine without Biblical support.

### **Question 2: Does man have a free will?**

**Answer:** Total depravity is not so much a statement that man is a sinner in need of salvation (true), BUT a statement on the interaction of the will, heart, and mind.

**Question 3:** Is man's will governed and in bondage to his sinful heart and mind, as Calvinists claim?

**Answer:** Since man's heart and mind are corrupt, Calvinists claim that the will is incapable of choosing any good at all. Is this true? No, because of these examples:

i) Fallen angels were created perfect. If their wills were governed by their sinless hearts and minds, then they were incapable of sin. Yet the fact that they willed to sin proves that one's will is not governed by our heart and mind.

ii) Man was created sinless. If Adam and Eve's will were governed by their sinless heart and mind, then it would have been impossible for man to sin.

That Satan, fallen angels and man have sinned, proves that our will can act independent and contrary to our heart and mind, to decide to do evil. Hence our will is not governed by our heart and mind.

iii) We often make hard decisions of our will contrary to our heart (feelings) and mind (reasoning).

For example, we say 'This goes against my better judgment, but I'll do it for you.' If our will is not governed by our heart and mind, then we do have the power of choice, and we can choose to come to Christ.

**Question 4:** What if man does not have a free will? What a mockery it makes of Christ's offer of salvation: "Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely." Revelation 22:17.

**Question 5:** Would a loving God hold out the water of eternal life to thirsty souls if He knew they could not take it?

This would constitute false advertising and common deceit. **God is not dishonest !!!!!**  
If God asks honest behaviour of us, He will act honestly to mankind. Calling God dishonest is evil.

**Question 6:** The "Total depravity" idea declares that all men are totally incapable of any good deed or righteous act. Is this true? Can an unsaved sinner be kind, honest, caring etc.?

Yes. A lost sinner can do righteous acts:

"Not by works of righteousness that we have done..." Titus 3:5.

Good deeds do not earn merit for salvation, nor can they cancel the guilt and penalty of sin.

**Question 7:** Calvinists quote Ephesians 2:1, that we "were dead in trespasses and sins." **How dead is dead?** Calvinists say 'as dead as a corpse' so that man cannot hear the call of God. To resolve this problem, Calvinists must change the order of the process of salvation as follows: If natural man is so dead that he cannot hear the call of God to salvation, then before he can hear the gospel invitation, he must be given life. This act of giving life must therefore take place before the sinner can hear or respond to God. It is a decision by God in God's Sovereign Will to impart faith to selected sinners."

### **The Biblical order of salvation events are:**

- i) **God strives** with sinners, convicting them by the Holy Spirit of their sin. (Genesis 6:3).
- ii) **Man repents** of his sin, and **receives Christ** to be his all sufficient Saviour. (John 1:12).
- iii) **God gives the gift** of eternal life. (Romans 6:23).
- iv) The Holy Spirit enters a person the moment he calls on Christ to be his Saviour. (Romans 10:13).

### **The Calvinist order of salvation events are:**

- i) God **selects** certain sinners to be the object of His grace.
  - ii) God **does a work of grace on the sinner**, enabling him to be no longer dead and unresponsive, but capable of a true response to God.
  - iii) God **gives faith** as a gift to the selected sinner.
  - iv) The sinner then **believes** and is saved.
- Calvinists misunderstand Ephesians 2:8 to suggest that the **gift of God is faith**, and not eternal life.  
"For by grace are ye saved through faith (Greek: *pistis*, feminine noun); and that (Greek: *touto*, neuter pronoun) not of yourselves: it is the gift of God..."

**Question 8: What is the gift of God?** Is it salvation or faith? It is salvation because:

- a) Romans 6:23 says it is eternal life, not faith. "The gift of God is eternal life."
- b) In Ephesians 2:8 the Greek word "that" is neuter. This shows us that "that which is not of yourselves" cannot be referring to faith which is feminine, but to something which is neuter, such as salvation and eternal life.

### **Question 9: In what sense is man dead in trespasses and sin?**

- a) By separation from God. Adam and Eve were separated from God after the fall, but they still heard God's voice in the conversation in Genesis 3:8-24:  
"And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden." Genesis 3:8.  
Even murderously unregenerate Cain could hear the voice of God in Genesis 4:6-15.
- b) By his wayward life, as the prodigal son was separated from his father:  
"For this my son was dead, and is alive again." Luke 15:24.
- c) Not annihilation, because the dead in hell can still speak (Ezekiel 32:20,21; Luke 16:19-31).

Hence, unsaved man is dead in sin, but sinners have the ability to respond. In the grace of God, provision has been made for his cleansing and quickening the moment he looks to Christ and cries "Lord, save me!" (Luke 23:42 and Isaiah 45:22).

**Question 10: Is faith a work?** If the sinner believes before being saved, isn't he doing something to get salvation? Does believing in Christ constitute works? No, because:

"Therefore it is of faith, that it may be by grace." Romans 4:16.

"And if by grace, then is it no more of works." Romans 11:6.

"This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent." John 6:29.

Hence faith is not a work a sinner does to merit salvation.

### **TOTAL DEPRAVITY** (Completely Crooked) = **TOTAL INABILITY**

**When a Calvinist says he believes in Total Depravity, he is giving you a smoke screen to cover what he really believes. He believes that 'man is unable to repent and believe the Gospel as God commands him'**

**Importance:** Total Depravity is the foundation of Calvinism.

The 3 key parts are: Total Depravity, Unconditional Election and Irresistible Grace. T necessitates U&I.

If all men are unable to repent and believe the Gospel, then it logically follows that if anyone is to be saved then God must first determine who they are by electing some to salvation (Unconditional Election) and then “irresistably” overcome their “inability” (by Irresistible Grace).

So if Total Depravity (Inability) is true, then there is nothing anybody can do except claim Lamentations 3:26 as their life verse,

“It is good that a man should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the Lord.”

If Total Depravity is true, all one can do is hope that he is the subject of Unconditional Election, and if he is, then quietly wait for God to save him by Irresistible Grace.

The Calvinist, by recognizing that **most Christians believe in man’s depravity and sinfulness**, gains adherents to his position by focusing on Total Depravity instead of its supposed result, Total Inability.

Calvinists then insist if we deny their doctrine of Total Depravity, then we must believe in some form of salvation by works, and thus weakening the doctrines of sin and the Fall.

Because of Adam’s fall, unsaved man has imputed sin (Rom. 5:12-19), natural sin (Eph. 2:3), personal sin (Rom.3:23), physical death (I Cor.15:21), spiritual death (Eph.2:1), & eternal death (Rev. 20:14-15). He is dead: “And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.” Ephesians 2:1.

The Bible says the following about man’s sinfulness:

i) This spiritual death began before birth:

“Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.” Psalm 51:5.

ii) This spiritual death is present at birth:

“The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies.” Ps58:3

iii) This spiritual death is manifest in youth:

“The imagination of man’s heart is evil from his youth.” Genesis 8:21.

iv) This human depravity is universal: “For all have sinned & come short of the glory of God.” Rom. 3:23

v) Inside, man is a dark pit of sin and wickedness:

“That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness.” Mark 7:20-23.

vi) These come from the heart because the heart is corrupt: “The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?” Jeremiah 17:9; Ecclesiastes 8:11.

vii) It is not man’s wicked deeds that make him depraved, but his depraved heart is the cause of his wicked deeds. Man’s best unregenerate efforts are not good enough.

“Every man at his best state is altogether vanity.” Psalm 39:5.

“But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags.” Isaiah 64:6.

viii) Because of man’s depraved heart, everything man does is tainted with sin:

“An high look, and a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked is sin.” Proverbs 21:4.

“The sacrifice of the wicked is abomination.” Proverbs 21:27.

ix) The true tendency of man’s depraved nature is a constant increase in the habits and practice of wickedness, unless restrained by God’s grace: “Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil.” Ecclesiastes 8:11.

Scripture describes unsaved man as ungodly (Romans 5:6), children of disobedience (Colossians 3:6), children of wrath (Ephesians 2:3), servants of sin (Romans 6:20), abominable and filthy (Job 15:15), foolish, disobedient, deceived (Titus 3:3), sheep gone astray (Isaiah 53:6), a troubled sea whose waters cast up mire and dirt (Isaiah 57:20), mouth full of bitterness and cursing (Romans 3:14), no fear of God before their eyes (Romans 3:18), blinded by Satan (2 Corinthians 4:4), his thoughts are vanity (Psalm 94:11), and as speaking perverse things (Acts 20:30).

Two ideas as to how a man can be saved are:

a) Bible: “Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved.” (Acts 16:31).

b) TULIP Calvinism: The sinner hopes he is one of the elect and then waits for God to save him if he is. (Lamentations 3:26).

**Key Question:** Does man have the free will to receive or reject Jesus Christ as his Saviour?

**Answer:** Total Depravity insists that man does not have a free will to receive Christ as his Saviour, nor indeed to do any good at all. Calvinists believe that man’s will is in bondage to his sinful nature, and may only choose between the greater and lesser evils. They base this on their understanding of the premise that man is “dead in trespasses and sins.” Ephesians 2:1.

To convince skeptics that the Calvinist doctrine of free will is correct, he first invents a caricature of “uncaused choice” of the Arminian position. He then uses the “guilt by association” argument to associate their opponents with Catholics, Arminians, Finneyites and Pelagians (the idea that man did not have a natural tendency towards sin. The Bible teaches the opposite in Romans 3:9-18).

4 things wrong with the Calvinist error that the natural man can only act according to his nature are:

i) Saved man: If an unsaved man is like a “corrupt tree” (Matt. 7:17) that can only produce rotten fruit, then a saved man must be like a “good tree” (Matt. 7:17) that can only produce “good fruit.”

**Question:** Does a saved man always produce good fruit? No.

Does a man stop sinning when he is saved? No. Do some Christians produce bad fruit? Absolutely!

ii) One would think that man’s “total inability” would be rectified by salvation since all Calvinists claim the natural man had “inability” and the saved man had “ability.” But Paul still acknowledged his “inability” after his salvation: “For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not...” Romans 7:15. This is true of all Christians: “For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit....so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.” Galatians 5:17. So even the elect have “inability.”

iii) After the fall, unsaved man lost his living spirit, but gained a conscience- a knowledge of good and evil (Genesis 2:25 and 3:7). Conscience explains why depraved man does not always express the full evil of his sin nature. A false view of man’s nature after the fall leads to the false Calvinist teaching that man is unable to act contrary to his nature.

- iv) **Man has ability in the state of depravity**, as seen from:
- A sinner who has never heard the gospel has “ability” because of his **conscience**:  
 “For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law...their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the meanwhile accusing or else excusing one another.” Romans 2:14,15.  
 This accusing and excusing proves that the fallen conscience still faces the choice between doing good or evil.
  - Jesus stated a principle that appeals to man’s free will: “If any man **will do his will**, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.” John 7:17.  
 Whenever the heart is right, God gives the ability to know God’s truth.
  - Many Scriptures show that unsaved men do have the ability to do good.  
 - “A good man leaveth an inheritance to his children’s children...” Proverbs 13:22.  
 - “But glory, honour and peace to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile.” Romans 2:10.  
 - “Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.” 1 Peter 2:18.  
 - “If ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.” Luke 6:33.  
 - God stated that the wicked could do good: “God came to Laban the Syrian in a dream by night, and said unto him, Take heed that thou speak not to Jacob either good or bad.” Gen. 31:24.  
 - Jesus said that good deeds may be done with a wicked heart:  
 “If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children...” Matthew 7:11.  
 A deed can be good no matter what the motive.

**Question:** If unsaved men can do good, how do the above Scriptures fit with other Scriptures saying that no one does any good? (Ecclesiastes 7:20; Romans 3:12).

**Answer:** Total Depravity does not mean that there is no good in man, but that there is no good in man that can earn his salvation.

Man sins because of his own desire, not because his will can only follow his nature. (Romans 6:16).

“Every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.” James 1:14.

Several steps occur when any man sins:

- Presentation,
- Illumination as to whether it is right or wrong,
- Debate,
- Decision,
- Action.

**Key:** The unsaved man sins because he yields to his depraved nature and chooses to sin, not because he is unable to do good.

When faced with such clear evidence of man’s free will, the Calvinist retreats and admits that man has free will, but not pertaining to his acceptance of salvation. If we dispute this Calvinist claim they accuse us of denying salvation by grace and endorsing works for salvation or of making man his own saviour.

**Question:** If man cannot believe, then how can he be held responsible for what he cannot do?

The Calvinist idea that man cannot accept Jesus Christ of his own free will, is based on 2 pillars:

i) **John 1:13** ‘were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.’

The 2 phrases “nor of the will of man” (John 1:13) and “it is not of him that willeth” (Romans 9:16), are applied by Calvinists to the will of man to receive Jesus Christ. ie: that man does not have a free will when it comes to salvation. Calvinists have taken the phrase “received him” out of John 1:12 and substituted it for “born” in v.13, giving:

“which received him, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.”

**John 1:13** gives the source of the new birth, not the reason why men receive Christ.

- The source of the new birth is not of blood, not physical generation, inheritance or natural descent.
- The source of the new birth is not of the will of flesh, not reformation, self-development or self-effort.
- The source of the new birth is not of the will of man, not relatives, preachers or priests.
- The source of the new birth is “of God”, not of man.

**Question:** Why does God give anyone the new birth?

**Answer:** God gives the new birth to “as many as received him.” v.12.

**Conclusion:** The new birth is God’s work, but receiving Christ is man’s responsibility.

ii) ‘So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy.’ (**Romans 9:16**). Calvinists apply the phrase “not of him that willeth” to claim that man does not have the will to receive Christ and salvation.

The Bible shows that man has the ability to respond to the gospel while in a state of depravity:

- “But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.” (Romans 6:17).

The reason men don’t receive Christ is not because they have the inability, but because they will not:

“And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.” John 5:40.

By comparing a lost sinner to a dead man, a baby, and a creature, Calvinists attempt to prove that man has inability to repent and believe the gospel.

a) **Dead man:** “You hath he quickened who were dead in trespasses and sins.” (Ephesians 2:1).

All Calvinists compare Total Depravity to a physically dead man or to Lazarus (John 11:43,44), saying “A corpse does not cry out for help.” This may be true of physically dead men, but spiritually dead people are still biologically active and alive, able to walk, talk and fulfil desires. A spiritually dead man can lift up his eyes, see, speak, pray, hear, reason, and feel torment (Luke 16: 23-28). A true analogy showing how a sinner is “dead in trespasses and sins” (Ephesians 2:1) is the prodigal son who “was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found.” (Luke 15:24).

b) **Baby:** “Except a man be born again he cannot see the Kingdom of God.” (John 3:3). Some Calvinists liken regeneration to the birth of a baby to prove Total Depravity. Physical birth brings into the world a personality which had no existence before conception, but one who is regenerated did have a complete living personality before he was born again.

**Question:** Is a baby responsible for any of its actions before it is born? NO! Then neither would an unsaved man be responsible for any of his actions, if the analogy were true.

c) **Creature:** Calvinists analogise that just as any creature cannot cause its own creation, neither can any individual make himself a new creature in Christ. This analogy is false because regeneration is not creating a person with no prior existence, but is the renewing and restoring of a person whom sin had unfitted for communion with God.

**All these 3 analogies break down because of responsibility:**

**Question:** Is an uncreated creature responsible for anything? No.  
Is an unregenerate sinner responsible for anything? Yes.

### **Refuting 3 Types of Calvinist “Proof Texts” for Total Depravity**

Calvinists assume that these cannot do something because of Total Depravity, which is Total Inability.

i) Someone who **“cannot” do something**

- **John 8:43** “Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because **ye cannot hear my word.**”
- **John 14:17** “Even the Spirit of truth: whom the world **cannot receive**, because it seeth him not,”
- **Romans 8:8** “So then they that are in the flesh **cannot please God.**”

**Question 1:** Who does **John 8:43** refer to? **“ye cannot hear my word.”**

**Answer:** Not all mankind, but **unbelieving Jews**. They could not hear Christ’s word. Why?

- not because they were **unregenerate** (Acts 26:18),
- not because they were **of their father the devil** (John 8:43);
- not because they were **“not of God”** (John 8:47), **BUT**
- because **they did the lusts of their father** (John 8:44), and
- because **they did not believe Christ** when he told them the truth (John 8:45,46).

Their inability was not foreordained, but conditional on believing that Jesus was I AM. (John 8:24).

**Question 2:** In **John 14:17** what does the phrase mean, “whom the **world cannot receive**”?

**Answer:** The world cannot receive the Holy Spirit’s enlightening, not because they are non-elect or have total inability, but because “it seeth him not, nor knows him,” meaning because they judge by their physical senses. They walk by sight, not by faith. What they cannot see, hear, taste or feel, makes no impression on them. Because they cannot see the Holy Spirit operating, they conclude that His influence is delusive. Hence they cannot receive Him.

**Question 3:** In **Romans 8:7,8** what does the phrase mean “Because the carnal mind is **enmity against God**... They that are in the flesh **cannot please God**.”

Calvinists say that “**enmity against God**” is **total depravity**, and “**cannot please God**” is **total inability**.

**Answer:** This means that unsaved man cannot do anything good enough to please God to merit or earn his own salvation. The flesh cannot be reformed, improved, trained or changed unless God changes it. The passage is not saying that because of this “inability,” a person cannot receive Christ. God is pleased when sinners receive the Gospel:

“it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.” 1 Corinthians 1:21.

ii) Someone’s “inability” but with a **reason given** for it:

- **John 6:44** “**No man** can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me **draw him.**”
- **John 6:65** “**No man** can come unto me, except it were **given unto him of my Father.**”
- **John 12:39-40** “Therefore they **could not believe**, because Esaias said again, He hath blinded their eyes, and **hardened their heart**; that they should not see with their eyes, not understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.”

**Question 4:** What does **John 6:44** mean: ‘No man can come to me **except the Father draw him**’? and ‘No man can come unto me, **except it were given unto him of my Father.**’ **John 6:65.**

John 6:44 is the main Calvinist proof text for **Irresistible Grace**. John 6:44 is a major Calvinist proof text for **Total Depravity**, because it gives a reason for the sinner’s inability to come to Christ as being the **lack of an ‘irresistible effectual call’ by God the Father**. Calvinists teach that the ‘drawing’ in John 6:44 is Irresistible Grace. By misapplying v.44 to salvation in this Church age, Calvinists claim that, if God draws all men, then all men will be saved. Therefore, they conclude that God only draws the ‘elect’, those whom He has given to the Son (John 6:37).

**Answer:** This ‘drawing’ is amplified by 2 verses in the context:

a) ‘It is written in the prophets, And **they shall be all taught of God**. Every man, therefore, that hath heard and hath learned of the Father, **cometh unto me.**’ (John 6:45).

b) The other is **John 6:65**. ‘No man can come unto me, **except it were given unto him of my Father.**’

In support of Christ’s statement in 6:44, Jesus appeals to Isaiah 54:13 by quoting it in John 6:45,

‘And **all thy children shall be taught of the LORD**; and great shall be the peace of thy children.’ (Isaiah 54:13). This verse refers to **restored Israel in the Millennium** as the entire chapter shows,

**not to the ‘elect’ in the church age**. The ones given to Christ are **Jewish disciples during Christ’s public ministry**, not ‘elect’ in the Church age. Doctrinally, these verses are still **before Calvary**.

The New Testament has not yet been instituted (Matthew 26:28) and the Holy Spirit has not yet been given (John 7:39). Hence the Calvinist error in John 6:44 is two-fold:

- a) They **misapply John 6:44** from its correct context as being in **Christ’s earthly ministry to Israel**, to a doctrinal statement on **Salvation in the Church age**.
- b) They make the drawing of God irresistible and **equate it with Salvation**. Acts 7:51 shows God’s grace is resistible. “ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye.”

**Note:** That **John 6:44** is a pre-crucifixion passage directly referring to God’s true elect (**the Jews**), can be seen by the change taking place at the end of Christ’s public ministry after the Jews rejected Him. ‘And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, **will draw all men unto me.**’ (John 12:32).

**Key:** Calvinists don’t understand that in **John 6:44 it is the Father who draws people to Christ during His 3 year ministry**, but in **John 12:32 it is Christ who draws all men to Himself after Calvary**. Not only did Christ’s **death** refer to more than the ‘elect,’ but His **birth** did also:

‘That was the true light, which **lighteth every man** that cometh into the world.’ (John 1:9).

**Note:** Instead of the Father drawing men during Christ's 3 year ministry, the lifting up of Christ on the cross is followed by the Holy Spirit's work in the Church age of "When he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment." (John 16:7-11).

The Holy Spirit will "reprove the WORLD of sin," not just reprove the 'elect.'

**John 12:39-40** 'Therefore they could not believe, **because** that Esaias said again, He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their hearts; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.' Calvinists claim that the reason why some 'could not believe' was because God 'blinded their eyes', calling it Unconditional Election to Reprobation (Predestination to hell). This will be explained later.

Calvinists often appeal to another 2 verses to teach Total Depravity.

iii) **Romans 3:11** 'There is **none that understandeth**, there is **none that seeketh after God**.' Calvinists correctly grant the initiative to God in saving sinners. John 3:16; Romans 5:8; 1 John 4:19. But to conclude from this that a sinner cannot believe the Gospel when confronted with it, is wrong.

**Answer:** There are 3 errors of Calvinists in using this phrase to teach Total Depravity.

- 1) The intent of the passage is not to teach man's inability;
- 2) Nothing is said about people not being able to seek God;
- 3) Seeking God is different from believing the Gospel.

**Firstly**, Calvinists forget that Paul in establishing the universal guilt of Jews and Gentiles in Romans 3, quotes from the Old Testament for the purpose of giving weight to his arguments.

He is not charging every member of humanity with every sin.

He is not teaching the inability of unsaved people to receive Christ. eg: Cornelius, an unregenerate sinner (Acts 11:14), was a 'just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report.' (Acts 10:22).

He was a 'devout man, and one that feareth God with all his house.' (Acts 10:2).

**Secondly**, nothing is said in this phrase, verse or context about anyone not being able to seek God, although this is how every Calvinist reads it. The Bible commands men to seek God in these verses:

- 'Seek ye the Lord while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near.' (Isaiah 55:6).
- 'Seek ye me, and ye shall live.' (Amos 5:4).
- 'Seek ye the Lord, all ye meek of the earth.' (Zephaniah 2:3).
- God set the bounds of the nations so 'that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him.' (Acts 17:26,27).
- 'Seek the Lord and his strength, seek his face continually.' (1 Chronicles 16:11).
- Those who seek God will find Him: 'Ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me, with all your heart.' (Jeremiah 29:13).
- God 'is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.' (Hebrews 11:6).
- 'Blessed are they that...seek him with the whole heart.' (Psalm 119:2). (2 Chronicles 12:14).
- It is evil not to seek God: 'he did evil, because he prepared not his heart to seek the Lord.'
- 'They entered into a covenant to seek the Lord God . . . Whosoever would not seek the Lord. God of Israel should be put to death.' (II Chronicles 15:12,13).

- These commands to seek God are not in vain: 'I said not unto the seed of Jacob, seek ye me in vain.' (Isaiah 45:19).

**Note:** This does not mean that a man who has rejected God will be able to find Him whenever he desires: 'Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me.' (Proverbs 1:28).

**Finally**, seeking God is not the same thing as believing the Gospel. Seeking God is not enough,

eg: A Jew who seeks God by keeping the Old Testament Commandments is just as lost as Gentiles who don't seek God. Salvation is never obtained by seeking God, but by receiving Christ as your Saviour: 'If ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins.' (John 8:24).

'no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.' (John 14:6).

**Key Question 5:** If the reason men don't seek God is not because they are Totally Depraved, then what is it?

**Answer:** The reason men don't seek God is simple: 'The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.' (Psalm 10:4).

iv) **I Corinthians 2:14** 'But the natural man **receiveth not** the **things** of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.'

Calvin concluded from this verse that 'faith is not something that depends on our decision, but it is something given by God.' (*Commentaries, Vol 9, p 62*).

Calvinists, to teach Total Inability read this verse as: 'But the natural man receiveth not Jesus Christ: for he is foolishness unto him: neither can he receive him, because he is spiritually discerned'.

**Question 6:** How do we reply to Calvinists on this verse?

**Answer:** The context is clearly things, not Jesus Christ.

**Key:** Receiving spiritual things and receiving Jesus Christ are two different things. 'Things' are discussed in every verse in I Corinthians 2:9-15. The context refers to believers knowing spiritual things. God gives the Holy Spirit to his sons, so that they may have spiritual understanding. Calvinists wish us to believe that, because the natural man cannot understand spiritual things, he cannot receive Jesus Christ. This verse teaches that the natural, unsaved man cannot discern the truth, beauty, wisdom, value and excellence of divine things, because he does not yet have the indwelling Holy Spirit. If he received Christ as Saviour, he would then have the Holy Spirit and would then be able to know and discern spiritual things. It does not teach that he is unable ever to receive Christ, due to Total Inability or Election to Reprobation. 'In whom also **after that ye believed**, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise.' (Ephesians 1:13).

**Conclusion:** None of these 3 types of Scriptures, which Calvinists use to prove Total Depravity, ever mention man's depravity. Calvinists who use these verses to prove Total Depravity are dishonest because Calvinists really mean Total Inability.

**Conclusion:** Reply to Total Inability.

Total Depravity is the foundation of Calvinism, and necessitates the other 4 points:

**T:** If all men are unable to repent and believe the Gospel, then it logically follows that,

**U:** If anybody is to be saved, then God must first determine who they are (Unconditional Election), and then

**I:** Irresistably overcome their 'inability' (Irresistable Grace) so they can repent & believe the Gospel.

If Total Depravity is true, there is nothing anyone can do except hope that he is unconditionally elected, and if he is, then quietly wait for God to save him by Irresistable grace. (Lamentations 3:26). But if Total Inability is false, so is **ULIP**.

**Question 7: Why do Calvinists so persistently hold to Total Inability?**

**Answer:** Calvinists believe that, if a man has the ability to respond to the Gospel, then this somehow robs God of his glory in saving sinners. While believing Total Inability, Calvinists strongly believe that man is fully responsible for what he cannot do. 'Man's total incapacity does not absolve him from full responsibility.' (*Custance, p. 117, 118*).

**Question 8: Is a man responsible for what he is unable to do?**

**Answer:** Yes and No. It depends on why he has inability. eg: A man under the influence of drugs is accountable for his actions only if he knowingly and wilfully put himself in that state (he took drugs). But a man under the influence of drugs is not accountable if he did not knowingly and wilfully put himself in such a state (he was drugged).

**Question 9: Are infants and the retarded responsible to God, even though they lack natural ability?**

**Answer:** No, says Pink (*Son of God, p. 154*), yet Calvinists maintain that non-elect sinners are responsible to God, even though they have Total Inability.

**Key Principle** that overthrows Total Depravity/Inability is: A man can be condemned for his ignorance or his unwillingness, but never for his inability to do what God has commanded him to do. **There are 2 kinds of Scriptures** that **overthrow Total**

**Depravity/Inability:**

i) Scriptures containing a **command to believe:**

- 'Look unto me and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth.' (Isaiah 45:22).

- 'repent ye, and believe the Gospel.' (Mark 1:15).

- 'God . . . now commandeth all men everywhere to repent.' (Acts 17:30).

- 'This is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love

one another, as he gave us commandment.' (1 John 3:23).

- 'And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.' (Revelation 22:17).

- 'Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.' (Matthew 11:28).

- 'If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.' (John 7:37).

**Question 10: If Total Depravity/Inability is true, then is God mocking His Creation here?**

Would God offer salvation to a man, knowing that the man could never even will to receive it? No!

The God of the Bible is not the god of Calvinism. God guarantees His offers are genuine: 'I said not unto the seed of Jacob, seek ye me in vain: I the Lord speak righteousness, I declare things that are right.' (**Isaiah 45:19**). Erasmus used this argument against Luther in their debate over free will, saying, 'If it is not in the power of every man to keep what is commanded, all the promises, threats, reproofs, blessings, curses and precepts are of necessity useless.'

Desiderius Erasmus quoted in *Luther, p 171*.

ii) Scriptures that **imply the possibility** that a **man can believe:**

- 'Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.' (**John 5:40**).

- 'Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved.' (**1 Thessalonians 2:16**).

These verses do not mean that a man will always believe, but they do show that this possibility exists. If there exists even the slightest possibility that a man could believe (as seen by the word 'might'), then the doctrine of Total Depravity/Inability is destroyed, because there are no possibilities in **TULIP** Calvinism.

**2. UNCONDITIONAL ELECTION**

If Total Inability be admitted, then Unconditional Election follows by the most inescapable logic, because if anybody is to be saved and if man cannot choose Christ, then God must choose those who shall be the objects of His grace.

Election and predestination are Bible terms, but we object to Calvinists' perversion of these terms. ELECT = Select or choose. PREDESTINE = Determine beforehand.

**Question:** Who or what is elected?

Why were they elected?

What are they elected to?

**Calvinist Definition of Unconditional Election:**

'By the decree of God, for the manifestation of His own glory, some men and angels are predestined unto everlasting life, and others are foreordained to everlasting death.'

(*Westminster Confession of*

*Faith, III:3*).

It is a sovereign, eternal decree where God chooses who is going to be saved & who is going to be lost. This second point of **TULIP** is the main teaching, and determines if one is to be classed as a Calvinist.

**Question 1: Are men elected to salvation or are they not?** This is the issue.

**Key Basic Error of Calvinism is: Confusing election and predestination with salvation.**

If one denies Unconditional Election, Calvinists accuse us of:

- 'The reason we are prone to disbelieve this doctrine is that we are not humble enough.' (*Rose p. 19*).

- 'By making election conditional upon something that man does, even if what he does is simply to repent and believe the Gospel, God's grace is seriously compromised.' (Storms, *Chosen for Life p. 55*)

- 'The bottom line is, if you deny election, you deny salvation by grace. To reject election is to reject salvation by grace and promote salvation by works.' (Carl Marton, *Does the Bible Teach Election?* The Berean Baptist Banner, Jan 5 1995, p. 19).

Double predestination means predestining some to salvation and others to damnation.

Well-known Calvinists are Louis Berkhof, A W Pink, Spurgeon, and Boettner.

Philosophical concepts in the Decree of Unconditional Election are:

- i) Unconditional Election was by a sovereign, eternal decree. It is eternal and singular, meaning:  
It is one decree for one purpose with many events.
- ii) Sovereignty of God, meaning that God is in sovereign control of every detail of history. The Calvinists, Talbot and Crampton, say: 'The sovereignty of God is foundational to Christianity. It is the most basic principle of Calvinism.' (p.14).
- iii) This singular, eternal, sovereign decree is also said to be all-encompassing. ie: God by His decree has foreordained everything that ever happens in time.

**Question 2:** Does God really foreordain all things? Calvinists think so.

**Answer:** Check the *Westminster Shorter Catechism*:

'The decrees of God are His eternal purpose, according to the counsel of his will, whereby, for His own glory, He hath foreordained whatsoever comes to pass.'

Calvinists insist that God foreordained the Fall of man into sin, along with all the suffering. (See Boettner, *Predestination*, p.234, and Pink, *Sovereignty*, p.147).

Calvinists also insist that God foreordained every other sin. 'It is even Biblical to say that God has foreordained sin.' (Palmer p.82).

**i) Question 3: What does the Bible say about decrees?**

**Answer:** The Bible uses the word 'decree' in reference to God on 8 out of 56 occasions, and in reference to man 48 out of 56 times. It is used more of man than of God. Those making decrees were: Cyrus (Ezra 5:13); Darius (Ezra 6:1); Artaxerxes (Ezra 7:21); Nebuchadnezzar (Daniel 3:10); Esther (Esther 9:32); Caesars (Luke 2:1; Acts 17:7); Apostles (Acts 16:4).

The decrees of God in the Bible concern: the rain (Job 28:26); the sea (Job 38:10); Jesus Christ (Psalm 2:7); the heavens (Psalm 148:6); a consumption (Isaiah 10:22); the sand (Jeremiah 5:22); and Nebuchadnezzar (Daniel 4:24).

Notice the following about God's decrees:

- a) There are 7 decrees of God.
- b) None of these decrees are said to be eternal.
- c) No decrees involve election or predestination, yet Calvinists consider predestination a divine Decree.

**Question 4:** Which Scripture says this? None. There is no such thing as God's eternal decree of predestination or election. Calvinists then say it is one of God's secret decrees. Calvinist's motto is Deuteronomy 29:29 'The secret things belong unto the Lord our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children forever, that we may do all the words of this law.'

Since God's ways are not our ways, nor His thoughts our thoughts (Isaiah 55:8,9), Unconditional Election is called a secret counsel of God that can't be understood. If predestination is a secret decree, how is it that the Calvinists know so much about it? To the Calvinists' invented decrees, God says: 'Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees.' (**Isaiah 10:1**).

**ii) The Sovereignty of God** is the exercise of His supremacy (definition).

God is the one and only Supreme Being. 'But our God is in the heavens: he hath done whatsoever he hath pleased.' (Psalm 115:3; See Psalm 47:2; Daniel 4:35). While

'Sovereignty of God' sounds Biblical, Calvinists misinterpret it to take precedence over His other attributes.

**Question 5: What is the problem with Calvinists' view of God's sovereignty?**

**Answer:** The problem is that Saddam Hussein was sovereign. Hitler, Stalin and Mao were sovereign. The Pope is sovereign.

**Key:** When a Calvinist discusses God's sovereignty, he means arbitrariness, thus presenting a god who could change, by-pass or ignore his own laws because of his so-called sovereignty. So by this arbitrary capriciousness, God could damn to hell men yet uncreated, for no other reason than His sovereign pleasure. The Bible paints a different picture of God than this Calvinist nonsense. God's first and foremost attribute is absolute holiness. (Psalm 145:17; Isaiah 6:3; Exodus 15:11). His name is Holy (Psalm 33:21; Psalm 47:8). The most wicked, vile, bloody dictator could be sovereign yet unholy. Because God is holy, he exercises his sovereignty only in ways consistent with his holiness.

**Key:** The Calvinists' error is to exalt God's sovereignty above all his other attributes.

**iii) Question 6:** Calvinists think that God's eternal, sovereign decree is all-encompassing, meaning that God, by his decree has foreordained everything that ever happens in time. Is this view right or wrong?

**Answer:** We agree that God has a right to guide (Psalm 73:24), direct (Proverbs 3:6), lead (Psalm 139:24), restrain (Psalm 76:10) and harden (Exodus 14:17); but God's influence is different to God foreordaining every thought and action of man.

**Key:** Calvinists' error is as follows: God's influence, direction, control and permission are different to God's election, predestination, foreordination and decrees. God knows what man will do in the future without God foreordaining it. (Isaiah 42:9; 46:10).

**Major Question 7:** Has God from eternity past foreordained all things that come to pass?

**Question 8:** If the Lord directs the steps of a man, is this not proof that he is being controlled or governed by God? 'A man's heart deviseth his way: but the Lord directeth his steps.' (Proverbs 16:9, 1, 33). 'The King's heart is in the hand of the Lord, as the rivers of water: he turneth it whithersoever he will.' (Proverbs 21:1). Calvinists think that God has foreordained every thought, word, deed and motive of all people in history.

**Note:** When Calvinists see the words 'preparations', 'answers' (Proverbs 16:1), 'steps' (Prov. 16:4), 'goings' (Prov. 20:24), 'judgments' (Prov. 29:26), they see this as proof that God has foreordained all things. 'The preparations of the heart in man, and the answer of the tongue, is from the Lord.' Prov. 16:1.

**Question 9:** Does God foreordain the following answers, steps, goings and judgments?

- a) What if a man prepared (Prov. 16:1) to commit murder & rape? Did God foreordain this? Of course not.
- b) What if a man's answer (Proverbs 16:1) was blasphemous and filthy?
- c) Was the answer of Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5:25) from the Lord?
- d) What about the steps (Proverbs 16:9) of a man as he steals or viciously beats innocent victims?
- e) What about a man's goings (Proverbs 20:24) into a pub or brothel?
- f) What if a man judged (Proverbs 29:26) that sodomy and incest were OK? Did God ordain these? No!

That God does not foreordain these events contradicts and disproves the Calvinists' claim of God's all-encompassing, eternal, sovereign decree. Paul asks: 'Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.' (Romans 9:14).

**Question 10:** Did God eternally decree Herod to massacre all the children under 2 years old? (Matthew 2:16). No, but God foreknew Herod would do it. (Jeremiah 31:15). Did God foreordain the wickedness of Ahab (I Kings 21:1-13) and Manasseh (II Chronicles 33:9)? No!

**Note:** Calvinists' error in Proverbs is to **read 'foreordained' into** expressions speaking of God's control and influence, such as 'of the Lord', 'from the Lord', 'directeth', and 'turneth'.

**Question 11: Does God foreordain the time of one's death,** as Calvinists think Job 14:5 ("Seeing his days are determined") and Ecclesiastes 3:2 ("a time to die") teach?

**Answer:** No, because:

- i) God was going to kill Hezekiah, but added 15 years to his life. (Isaiah 38:5).
- ii) Calvinists take general statements about mankind and make them into individual decrees for each person. All men do not always die at exactly 70 or 80 years (Psalm 90:10). Some men 'shall not live out half their days' (Psalm 55:23), and some die before their appointed time. ("Why shouldst thou die before thy time?" Ecclesiastes 7:17).
- iii) Calvinists contradict their belief that God has predetermined the day of their death by using medical advances to preserve and extend their lifespan.

**Question 12:** Calvinists use the crucifixion of Christ as proof that God has foreordained every act of man. Is this true? 'Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain.' (Acts 2:23).

'to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.' (Acts 4:27,28).

**Answer:** If the Jews addressed in Acts were just carrying out God's decree, then they wouldn't be declared responsible. They would be declared obedient. The Bible affirms their responsibility by accusing them of crucifying Christ (Acts 2:36; 4:10), delivering up, denying and killing him (Acts 3:13-15), slaying and hanging him (Acts 5:30; 10:39), as well as betraying and murdering him (Acts 7:52). Jesus said: 'And truly the Son of Man goeth as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed.' (Luke 22:22). Although Jesus Christ had to be betrayed and crucified, no one man was foreordained to do it. Jesus said about the betrayer: 'Good were it for that man if he had never been born.' (Mark 14:21). If Judas had not been born, then someone else would have done it. No-one is ever foreordained to commit any sin.

**Question 13: Does God foreordain sin** as Calvinists claim? Some philosophers think that the existence of evil makes it unreasonable to believe in God. The Scottish philosopher David Hume (1711-1776) said of God and evil: 'Is God willing to prevent evil, but not able? Then he is impotent. Is God able to prevent evil but not willing? Then he is malevolent.'

**Answer:** The Christian answer to the fact that God is all-knowing, all-powerful, and wholly good, yet evil exists, is that philosophers have not considered that **God uses evil to punish evildoers** and to **discipline rebellious Christians**. There is a big difference between evil on one hand, and sin and wickedness on the other. Because God is holy, he cannot **sin** or commit **wickedness**. God often brings **evil** upon **individuals**, such as Absalom (II Samuel 17:14), Jeroboam (I Kings 14:10), Ahab (I Kings 21:21) and Nebuchadnezzar Daniel 4:28-33), as well as **nations**, such as Israel (Nehemiah 13:18; Daniel 9:14) and Jerusalem

(Ezekiel 14:22), as punishment for their evil actions. 'I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things.' (Isaiah 45:7). 'Shall there be evil in the city, and the Lord hath not done it?' (Amos 3:6).

**Question 14: Why does God bring evil on people or places? (Jeremiah 19:3-5).**

**Answer:** Because of the people's sins. It is not because of an arbitrary, sovereign, eternal decree. God brings evil to punish man's sin. God said 'Behold I will bring evil upon this place . . . Because they have forsaken me, and have estranged this place, and have burned incense in it unto other gods, . . . and have filled this place with the blood of innocents; They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind.' (**Jer. 19:3-5**).

**Notice:** i) God brought evil because of the people's sins.

ii) God expressly stated that he didn't decree their sins: 'Which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind.' (Jeremiah 19:5).

**Question 15:** How could God decree and foreordain their sin if it never came into his mind?

**Question 16:** Why does sin take place? Because of the depravity of man, something Calvinists forget except when trying to prove man's inability to respond to the Gospel.

**God Has Not Foreordained Everything In One All-Encompassing Decree Because:**

**1) God says so:** How could God decree and foreordain man's sin if it never came into his mind? 'commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind.' (**Jeremiah 19:5**).

**2) God's holy nature** would not allow him to be the author of sin. God would never command a man to repent, then fix it so he couldn't repent in order to damn him. But this is exactly what **TULIP** Calvinism teaches.

**3) God's permission:** Often God is said to do something when in fact He only permitted it to be done. For example:

- Satan provoked David to number Israel (I Chron. 21:1), but God was said to do it. (2 Sam.24:1)

- Satan was the cause of Job's trouble (Job 1:12; 2:7), but Job (1:21), the writer of Job (42:11), & Satan himself (1:11; 2:5) attributed it to God. God lifted the hedge, permitting Satan's attacks.

**4) Man's responsibility** is destroyed if God has predestined all things. The Calvinist Jay Adams sees the problem: "The doctrines of divine sovereignty, embracing predestination, election, etc. are often dismissed as foolish and dangerous teachings, that if accepted and believed, would destroy evangelism, human initiative & responsibility." (Grand Demonstration, p.67)

**5) Man's Free Will** is destroyed if God predestined all things. Sovereignty means that God controls all things including our wills, and free will means that our wills are not controlled by God. This is a clear contradiction.

**Question 17:** How can a person be a free and responsible agent if his actions have been foreordained from eternity?

We reject this Calvinist error by discussing **examples of man's free will** in Scripture:

i) **Freewill offerings** (16 times in OT) teach that after a person had made all the offerings prescribed by the Mosaic law, he might out of gratitude for God's grace give something additional. "Ye shall offer at your own will a male without blemish," Leviticus 22:19.

The phrase "at your own will" teaches that he had the free will to give it or not to give it.



ii) **Freewill journey to Jerusalem** teaches that man has freewill: “I make a decree, that all they of the people of Israel, and of his priests and Levites, in my realm, which are minded of their own freewill to go up to Jerusalem, go with thee.” (Ezra 7:13).

iii) **Adam and Eve** had free will: “of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat” Gen.2:16

iv) **The people and governors** of Israel “willingly offered themselves” (Judges 5:2,9) to defeat Sisera.

v) David encouraged **Solomon** to serve God “with a willing mind.” (I Chronicles 28:9).

vi) During **Nehemiah’s** time some people “willingly offered themselves to dwell at Jerusalem.” (Nehemiah 11:2).

vii) **New Testament Prayer promises** are based on believer’s free will: “If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.” (John 15:7).

viii) **Paul preached willingly**: “For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.” (I Corinthians 9:17).

Free will is both a Bible doctrine and used in the Bible, but unconditional election, sovereign grace, sovereignty of God and God’s eternal decree are neither.

6) **Prayer** proves that God has not predestined all things.

**Question 18: Does prayer change things?** Most Christians think so.

i) It did for **Moses** when in response to Moses’ prayer God changed His mind about destroying Israel and Aaron (Deuteronomy 9:18-29).

ii) It did for **Hezekiah** when God extended his lifespan by 15 years in response to his prayer. (2 Kings 20:1-6).

iii) It did for **Elijah** when he prayed for no rain, and then later for rain (James 5:17,18).

iv) It does for **righteous men**: “The effectual, fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.” James 5:16. Calvinists insist that prayer doesn’t change things. Calvinists think that if God has already fixed everything, then who are we to infringe upon His sovereignty & request a change?

The Calvinist Joseph Wilson says: “Since predestination is true, it follows, as night follows day, that prayer does not change things.” (Baptist Examiner, June 8, 1991, p.8).

7) **Calvinist’s Admissions** reject the idea that God has foreordained everything by an all-encompassing decree. **N.L.Rice** (p.9) states that divine foreordination seems “unscriptural, absurd, and impious.”

8) **Calvinist’s Rejections**. G.C.Berkouwer wonders how theologians can “at the same time speak of God as the all-causing One, and not say that He is the cause of human sin.”(Baker, p.8)

9) **Other Philosophies** which teach “what will be will be” are no different to Calvinism.

i) When a **philosopher** believes “what will be will be” it is called determinism.

ii) When a **stoic** believes “what will be will be,” it is called fate.

iii) When a **Muslim** believes “what will be will be,” it is called fatalism.

iv) When a **Calvinist** believes “what will be will be,” it is called predestination, and claims it alone is a Bible doctrine.

10) **Semantics** or accepted meaning of words. The word “whosoever” clearly disproves any all-encompassing decree. “Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.” Rev. 22:17.

11) **Contingency** verses showing the possibility of an event happening proves there is no such thing as God foreordaining everything by an all-encompassing decree.

There are many things in the Bible that are not fixed such as:

- if Christ’s works had been done in Tyre and Sidon they would have repented (Matt. 11:21).

- many of God’s promises to Jews were conditional such as Deuteronomy 5:33; 6:1-3; 11:16-17.

- “ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.” John 5:30.

- “Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved.” I Thessalonians 2:16.

12) **Chance** is a reason that God did not foreordain everything by an all-encompassing decree.

**Question 19: Does anything happen by chance?** According to the Bible it does.

“And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.” Luke 10:31.

“If a bird’s nest chance to be before thee in the way in any tree,...” Deuteronomy 22:6.

This doesn’t mean that God doesn’t know what is going to happen, or has no control over His creation, but it does mean that there is no all-encompassing decree of predestination.

13) **Common Sense** rejects any foreordained all-encompassing decree. If ‘What will be will be’ was true, then nobody could avoid carrying out God’s sovereign, eternal, foreordained decree.

**Question 20:** Did the man who cut his concubine into 12 pieces and sent her parts throughout Israel (Judges 19:29) do so by God’s sovereign, eternal decree? No!

**Question 21:** Did the people who burned their children in the fire to Molech, or have sex with animals (Leviticus 18:21-24) do so by the determinate counsel of God’s decree? No!

Erasmus well described this wicked error of absolute predestination in “Luther’s Discourse on Free will,” p.11,12 as follows:

“Let us assume the truth of what Wycliffe has taught and Luther has asserted, namely that everything we do happens not on account of our free will, but out of sheer necessity. What can be more useless than to publish this paradox to the world? Secondly, let us assume that it is true, as Augustine has written somewhere, that God causes both good and evil in us and that he rewards us for his good works wrought in us and punishes us for the evil deeds done in us. What a loophole the publications of this opinion would open to godlessness among innumerable people. In particular: mankind is lazy, indolent, malicious and in addition, incorrigibly prone to every impious outrage. How many weak ones would continue in their perpetual and laborious battle against their own flesh? What wicked fellow would henceforth try to better his conduct? Who could love with all his heart a God who fires a hell with eternal pain, in order to punish there poor mankind for his own evil deeds, as if God enjoyed human distress?”

**Question 22:** If God doesn’t decree all the sin & wickedness in the world, then why does it take place?

**Answer:** Because God permits it, but “permit” and “decree” are totally different concepts. Our responsibility is to “resist the devil, and he will flee from you.” James 4:7 and I Peter 5:9.

## **UNCONDITIONAL ELECTION Blasphemes God's Character in 4 Ways.**

2 Peter 3:9, 1 Peter 1:2, 1 Timothy 2:4, 2 Thessalonians 2:13, John 1:7; 3:17.

**I) Definition:** "God's choice of certain individuals unto salvation before the foundation of the world rested solely on His own sovereign will. (False). His choice of certain sinners was not based on any foreseen response or obedience on their part, such as faith or repentance. (F). On the contrary God gives faith and repentance to each individual whom He selected. (F). Those whom God sovereignly elected, He brings through the power of the Spirit to a willing acceptance of Christ. (F). Thus, God's choice of the sinner, not the sinner's choice of Christ, is the ultimate cause of salvation." (F)

**Note:** Every sentence in the above definition contains error. This definition says that some people are elected to heaven, while others are elected to hell, and can do nothing about it. It is wholly God's part and without any human condition.

Calvin in his book entitled "Institutes", Book III, Chapter 23 states it as follows:

"Not all men are created with a similar destiny. Eternal life is foreordained for some, and eternal damnation for others. Every man therefore, being created for one or the other of these ends, we say, he is predestined either to life or to death."

**II) This wicked and foolish teaching of unconditional election is both unbiblical and blasphemous of God's character in these ways:**

**a) It makes Christ a liar** when he invites "whosoever will" to come to Him for salvation, if He knows that some are non-elect and therefore impossible for them to come and be saved. This false theory attacks the **honesty** of Christ when He invites people to be saved if He has already foreordained them to hell, all along never intending to save them. It portrays Christ as a **liar** when He said to some Jews, "Ye will not come to me that ye might have life" (John 5:40) if He knew that they could not come to Him. Calvinists claim that "whosoever will" (in Rev. 22:17), "any man" (John 7:37; 2 Peter 3:9), "all" (1 Timothy 2:3-6, 2 Peter 3:9), and "world" (John 3:16) do not mean what all dictionaries say they mean. It is Calvinists who are lying, not Jesus Christ.

### **b) It opposes God's love and justice.**

A Calvinist's understanding of "God so loved the world" (John 3:16) is that "God so loved the elect." The god of the Calvinist hates sinners. This is not the God of the Bible.

According to 5 point Calvinism, God:

- ~ hates a non-elect baby before he is born,
- ~ hates a non-elect baby when he is born,
- ~ hates a non-elect person in his infancy,
- ~ hates a non-elect person in his childhood,
- ~ hates a non-elect person in his youth,
- ~ hates a non-elect person in his adulthood,
- ~ hates a non-elect person in his death, then throws him into hell.

This is not the God of the Bible. What a contrast this is to the God of the Bible who **WEPT** (Luke 19:41) over non-elect sinners in Jerusalem who would soon crucify Him:

"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often **would I** have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and **ye would not!**" Matthew 23:37.

What a contrast 5-point Calvinism is to the Saviour who said to the "non-elect" rich young ruler:

"Jesus beholding him loved him." (Mark 10:21). Yes, God loves sinners.

### **c) It opposes Evangelism.**

It follows logically that if God in eternity past unconditionally elected some people to be saved and others to be damned, then nothing you or I do will change these people's destinies. So why should we bother getting rejected by people in the process of evangelism?

Why should we get excited, zealous, and hard-working in evangelism if nothing we do will change the final outcome?

**d) It makes God a respecter of persons** in choosing some and rejecting others.

This makes Peter and God's Word a liar in Acts 10:34, "God is no respecter of persons."

Unconditional election is a teaching which makes atheists, and blasphemes the God of the Bible. It is an arbitrarily blind selection, with no discernable or explainable reason for His partiality to the few. If man is totally depraved in the sense that he cannot hear God speaking to him, then how else can he be saved except by "unconditional election" ?

The deceitful human heart of the 5-point Calvinist then has to quote some scriptures out of context in order to support his unbiblical system.

We must ask 3 questions to discover the Biblical position on election:

Question 1: Does the Bible teach election? (Yes).

Question 2: Is election unconditional? (No). It is based on God's foreknowledge. 1 Peter 1:2.

Question 3: What is the purpose of election?

a) To be conformed to the image of Christ (Romans 8:28) in heaven.

b) To be holy and without blame before Him in love, on earth now

(Ephesians 1:4,5).

### **III) True Definition Of Election**

The Bible never teaches that some are unconditionally elected to go to heaven or to hell.

The Bible teaches election (not unconditional election):

**a)** According to **God's foreknowledge** of which individuals will obey the gospel and trust Christ's blood sacrifice to pay for their sins, as 1 Peter 1:2 says: "Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit (God's part), unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ (Man's part)." 1 Peter 1:2.

**Key:** God foreknows who will be saved, but does not foreordain who will be saved.

**b)** According to both **Divine Sovereignty** and **human responsibility**, as seen in 1 Peter 1:2

**1 Peter 1:2** "through sanctification of the Spirit (God's part) and obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ" (Man's part).

**2 Thess. 2:13** "God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit (God's part), and belief of the truth (man's part)." Note v.14 that God calls sinners by Christians preaching the gospel, "he called you by our gospel, to obtain glory..."

**c)** Not to salvation, but to the **Method of salvation:**

### **Question 23: What is the method of salvation?**

**Answer:** It is by receiving Christ as Saviour, as seen by the expressions “by Christ”, and “in Christ” on 12 occasions in Ephesians 1:1 (in Christ), 3 (in Christ), 4 (in him), 5 (by Jesus Christ), 6 (in the beloved), 7 (in whom), 10 (in Christ, in him), 11 (in whom), 12 (in Christ), 13 (in Christ, in whom).

God elects, chooses and predestines that all who get saved will be saved by, through or in Jesus Christ. (Ephesians 1:4,5).

“he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world that we should be holy.” Ephesians 1:4.

“Having predestined us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ.” Ephesians 1:5.

The condition or method of salvation is ‘in Christ.’ This proves conditional election.

If Paul had omitted “in Christ”, we would have unconditional election, but he didn’t.

**d)** Not to salvation, but to **Service**.

Just as some Christians may resist God’s call to service, so some unbelievers may resist God’s call to salvation.

The fact that **God chooses** or **elects believers to service** is seen in these verses:

i) “Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, THAT ye should go and **bring forth fruit**, and THAT your fruit should remain...” John 15:16.

Here God chooses and ordains that every believer should bear fruit of souls won to Christ, because this fruit remains.

Calvinists love to quote the first part of this verse but not quote the second part. The verse says nothing about being chosen for heaven or hell, but that the disciples and every Christian are chosen to be soul winners by bearing the fruit of souls won to Christ.

ii) “he is a **chosen** vessel unto me, to **bear my name** before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.” Acts 9:15.

God chose Paul to the service of preaching Christ’s name to the Gentiles, kings and Israel.

iii) “that the purpose of God according to **election** might stand...It was said unto her, the elder (Esau) shall **serve** the younger (Jacob).” Romans 9:11,12.

Here God chose before Esau and Jacob were born that the elder son Esau would serve the younger son Jacob. Nothing is said here about their salvation.

iv) “Remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ...knowing brethren beloved, your **election** of God.” 1 Thessalonians 1:3,4.

After discussing the Thessalonian believers’ work, labour and patience (all words of service), he reminds them of their election of God in the same context as their service. God elected them to serve Him and others.

v) “Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and **election** sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.” 2 Peter 1:10.

Here, after Peter tells his readers to give all diligence to add to our faith, virtue, knowledge, temperance, patience, godliness, brotherly kindness and charity (vs.5-7), he says that if we **do these things**, we shall make our **election** sure and we shall never fall. The phrase “doing these things” in the context of election means that God elects us to **serve** Him by cultivating these qualities.

vi) “Have not I **chosen you twelve**, and one of you is a devil? He spake of Judas Iscariot.” John 6:70,71.

Here Jesus states that He chose the 12 disciples to serve Him as disciples. All Calvinists agree that Judas was unsaved, and all Calvinists believe in security of the believer. Hence this proves that Jesus was discussing how He chose Judas as part of the twelve for **service**. Jesus says nothing here about choosing Judas for heaven.

**e)** Not to salvation, but to **Godly living**.

God chooses and elects every Christian to holiness and Godliness in this life.

God predestines that every Christian will be conformed to the image of Christ in heaven. Romans 8:29.

i) “he hath **chosen** us in him before the foundation of the world, THAT we should be **holy** and without blame before him in love.” Ephesians 1:4.

ii) “Having **predestinated** us...to the **praise** of the glory of his grace...” Ephesians 1:5,6.

iii) “The God of our fathers hath **chosen thee**, THAT thou shouldest **know his will**, and **see** that Just One, and shouldest **hear the voice** of his mouth.” Acts 22:14.

God chose Paul to know God’s will for his life. God chooses that we should know His will for our lives.

iv) “But ye are a **chosen generation**, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people: THAT ye should **show forth** the **praises** of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light.”

1 Peter 2:9. Here God chooses us to praise him by our life.

v) “I have **chosen you out of the world**.” John 15:19.

Here Christ chooses us to come out of the worldly way of living of unbelievers. The Greek word for church is “ekklesia” meaning “called out of the world to live for God.”

vi) “But God hath **chosen** the **foolish things of the world** to confound the wise; and

God hath **chosen** the **weak things of the world** to confound the things which are mighty; and

God hath **chosen** the **base things of the world**, yea and the things which are not to **bring to nought** the things that are: THAT no flesh should glory in his presence.” 1 Corinthians 1:27-29.

Here God chooses foolish, weak and base things of this world to bring to nought the things that are, so that no flesh should glory in God’s presence.

vii) “For whom he did foreknow, he also did **predestinate** to be **conformed to the image of his Son**...” Romans 8:29. Here God foreknew who would receive Christ as Saviour, and those people he predestinated to be conformed to the image of Christ in heaven.

**f)** Of **Israel**, not to salvation, but to **Serve God**, bring Christ into the world, preserve the Scriptures, and proclaim to the world the truth of One Almighty Creator God.

- “As concerning the gospel, they (Israel) are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the Father’s sakes.” Romans 11:28.

- “at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.” Romans 11:5,7.

Those of Israel who became Christians, did so because of faith and God’s foreknowledge. (1 Peter 1:2).

### **IV. Statements Of God’s Conditional Election**

That God **elects** people to salvation based on certain conditions is seen in these verses:

1. Foreknowledge of God. “Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father.” 1 Peter 1:2.

2. Sanctification of the Spirit and Belief of the truth. “God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth.” 2 Thessalonians 2:13.

3. In Christ: “He hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world,...

Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ...” Ephesians 1:4,5.

Hence unconditional election is seen to be false. Election is conditional upon God foreknowing which sinners will believe in Christ as Saviour.

**V. Statements That God Wants All Sinners To Be Saved**

The Calvinist who believes in unconditional election believes that God wants some to be saved (the elect), and wants other sinners to go to hell (the non-elect). This can be shown to be false if we can find Scriptures showing that God wants **all** sinners to be saved.

1. "The Lord is...longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that **all** should come to repentance." 2 Peter 3:9. "Will" (1014) means **decree, determine, intend, minded, disposed**.

This states that God does not decree that any be lost.

**Question 24:** If God elects some to be saved and others to go to hell, **how is 2 Peter 3:9 explained?**

2. "Who will have **all men** to be saved, and to come to the knowledge of the truth." 1 Timothy 2:4.

**VI. The Order Of Events In Salvation.** Calvinists differ from the Bible on this.

The Bible clearly describes the order of events in salvation from **God's viewpoint** in Romans 8:29,30, and from **man's viewpoint** in Romans 10:13-15. What are they?

**1. From God's viewpoint.** Romans 8:29,30

- i) God **foreknew** all who would receive Christ as Saviour. (v.29).
- ii) God **predestinated** all these to be conformed to the image of Christ. (v. 29).
- iii) God **called** them and others through the preaching of the gospel (v.30). "Whereunto he called you by our gospel to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ." 2 Thessalonians 2:14.
- iv) God **justified** them when they put their faith in Jesus Christ as Saviour. (v.30). "Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ." Romans 5:1.
- v) God **will glorify** them in heaven (v.30). This is God's ultimate purpose. (Ephesians 5:27; Philippians 3:21; Hebrews 2:10; Col. 3:4). The resurrected and glorified Lord Jesus Christ will become the Head of a new race of humanity, purified from all contact with sin, and prepared to live eternally in Christ's presence. (1 Corinthians 15:42-49).

Hyper-Calvinists arrange God's decrees as follows:

- a) Decree to save some and reprobate the rest.
- b) Decree to create those who will be saved and those who will be reprobated.
- c) Decree to permit (or secure) the fall of both groups.
- d) Decree to provide salvation only for the elect.

**2. From Man's viewpoint.** Romans 10:13-15.

- a) God and the local church **send** a preacher. (v.15).
- b) The preacher **preaches** the gospel to lost sinners. (v.15).
- c) Lost sinners **hear** and understand (Matthew 13:19) the gospel.
- d) Lost sinners **believe** in Christ as the gospel is explained. (v.14).
- e) Lost sinners **call** on Christ to save them. (v.14).
- f) Lost sinners are then **saved** by Christ. (v.13).

Wuest states reluctantly: "It is only fair that the author inform the reader that Greek scholars, Vincent, Denny, Robertson and Alford all translate "proginosko" as "foreknowledge" and understand it to refer to the "Prescience" of God. As Vincent puts it, "Not to the idea of pre-election."

Therefore "proginosko" always means to "KNOW BEFORE." God wants all to be saved. He knows that, no matter how much He strives, some will resist His gracious entreaty and harden their hearts. Sinners will be lost, not because God willed it, but because they rejected God's call.

There are **3 Systems of Calvinism:**

| <b><u>Supralapsarianism</u></b>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                            | <b><u>Infralapsarianism</u></b>                                                                                   | <b><u>Sublapsarianism</u></b><br><b>(4 point Calvinism)</b>                                                    |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>(1.) Election + Reprobation</b><br>2. Creation<br>3. Fall<br>4. Atonement for Elect<br>5. Salvation for Elect<br>-- Makes God the author of sin and direct cause of damning men.<br>-- The most repulsive part of TULIP.<br>-- Is called Hypercalvinism by those who want to make their form of Calvinism appear Biblical.<br>It is not Hypercalvinism. | 1. Creation<br>2. Fall<br><b>(3.) Election + Reprobation</b><br>4. Atonement for Elect<br>5. Salvation for Elect. | 1. Creation<br>2. Fall<br>3. Atonement for all<br><b>(4.) Election + Reprobation</b><br>5. Salvation for Elect |

**1) Supralapsarianism: Arminius** believed that the supralapsarian doctrine of predestination was:

"repugnant to the **nature** of God, repugnant to the **justice** of God, repugnant to the **goodness** of God, contrary to the nature of man, diametrically opposed to the act of **creation**, at open hostility with the nature of **eternal life**, opposed to the nature of **eternal death**, inconsistent with the nature and properties of **sin**, repugnant to the nature of **divine grace**, injurious to the **glory** of God, highly **dishonourable** to Jesus Christ our Saviour, hurtful to the **salvation** of men, and in open hostility to the **ministry** of the Gospel." "Works of Arminius," Vol.1, p.623-633. **King James I** of England who sent delegates to the Synod of Dort, recorded his hatred of this system, as quoted in the "Works of Arminius", Vol.1, p.213. "This doctrine is so horrible, that I am persuaded, if there were a council of unclean spirits assembled in hell, and their prince the devil were to put the question either to all of them in general, or to each in particular, to learn their opinion about the most likely means of stirring up the hatred of men against God their Maker; nothing could be invented by them that would be more efficacious for this purpose, or that could put a greater affront upon God's love for mankind, than that famous decree of the late Synod, and the decision of that detestable formulary, by which the far greater part of the human race are condemned to hell for no other reason, *than the mere will of God, without any regard to sin*; the necessity of sinning, as well as that of being damned, being fastened on them by that great nail of the decree before-mentioned."

**Note: Calvinists divert their opponents criticism by pitting Arminianism against hyper-Calvinism, and then take plain Calvinism as a mediating position. This makes Calvinism appear orthodox.**

Calvin believed the following about predestination:

"We call predestination God's eternal decree, by which He compacted with himself what he willed to become of each man. For all are not created in equal condition; rather eternal life is foreordained for some, eternal damnation for others. Therefore, as any man has been created to one or the other of these ends, we speak of him as predestined to life or death." Institutes p.926 (III.xxi.5).

A.W. Pink said: "I am a strong supra-lapsarian." *Letters of A.W. Pink*. p.74,75.

Pink's book "The Sovereignty of God" was first published in 1918 of 2000 copies.

Of this book, Arno Gaebelein (1861-1945) wrote: "Mr Pink used to be a contributor to our magazine. His articles on *Gleanings on Genesis* are good, and we had them printed in book form. But when he began to teach his frightful doctrines which make the God of Love a monster, we broke fellowship with him. The book you have read is totally unscriptural. It is akin to blasphemy. It presents God as a Being of injustice and maligns His holy character. The book denies that our blessed Lord died for the ungodly. According to Pink's perversions He died for the elect only. You are not the only one who has been led into darkness by this book. Whoever the publisher is, and whoever stands behind the circulation of such a monstrous thing has a grave responsibility. It is just this kind of teaching which makes atheists."

Quoted in "Divine Sovereignty," Fisk, p.24.

Because Pink's views were deemed so radical, the Banner of Truth Trust 1961 Edition of "The Sovereignty of God" removed the chapter on reprobation. The Dutch Reformed people are the chief propagators of supralapsarianism, surviving today in the Protestant Reformed church, their premier theologian being Herman Hoeksema. Supralapsarianism teaches that God decreed the damnation of men and created them explicitly for that purpose.

**2) Infralapsarianism** was devised to avoid making God the author of sin, and to make Calvinism

more acceptable. None of the decrees have changed, only their supposed order.

Both supralapsarians and infralapsarians believe in double predestination - to election and reprobation.

The Westminster Confession of Faith, Chapter III, reads:

"By the decree of God, for the manifestation of his glory, some men and angels are predestined unto everlasting life; and others foreordained to everlasting death."

**3) Sublapsarianism** = 4 point Calvinism.

Sublapsarians seek to get around the repulsive implications of reprobation.

The Bible says of these decrees: "Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees." Isaiah 10:1.

The contradictory, confusing nature of Calvinist decrees of God exclude them as coming from God, because God is not "the author of confusion." I Corinthians 14:33.

**Question 25:** What is wrong with these Calvinist theories seeking to relate sin and the fall to election and reprobation?

**Answer:** i) SupraL makes God the author of sin and directly responsible for damning billions of souls.

ii) The fall of Adam effected the reprobation of all men, not just a certain class:

"for as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive." I Corinthians 15:22.

iii) Calvinist statements like that of Warfield: "The marvel of marvels is not that God, in His infinite love, has not elected all of this guilty race to be saved, but that he has elected any;" are negated when we remember that they are built on the false premise of Total Depravity.

iv) The real issue is **whether God would be just** in electing some and passing by the rest. According to the Bible, He wouldn't be just.

- The god of the Calvinist is like the priest and Levite who "passed by" the half dead man in the parable of the good Samaritan (Luke 10:30-32). Did Jesus recommend their behaviour? No! Then neither does God behave this way.

- Worse still, God would be like the thieves who "stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him and departed, leaving him half dead." (Luke 10:30). For Calvinists to say that God came back after "leaving man half-dead," "had compassion on him, and went to him, and bound up his wounds" (Luke 10:33-34), and that he should be praised for his mercy and grace, is absurd.

Jesus commands us to "Go and do thou likewise" (Luke 10:37), as the good Samaritan did who went to help the man. (v.34).

**Question:** Does Jesus practice what He preaches? Surely! Avoid the Calvinist philosophy sidetracks of:

a) Presbyterian route from Calvin to Hodge to Warfield,

b) Reformed route from Calvin to Kuyper to Berkhof, and

c) Baptist route from Calvin to Gill to Spurgeon.

**Note:** Calvinist theologians constantly praise each other while overlooking each other's shortcomings. For example, Warfield, Machen and Boettner each did not insist on a literal 6 day creation. Hoeksema, John Murray and Spurgeon each smoked tobacco.

## REPROBATION

Calvinists agree that God has elected some to salvation and others to reprobation.

**Question 26: What does reprobate mean?** What is a reprobate?

**Answer:** In the Bible, a reprobate is someone who is disapproved and therefore rejected. A probe is an examination, probate is the proving of a will, and probation is a proving period.

The prefix "re" means to "do something again."

Hence, to re-probate something is to prove it again. Hence, a reprobate is someone or something that is disapproved and stands rejected to be tried again.

**Note:** "Reprobate" occurs 4 times in the Bible and "reprobates" occur 3 times.

Reprobate is defined in Jeremiah 6:30, "Reprobate silver shall men call them, because the Lord hath rejected them." They were reprobate because they were rejected.

**Question 27: Why were they rejected?**

**Answer:** Not because of a sovereign eternal decree, but because they said "We will not walk therein" (Jeremiah 6:16), and "We will not hearken." (Jeremiah 6:17).

3 out of 6 New Testament occurrences of reprobate(s) are:

i) "Even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind." (Romans 1:28). A person is reprobate because of something they do.

ii) "Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith." (II Timothy 3:8).

iii) "They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate." (Titus 1:16).

Notice that they are reprobate "to every good work."

**Note:** When their profession is put to the test on a good work, they fail the test. God did not make them reprobate, but they made themselves reprobate because of something they did. There is nothing implying that a reprobate is in a permanent, irreversible condition. Calvinists take any verse dealing with judgment or condemnation and read reprobation into it.

**Question 28: Why did God want Israel to destroy the Canaanite nations?**

**Answer:** Because of their sins of incest (Leviticus 18:6), adultery (Leviticus 18:20), human sacrifice (Lev.18:21), homosexuality (Lev.18:22), and bestiality (Lev.18:23). Nothing was decided in eternity past.

All was conditional.

Romans 9 is the Calvinist's "haven of reprobation," just as Proverbs is the Calvinists "haven of divine foreordination."

**Question 29: How do we explain Proverbs 16:4, another pillar of Calvinist reprobation?**

i) "The Lord hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil."

**Answer:** This verse discusses the use God makes of his creation, not the decisions he makes for them.

Calvinists think that God made certain men wicked to fulfil the "counsel of his own will." (Eph. 1:11).

Since God does all his pleasure (Isaiah 46:10), and has no pleasure in the death of the wicked (Ezekiel 33:11), then he could not have created a man wicked to show his power by damning him.

**Note:** God has made all men the same in the sense of, "He fashioneth their hearts alike" Psalm 33:13-15.

**Key:** Although God does not make a man wicked, he makes the wicked serve his own glory & purposes.

"Surely the wrath of man shall praise thee..." (Psalm 76:10).

**Question 30: Explain 2 NT cases where Calvinists use the word "appointed" to endorse "reprobation."**

ii) The promise to Christians that "God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ." (I Thessalonians 5:9).

Pink writes, "to say that God 'hath not appointed us to wrath' clearly implies that there are some

whom He has appointed to wrath." (Sovereignty of God, p.85).

Wilson thinks that "appointed" refers to God's decree, "wrath" means hell, and "salvation" means eternal life." (The Baptist Examiner, 2 Feb 1991, p.1).

**Answer:** The Calvinists' errors of equating "wrath" with hell, and "salvation" with heaven, are due

to failing to notice the context, where "wrath" refers to the 7 year Tribulation period, and "salvation" means "deliverance" from the Tribulation.

Proof of this is from, a) the context "then sudden destruction cometh upon them." (I Thess. 5:3), and "The great day of his wrath is come." (Rev. 6:17). Rev. 6-19 is a time of God's wrath on the world.

b) The time of this "wrath" of I Thessalonians 5:9 is future.

iii) Calvinists use "appointed" in I Peter 2:8 to support "reprobation."

"And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed." (I Peter 2:8). Pink says that

"Some have been appointed (same Greek word as I Thess. 5:9) unto disobedience." (Sovereignty of God, p.98,99).

**Answer:** The disobedience is defined in the context as unbelief (I Peter 2:7), just as obedience is defined as belief in Romans 10:16. The reason a person is appointed to destruction (Proverbs 31:8) is because they "believed not the truth", but had pleasure in unrighteousness." (2 Thessalonians 2:12).

**Key:** God appoints to destruction all those who reject Christ, stumbling at the rock of offence.

Eg: God sends strong delusion to damn Tribulation sinners who believed not the truth. (2 Thess. 2:11, 12).

iv) In 2 Peter 2:12, Calvinists use the word "made" to support reprobation:

"But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption." (2 Peter 2:12).

Pink implies that these "false prophets" and "false teachers" (2 Peter 2:1) have been foreordained

"to be taken and destroyed" before the foundation of the world.

**Answer:** a) The text says nothing about "why" or "when" these men were "made to be taken and destroyed." Calvinists presume this was an eternal decree.

b) In both 2 Peter 2:12 (perish in their own corruption) and Jude 10 ("as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves"), the corruption was their own doing. God never makes a man in a

reprobate condition. Men are always reprobate because they've done something to earn it, as the next verse makes clear: "and shall receive the reward of unrighteousness." (2 Peter 2:13).

A reward is something they earn. God "destroyed them that believed not." (Jude 5).

v) Calvinists claim that these people have been reserved for condemnation by a sovereign, eternal decree: 2 Peter 2:17 "These are wells without water, ... to whom the mist of darkness is reserved forever."

Jude 13 "Raging waves of the sea, ... to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever."

**Question 31: Who is reserved?**

**Answer:** False prophets and false teachers who deny the Lord (2 Peter 2:1), ungodly (Jude 15), angels that sinned (2 Peter 2:4; Jude 6), unjust (2 Peter 2:9), wicked (2 Peter 2:7), etc. They were reserved in their lives after they committed wicked actions and because of their sins.

vi) Jude 4 "For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained (4270) to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ." Calvinists like Pink think that these men were ordained of old to condemnation before the foundation of the world by a sovereign, eternal decree.

**Question 1: When were they ordained?**

**Answer: During Enoch's ministry.** "Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these saying: Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him." (Jude 14, 15).

**Question 2: Why** were they ordained to condemnation?

**Answer:** Because of their ungodly deeds.

**Question 3: How** were they ordained?

**Answer:** By Enoch.

**Question 4: What** does ordained mean?

**Answer:** Ordained (4270) = *prographo* (Gk) = to write previously, to announce. They were announced by Enoch, not foreordained by a sovereign, eternal decree before the foundation of the world.

vii) **Isaiah 6:9,10** is used by Calvinists to claim that some have the inability to believe because God has blinded their eyes by reprobation (election to damnation) proving that God hardens people.

“And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not. Make the heart of the people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.” (Isaiah 6:9,10).

**Answer:** This prophecy is mentioned 5 times in the New Testament (Matthew 13:14,15; Mark 4:12; Luke 8:10; John 12:39-40; Acts 28:25-27).

Notice: a) Twice we are told to whom this passage refers: “this people,” which is the nation of Israel.

b) Israel shutting their eyes was not an act in eternity past. It took place after they were born. They were not created with their eyes shut, but were God’s elect people.

c) Of this passage’s 5 N.T. occurrences, 2 are clearly not used to teach reprobation because the people closed their own eyes: “their eyes they have closed.” (Matthew 13:14,15; Acts 28:25-27).

**Question 32: Why were they blinded? Why did God harden their hearts?**

**Answer:** Pink answers correctly: “these whose eyes God blinded and whose heart He hardened, were men who had deliberately scorned the Light and rejected the testimony of God’s own Son.” (Sovereignty of God, p.124), and,

“In consequence of their rejection of Christ, the nation as a whole was judicially blinded of God, that is, they were left to the darkness and hardness of their own evil hearts. But it is most important to mark the order of these two statements:

In John 12:37, they did not believe;

Here in John 12:39 they could not believe...

They would not believe; in consequence, God gave them up, and now they could not believe...

The fault was entirely theirs, and now they must suffer the just consequences of their wickedness... This was God’s response to the wicked treatment that Israel had meted out to His beloved Son. They had refused the light, now darkness shall be their dreadful portion.” (Pink “John,” p. 689, 690).

**Key:** These passages teach the judicial hardening of a nation; not the sovereign hardening of individuals.

d) To further prove this, notice where this prophecy appears:

- in the gospels when the Jews rejected Christ, and the mystery form of the kingdom appears.

- in John’s gospel when the Jews rejected Christ, and he finished his public dealings with them.

- in Acts 28 when the Jews rejected the risen Christ, and God turned to the Gentiles for the Church Age.

- in Isaiah 6, it introduces the Tribulation, where the Jews accept a false Christ.

Hence, it doesn’t teach personal reprobation, but national hardening.

viii) – x) All Calvinists use 3 passages in **Romans 9:13,18,21** to prove election and reprobation.

Romans 9 is their “haven of reprobation.” Romans 9-11 is a parenthesis where the Jew is considered nationally. Israel was an elect nation, as seen from these passages:

“For the Lord hath chosen Jacob unto himself, and Israel...” Psalm 135:4.

“Thy servant is in the midst of thy people which thou hast chosen.” 1 Kings 3:8.

“For Jacob my servant’s sake, and Israel mine elect....” Isaiah 45:4.

**Question 33: How could God reject those whom he had elected?** (Romans 11:1).

What about the faithfulness of God and His Word?

Romans 9 discusses the problem:

Calvinists 3 pillars of reprobation in Romans 9 are:

i) “Esau have I hated.” (Romans 9:13),

ii) “whom he will he hardeneth.” (Romans 9:18),

iii) “vessels of wrath fitted to destruction.” (Romans 9:22).

viii) **Romans 9:13** the Calvinist Hoeksema writes: “The predestination of Jacob and Esau is a personal election and reprobation unto salvation and eternal desolation respectively.” (Good Pleasure, p.24).

**Answer:** “The purpose of God according to election” (Romans 9:11) had nothing to do with individual salvation or reprobation at all. It concerned the Messianic line from Abraham to Isaac to Jacob to Jesus Christ. It was an election not to salvation, but to service, national preference and theocratic privileges.

Genesis 25:23 states that “Two nations are in thy womb and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger.” (Genesis 25:23).

**Romans 9:13** is quoted from Malachi 1:1-3 which was written 1400 years later:

“yet I loved Jacob and I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste.”

In Genesis we have a prophetic statement looking forward.

In Malachi we have an historical statement looking backward.

Even Calvin admits that this refers to Jacob’s and Esau’s posterity. (Institutes, p.930 (III. xxi. 7))

Calvinists claim that Jacob and Esau were not only types of their posterity, but types of all men.

This is false because:

a) God didn’t hate Esau in eternity past. He only hated him nationally after seeing his sins for 1400 years

b) Jesus loved the rich young ruler who rejected him. (Mark 10:22).

These references in Romans 9 refer to election to the Messianic line, rather than to personal eternal salvation. Romans 9:8 teaches that the Messianic line would be continued through Isaac, not Ishmael.

ix) **Romans 9:17,18** “For the Scripture saith unto Pharaoh,... Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.”

The Calvinist Herman Hoeksema writes: "Pharaoh was sovereignly hated from eternity, even as was Esau." (*Good Pleasure*, p.46).

If we prove that God did not reprobate Pharaoh from eternity, then we have proved that God reprobates no man from eternity. Pharaoh was raised up to show God's power, not to be damned to hell by a sovereign, eternal decree. The purpose of raising Pharaoh up from sickness was:

- a) That God might prove to Israel that He was the Lord who delivered them. (Ex. 6:6,7; 10:1,2; 13:14-16)
- b) To show Pharaoh that YHWH was the only true God. (Exodus 9:14).
- c) To show the Egyptians that YHWH was the Lord. (Exodus 7:5; 14:4,18).
- d) That God's name would be declared throughout the whole earth. (Exodus 9:16).

**x) Romans 9:22** Calvinists refer to the "vessels of wrath fitted to destruction" as the reprobate.

Pink writes regarding these "vessels of wrath": "He fits the non-elect unto destruction by his foreordaining decrees." (Sovereignty of God, p.96).

**Answer:** The potter and the clay was a common OT illustration. (Isaiah 29:16; 45:9; 64:8; Jer. 18:1-6), yet it never referred to anyone's salvation. Israel was the clay. Vessels are made empty, and bring honour or dishonour according to what is put in them. God doesn't make anyone honourable or dishonourable. The individual determines what kind of vessel he will be:

"If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour,... prepared unto every good work." (2 Timothy 2:20,21)

**xi) Jeremiah 18:1-10** compares Israel with clay, God as the potter, the marring of the clay (v.4) was evil disobedience in Israel (v.10), and God making it again refers to God's discipline of Israel.

Verse 9,10 discuss God's change of plans from good to evil for nations who do evil.

**Calvinists miss the context** by thinking this passage teaches individual reprobation of people in eternity past by a sovereign decree. Israel as the vessels of wrath, fitted themselves to destruction because they "stumbled at that stumblingstone" (Romans 9:32), were "guilty of the blood of Christ" (Matthew 27:25), and were "enemies of the gospel" (Romans 11:28).

Just as Israel was shown mercy in Pharaoh's day (Romans 9:15-18) yet became vessels of wrath in Romans 9:21, so individual Jews who rejected Christ could become "vessels of mercy" if they accepted Christ. (1 Timothy 1:13,16).

**Key note:** All men are "vessels of wrath" (Ephesians 2:3), but God will have mercy on all who receive Christ (Romans 11:30-32; 1 Peter 2:10). The **Calvinist error** in Romans 9 is in reading sovereign personal election and reprobation into a passage teaching national election of Israel to service and God disciplining Israel for their sins.

**Conclusion:** When a man is reserved, appointed or ordained to condemnation, it is always because of something evil he did, not by an eternal decree of reprobation.

### **Refuting 7 Kinds of Unconditional Election to Salvation "Proof" Texts**

The fallacy of Calvinist Unconditional Election is that they teach that mankind is divided into 2 groups: the "elect" and the "reprobate." However, the truth is that God has made all men the same because:

"The Lord .....he beholdeth all the sons of men.....he fashioneth their hearts alike;" Psalm 33:13-15.

Hence,

i) there is no such thing as God's one, eternal, sovereign, all-encompassing decree, and

ii) there is no such thing as "the elect" or "reprobate."

Scripture proves that salvation is not limited to "the elect:"

- If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink." (John 7:37).

- "To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins." (Acts 10:43).

- "whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed." (Romans 9:33).

- "he that believeth on him shall not be confounded." (1 Peter 2:6).

- "Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God." (1 John 5:1).

- "Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely." (Revelation 22:17).

### **Question 34: How do Calvinists get around these clear verses on free will?**

**Answer:** They either ignore them, deny them or lie about their existence, by saying things like:

"The saving grace of God, changing the heart of the sinner precedes the will to come to Christ." (Hoeksema, "*Whosoever Will*" p.24).

Chafer says "It is misleading to assert...that whosoever God wills may come." (Theology, vol. 6, p.252).

**Note:** The above verses teach that "whosoever himself wills", not "whosoever God wills."

**Question 35: Does God have a predetermined number of elect people** waiting to be saved by Irresistible Grace, as Calvinists claim?

**Answer:** Consider the Bible's reply to Calvinist's "proof texts:"

#### **1. God's People:**

i) "I have much people in this city." (**Acts 18:10**).

Calvinists think this verse teaches that God has a predetermined number of unsaved people in Corinth waiting to be saved by Irresistible Grace. The standard Calvinist interpretation is:

- "Being assured that God had chosen many to salvation, Paul set out to reap the harvest."

[David Nettleton (GARBC President) "*Chosen to Salvation*", RBP, 1983, p.161].

- Before Paul and the gospel ever got to Corinth, the Lord had much people there by virtue of God's election of many in that city." (D. Englesma, *Hyper-Calvinism*, p.57).

**Answer:** That the Lord had "much people" in Corinth there is no doubt, but who were they?

They were NOT unsaved elect, because unsaved people are never spoken of as God's people. The Bible describes unsaved people as "children of disobedience" (Eph. 2:2), "children of wrath" (Eph. 2:3).

**Key:** The "much people" are defined in v.1-9 as:

a) Aquila and Priscilla (v.2),

b) Jews and Greeks that Paul persuaded in the synagogue (v.4),

c) Silas and Timotheus (v.5),

d) Justus (v.7),

e) Crispus and all his family (v.8),

f) Many Corinthians who heard, believed and were baptised (v.8).

ii) **Book of Life.** Are the elect's names written in the Lamb's Book of Life, and the non-elect's names not written there? "And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." (**Revelation 13:8**).



“...they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names **were not written** in the book of life from the foundation of the world...” (**Revelation 17:8**).

**Answer:** Everybody’s name is written in the Lamb’s book of life at birth. When they willfully reject Christ their names are blotted out of the book of life. (Revelation 3:5; 22:19).

iii) **God’s Sheep:** Are God’s sheep the “elect”? (**John 10:14-16, 26**).

Calvinists like Pink think that the “elect” are “sheep” before they are born. (Satisfaction, p.251,252).

**Answer:** 2 problems with this are:

a) If the “elect” are sheep before they believe, then they already have eternal life. (John 10:28).

If sheep were never goats, then this contradicts the truth that all are born “dead in trespasses and sins.” (Ephesians 2:1).

b) **Who are the sheep?** The sheep are **Israel** according to Micaiah (I Kings 22:17), Asaph (Psalm 74:1; 78:52; 79:13), David (Psalm 119:176), Isaiah (Isaiah 53:6), Jeremiah (Jer. 23:1; 50:6,17), Ezekiel (34:6,11,12), and Jesus Christ (Matthew 10:6; 15:24).

“Go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.” (Matthew 10:6).

When Christ came, his sheep, like Simeon (Luke 2:25), Anna (Luke 2:36-38), Zacharias and Elisabeth (Luke 1:5, 6), the shepherds (Luke 2:8-20), and the disciples (John 1:40-49), knew him (John 10:14), followed him (John 10:27), and received eternal life (John 10:28).

## 2. Given to Salvation.

### **Question 36: Does God the Father give “the elect” to God the Son?**

**(John 6:37).**

“All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.”

“And this is the Father’s will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.” (**John 6:39**).

Calvinists presume that “only those whom the Father gives to Christ can come to him.” (Palmer, p.27).

**Answer:** i) That this will of the Father was not a sovereign, eternal decree is clear because

one of

those given to Christ was a devil (John 6:70), who was lost (John 17:12). Believers cannot become

lost, so this does not refer to all believers.

“that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.” (John 17:2). John 17:6,9,11,12,24. Calvinists connect these verses to John 6:37 and presume that the word “give” proves that God the Father by Unconditional Election gave the “elect” to God the Son before the foundation of the world so He could make a Limited Atonement for them.

ii) John 6:37 reads that the Father gives to Christ those who believe, as v.45 teaches:

“Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh to me.”

iii) John 17:6 says that Jesus manifested His ‘name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world’

**Answer:** - Christ hasn’t manifested His name to anyone since then.

- These given to Christ were men. Are all women lost? No!

iv) “thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.” (John 17:6).

Have all Christians kept God’s Word? No. Hence this doesn’t refer to all Christians.

v) **Christ personally gave them the Father’s words.** (John 17:8,14). We have the Bible, but Christ didn’t personally give it to us.

**Conclusion:** Yes, a definite group was given to Christ during His earthly ministry, and not before the foundation of the world. The ones given by the Father to the Son were the little flock of Jewish disciples, known as apostles, and his sheep. (John 10:27,29).

3. **Ordained to Salvation.** All Calvinists use Acts 13:48 to support the claim that every saved person was ‘ordained to eternal life’ before the foundation of the world by a sovereign, eternal decree.

**Answer:** The word ‘ordain’ never refers in the Bible to an unconditional, sovereign, eternal decree:

i) Judas was ‘ordained’ with the other 11 disciples (Mark 3:14), yet he turned out to be a devil (John 6:70)

ii) God did not accept the sacrifices of priests who were ordained after Calvary (Hebrews 5:1; 10:10-14)

iii) God has ordained that all pastors who preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel (I Corinthians 9:14), but not all do so;

iv) Do all Christians practise good works, even though ‘God has before ordained that we should walk in them?’ (Ephesians 2:10).

**Note:** Acts 13:48 says ‘ordained’ not ‘fore-ordained.’

4. **Chosen to Salvation.** Any verse mentioning the word ‘chosen’ or ‘choose’ is a ripe candidate to support Calvinism. It doesn’t matter if salvation is not the context. So then to a Calvinist, if someone is ‘chosen,’ he always reads it as unconditionally, sovereignly, eternally elected to salvation.

i) **Matthew 20:16; 22:14** ‘For many be called, but **few chosen**.’ (Matthew 22:14).

a) Calvinists after ‘chosen’ add the words ‘to salvation’, which is nowhere in the context.

b) Both passages concern ‘the Kingdom of heaven’ (Matthew 20:1; 22:2), not heaven or salvation.

c) Both passages are parables, not doctrinal statements on salvation.

d) Matthew 20:1-16 concerns labourers, whereas salvation is a gift (Romans 6:23; Ephesians 2:8).

e) In Matthew 22:14 the ones chosen, are chosen because they accepted the invitation (Matthew 22:9), and had the prescribed wedding garment (Matthew 22:11).

f) The ones chosen were ‘bid to the marriage’ (Matthew 22:9), not fore-ordained to go.

g) The ones chosen were ‘good and bad’ (Matthew 22:10), not just the ‘elect’;

h) The ones chosen responded to a general invitation (Matthew 22:9).

ii) **John 15:16.** Christ chooses his disciples to bear fruit, not to be saved.

The **error** of Calvinists twisting this verse is seen by comparing John 6:70, “Have not I **chosen** you twelve, and one of you is a **devil**,” with Mark 3:13-14 which says, ‘He **ordained twelve**, that they should be with him.’ By reading Unconditional Election into these verses, we end up with a sovereignly elected, irresistably called, ordained devil. (John 6:70).

iii) **Acts 9:15.** ‘He (Paul) is a chosen vessel unto me, to **bear my name** before the Gentiles.’ (Acts 9:15) ‘The God of our fathers has chosen thee, that thou shouldst **know his will** and **see that Just One**, and shouldst hear the voice of his mouth.’ (Acts 22:14). The Calvinist, Culance, said that Ananias knew Saul was elect: “Ananias knew that the

unsaved man to whom he was called to minister the Gospel was numbered among God's elect." (p.283).

**Answer:** Paul was a chosen vessel. However, Paul was already saved when he went to Ananias. He was not chosen to salvation, but he was chosen to 'bear the Lord's name' (Acts 9:15); to know God's will (Acts 22:14); to see Christ and hear his voice (Acts 22:14); to be a minister and a witness (Acts 26:16); to open the Gentiles eyes and turn them to God (Acts 26:18). Calvinists don't see the context.

iv) **Galatians 1:15,16** is used by Calvinists to teach Unconditional Election: 'But it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace to reveal his Son in me.'

That Galatians 1:15,16 and Jeremiah 1:5 do not teach Unconditional Election of prophets from eternity past, is seen by these truths:

- Paul's election was not to 'salvation and life', but to '**office and service**';
- Election is supposed to be eternal, but these verses teach that it is only from their **mothers' wombs**. This overthrows Unconditional Election from eternity past;
- Paul was separated on another occasion. It was not to salvation, but to go on his first missionary journey (Acts 13:2) after he was saved: "Separate me Barnabus and Saul for the work..."
- Paul classified himself as the "chief of sinners" (I Timothy 1:15), not as someone who had an eternal union with Christ.

v) **I Peter 2:9** is used to support Unconditional Election:

"But ye are a **chosen generation**, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light."

**Answer:**

- It is not said when this choosing took place, why it took place, or what they were chosen for;
- It is clear that individuals are not the subject, but the **church** as a **collective body** is in view.

vi) **Psalm 65:4** "Blessed is the man whom **thou chooseth**, and causeth to approach unto thee, that he may dwell in thy courts: we shall be satisfied with the goodness of thy house, even of thy holy temple." **Answer:** a) This verse speaks of God's courts, God's house, and God's temple, **not about salvation**.

- The time of choosing is not mentioned;
- New Testament salvation is not even remotely connected with the verse.

vii) **James 2:5** "Hath not **God chosen** the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?"

**Answer:** Is every welfare recipient one of the 'elect' and 'chosen to salvation'? No! It just means that generally speaking poor people are more receptive to the Gospel than rich people.

viii) **II Thessalonians 2:13** "God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth."

**Answer:** The Thessalonians were chosen from the beginning of what? The phrase 'from the beginning' according to Calvinists means eternity past, but from the Bible it means when we are saved as seen from Romans 16:7. Paul stated that Andronicus and Junia

were in Christ before him. This contradicts the Calvinist view that all the elect were in Christ from eternity past.

**Key:** "Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen and my fellowprisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me." (Romans 16:7).

**Key:** Hence, in Calvinism the 'elect' are all put in Christ at the same time (eternity past), but in the Bible no one is put in Christ until he is saved. In II Thessalonians 2:13,

Calvinists have transported the phrase "from the beginning" back to "before the foundation of the world" to line up with their theology. The Bible defines the phrase 'from the beginning' as being the time Paul departed from Macedonia and came to Thessalonica: 'Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only. For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.' (Phil 4:15,16). Hence Paul defines the 'beginning of the gospel' as when he left the city of Philippi to begin his departure from the province of Macedonia. Thessalonica is in Macedonia. Hence God chose that the Thessalonians would hear the gospel from the beginning of Paul's departure from Philippi (II Thess. 2:13) to get the gospel preached to them when the Lord gave Paul the Macedonian call in Acts 16:10.

Notice that God chose the Thessalonians to salvation not by a sovereign decree in eternity past, but 'through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth,' which choosing and belief took place in 53 AD (Acts 16:9,10 and 17:1-4). The conditions for God saving the Thessalonians are stated as sanctification of the Spirit and belief/obedience in the truth of Christ's blood sacrifice in both

II Thessalonians 2:13 and I Peter 1:2. See Spiros Zodhiates, NT Word Study Dictionary:

**Note: a)** The Greek phrase for 'from the beginning' is "απ αρχη" (ap' arche), which is different from the phrase "from eternity", "απ αιωνος" (ap aionos) as in Acts 15:18 ("known from eternity" ("απ αιωνος") are to God all his works"). Hence God did not choose the Thessalonians from eternity past, but from the beginning of when Paul left Philippi.

**b)** Calvinists err presuming that 'from the beginning' means from before the beginning of the world, by changing 'from the beginning' to 'before the foundation of the world', hoping nobody will notice.

**c)** Greek authority S. Zodhiates writes of this verse: "With a preposition preceding: apo (575), from, ap' arches (746), from the beginning: (B) Of any particular thing eg: of the gospel dispensation, or of Christian experience meaning from the first (Luke 1:2; John 15:27; Acts 26:4; **II Thessalonians 2:13**; I John 1:1; 2:7,13,14,24; 3:11; II John 5,6). (*Complete New Testament Word Study Dictionary* p.261). The same expression occurs in Acts 26:4, 'My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first' ("απ αρχης") among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews.'

This is clearly not referring to eternity past, nor do most occurrences of this phrase ("απ αρχης").

ix) **Ephesians 1:4** is the twin Calvinist proof text of II Thessalonians 2:13 used to teach Unconditional Election to salvation in eternity past: "According as he hath **chosen us in him before the foundation of the world**, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love." (Ephesians 1:4).

**Answer:** a) Election is neither mentioned here nor anywhere in Ephesians.

b) The choosing is 'that we should be holy and without blame', not that we should be saved or 'in Christ.' This may be why Calvinists mostly quote only the first half of this verse.

c) The correct interpretation is seen by noting the connection of 'according as' at the start of v.4, with 'in heavenly places' at the end of v.3. 'Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love'. (Ephesians 1:3,4).

**Note:** The choosing had nothing to do with salvation, but concerned our position in Christ.

**Once a man gets 'in Christ' he gets in on the choosing.**

**Key:** God chose that whoever was in Christ would be blessed 'with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places,' and be 'holy and without blame before him in love.' Calvinists err in thinking that v.4 teaches how we get in Christ.

x) **II Timothy 1:9** 'Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.'

**Question 37: When did God give us saving grace?**

In eternity past (Calvinist position), or when we got 'in Christ' (Bible)? The Calvinist Baker (p.102) says, 'Paul declared clearly that the elect had been given grace before they ever existed.'

**Answer:** Grace was not physically given to any man 'before the world began', because there were no men around to give it to. Grace was 'given to us in Christ Jesus.'

**Key:** God deposited grace in Christ before the world began. It was only given to us when we got 'in Christ.' This grace 'is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ.' 2Timothy1:10.

xi) An even greater error of Calvinism is to unite the phrases 'in him' (Ephesians 1:4) and 'in Christ Jesus' (II Timothy 1:9), with 'before the foundation of the world' (Ephesians 1:4) and 'before the world began' (II Timothy 1:9), to teach that the 'elect were in Christ before the world began. This teaching of the 'eternal union' of 'the elect' with Christ is also based on **Jeremiah 31:3**,

'The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.' (Jeremiah 31:3).

Calvinists use this verse to teach Irresistible Grace, and that because of this 'eternal union', God eternally loved the elect. The result of an 'eternal union' & an 'eternal love' is an 'unregenerate, elect sheep' that is considered a child of God.

**Question 38:** If the 'elect' were always children of God, could they have ever been children of the devil?

**Answer:** According to Ephesians 2:1-3 and 12, the 'elect' were 'children of wrath' (Ephesians 2:3), and 'without God' (Ephesians 2:12), and not children of God. The problem Calvinists create for themselves is that, before the 'elect' got 'in Adam' (I Corinthians 15:22) they already had a relationship with Christ. This means that, according to Calvinism:

- The Fall didn't affect the elect. It was only the means of reprobating the 'non-elect';
- This Fall that wasn't a fall, allows Calvinists like Pink to claim that one can be dead 'in sin' and yet be 'in Christ' at the same time. (*Exodus, p 19*);

- None of the elect have ever been in danger of going to hell:

- 'before God, His people are justified from eternity: and he beholds them forever as perfectly righteous in Christ.' (Hoeksema, *Grace, p.73*).

**Answer:** This is a complete overthrow of the Gospel. How could the elect ever be lost? The Bible refutes this Calvinist nonsense by teaching that the Fall affected all men equally: 'Wherefore, as by one man sin entered the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned'. (Romans 5:12). 'For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.' (I Corinthians 15:22).

**Note:** No-one was ever 'in Christ' until his salvation: 'Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellowprisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.' (Romans 16:7). In Calvinism, the 'elect' are all put in Christ at the same time, in eternity past.

In the Bible, no-one is put in Christ until he is saved.

## 5. Elected to Salvation

None of the Calvinist proof texts for Unconditional Election contain any form of the word 'election'. You would expect verses containing a form of the word election would strongly teach this doctrine. Bible uses of election are:

i) **Jesus Christ.** When the word 'elect' is applied to Christ, it emphasises His value and worth, not His selection to salvation: 'Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; . .' (**Isaiah 42:1; Matthew 12:18**).

'Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious; and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded'. (**I Peter 2:6; Isaiah 28:16**).

ii) **Angels.** 'I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.' (**I Timothy 5:21**). *The Westminster Confession of Faith* teaches the election and reprobation of men and angels:

'By the decree of God, for the manifestation of his glory some men and angels are predestined

unto everlasting life; and others foreordained to everlasting death.' (III, 3).

Pink writes: "God in the past made a selection among the hosts of heaven, choosing some to be vessels of honour, and others to be vessels of dishonour. Those whom He chose unto His favour, stood steadfast and remained in subjection to His will. The rest fell when Satan revolted, for upon his apostasy he dragged down with himself one-third of the angels. (Revelation 12:4).

Concerning them we read, "God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness" (II Peter 2:4). Those who belong to the election of grace

are "the holy angels": holy as the consequence of their election, and not elected because they were holy, for election antedated their creation." (Pink, *Election, p.37*).

**Answer: a)** No angel was ever said to be elected before the foundation of the world by a sovereign, eternal decree. Some angels have already fallen (Genesis 6:2), and are captive in chains of darkness of hell to be judged at a later day (II Peter 2:4; Jude 6) by their replacements (I Corinthians 6:3) the sons of God by faith in Christ (I John 3:2).

**Key:** God chose the angels that didn't fall, hence they are called 'elect angels.' The election of angels parallels that of Christ. They are appraised or assessed as elect and holy, not selected to be holy. (Matthew 25:31).

b) 'Elect' cannot refer to holy angels because they never fell to be elected back to holiness.

c) Revelation 12:4 takes place in the future Tribulation, not before Genesis 1:1.

iii) **Israel** is said to be God's elect (Isaiah 45:4; 65:9,22). God chose Israel to be a peculiar people above all nations (Deuteronomy 14:2). This was a pure case of Unconditional Election of a nation,

not of individuals. God did not choose each individual Jew to be elect. They were either

- born into it by being a descendant of Jacob, or
- chose of their own free will to be one of the 'elect', like the proselyte Ruth (Ruth 1:16).

The salvation and damnation of individuals was not the purpose of their election, as seen from Romans 9 where many members of the nation of Israel were reprobate.

**Key:** This election was because of their birth, not individual, not to do with salvation, and not by a sovereign, eternal decree. The national election of Israel is seen in the New Testament. Contrary to Amillennial and Post-millennial Calvinists, God is not finished with His elect nation Israel (Romans 11:1,25-27). **Failing to recognise that Israel is still called the 'elect' in the New Testament** has caused much misinterpretation of Scripture, such as:

a) **Matthew 24:22,24,31** 'And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.' The context of Matthew 24 is the future Tribulation (v.21,29) called the 'time of Jacob's trouble' (Jeremiah 30:7). Those addressed are not 'elect sinners' waiting to be saved by Irresistible Grace, but **Jewish saints**. The context of Matthew 24:13 has nothing to do with the salvation of anyone in the Church age, but here, as throughout this entire Olivet Discourse, the elect is Israel.

b) **II Timothy 2:10** is another case of Israel as an elect nation being mistaken for the church. 'Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.' Calvinists think the elect here are 'God's people' who were elected before the foundation of the world.

**Answer:** This passage refers to elect Israelites, not unsaved 'elected' Gentiles. If the 'elect' were elected before the foundation of the world by an unconditional, efficacious, sovereign, irresistible, eternal decree, then they could never miss salvation, whether Paul preached it or not. To believe that Paul strove (Romans 15:20) and laboured in the gospel (Philippians 4:3), enduring beatings (II Timothy 2:10), stonings, imprisonments, shipwreck, perils, pain, hunger and cold (II Corinthians 11:23-27) for the sake of the 'elect' who would certainly be saved, is the most foolish excuse ever offered to support Unconditional Election. Paul longed to see his fellow Jews saved (Romans 9:1-3; 10:1-3; 11:12-14), but not by Unconditional Election.

c) **Luke 18:7,8** 'And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?'

**Question 39: Who are these elect? When, why and how** they were elected is not mentioned.

**Answer:** There is no basis in this verse to teach Unconditional Election.

- Historically, God's own elect are Jews, as seen from other Gospel references;
- Spiritually, the elect may apply to anyone saved in any time;
- Doctrinally, the elect are likely to be **suffering saints in the Tribulation** (Revelation 6:9-10, the martyred saints crying out to God for revenge). The verse concerns prayer (Luke 18:1), not a sovereign, eternal, decree.

d) **Romans 9:11** 'For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth.'

**Answer:** Paul argues that there is an Israel within Israel (Romans 9:6). The 'purpose of God according to election' has nothing to do with individual salvation or reprobation, but concerns the election of national preference of the **Messianic line** through Abraham, Isaac, Jacob to Jesus Christ.

e) **Romans 11:28** 'As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sake.' This refers to the **whole of the nation Israel** and has nothing to do with salvation.

f) **Romans 11:5,7** 'Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace....What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded.' (Romans 11:5,7). Calvinists see Unconditional Election to salvation here because these verses concern only a portion of Israel.

**Answer:** The Romans 9-11 parenthesis considers the problem of how God could reject the nation of Israel whom He had elected. Personal election and reprobation of all individual humans is not even remotely discussed. The 'even so' of Romans 11:5 links it to v.4. Hence, the 'remnant according to the election of grace' (v.5) corresponds to the seven thousand men reserved to God who had not bowed the knee to the image of Baal. (v.4). Calvinists focus on the word **'reserved.'**

**Question 40: Why were these 7,000 men reserved to God?** Was it because of God's decree of Unconditional Election?

**Answer:** Not at all. They were reserved because they hadn't bowed to Baal's image. As there was a remnant in Elijah's days, so now there is a remnant.

**Question 41: What was it that Israel sought after?** (Romans 9:31; 10:3).

**Answer:** Their own righteousness of keeping the law.

**Question 42: Why did most of Israel fail to obtain God's righteousness?**

**Answer:** 'They sought it not by faith.' (Romans 9:32-3). Only the remnant of Israel who sought righteousness by faith participated in the 'election of grace.' The remnant obtained salvation because they received Christ, not because they were unconditionally elected to be overcome by Irresistible Grace. The blinding of those who did not partake in the 'election of grace' (Romans 11:5) was because they sought it by works. That part of Israel which 'hath not obtained that which he seeketh for' (Romans 11:7) did not fail because they were hardened, they were hardened because they failed. Works nullify both faith (Romans 4:5) and grace (Romans 11:6). Their blindness was national in scope and temporary in nature (Romans 11:25). 'Reprobate' Israel will one day become 'elect' Israel.

#### iv) Church.

Calvinists claim 'There is only one way that leads to salvation and that is the way of God's election.' (*Berkouwer, p.74*).

**Answer:** The nine New Testament occurrences of 'elect' are never connected with any decree of God – sovereign, eternal or otherwise.

a) **I Peter 5:13** 'The church, **elect** together with you saluteth you; and so does Marcus my son.' Notice that no individual is said to be elected, and nothing is said about when, how or why anyone was elected.

b) **I Thessalonians 1:4** 'Knowing brethren beloved, your election of God.' Notice that there is no mention of the time of this election, no eternal decree, no reason given, and no method of this election. Instead, it refers to how the Thessalonians received the gospel **by God electing Paul to go to Macedonia**. (Thessalonica is in Macedonia).

- c) **II Peter 1:10** 'Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.'  
**Key:** This verse destroys TULIP Calvinism because calling comes first, then election follows after. Pink panicked at this verse by saying it is 'sheer blasphemy' if you disagree with his reading Unconditional Election into II Peter 1:10 (*Election, p.137*), because all his life he taught that election comes first, then calling later. 'Effectual calling is the consequence of election' (*Election, Pink, p.138*)  
**Question 43: How could anyone 'give diligence' to make sure a supposedly irresistible, sovereign, eternal decree that was sure to happen any way?**  
No-one could make it sure because God already made it sure. The Calvinist Custance correctly makes the calling and election relate to service, not salvation. (*Custance, p. 249*).
- d) The word 'elect' is applied to **Christians** 6 times. None of these verses says that election is a decree of God, none says it is eternal, none says it is unconditional, & none says that it results in salvation. The word 'elect' in these verses is simply a **title** for New Testament Christians, showing our **value, worth, appraisal and assessment**. Thus the use of 'elect' parallels the election of Jesus Christ and the angels. 'Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.' Rom. 8:33  
 'Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering.' (Colossians 3:12).  
 'Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness.' (Titus 1:1).  
 'Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ:' (I Peter 1:2).  
 'The elder unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth'. (II John 1).  
 'The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.' (II John 13).  
**Answer:** Calvinists want us to believe that because the word 'elect' occurs in the New Testament, their doctrine of an eternal, sovereign, irresistible, unconditional election must be Biblical.  
 They want us to read this into the text. These verses show that no-one is elect until they are saved. Believers are described as elect, justified, holy, beloved and have faith. None of these descriptions is true of believers from eternity past.

**Question 44: How do Calvinists build a case for eternal, unconditional election?**

**Answer:** They go elsewhere to get this teaching, then read it back into every verse where election is found. They follow this sequence of verses:

- Calvinists start at **I Peter 1:2** since salvation is mentioned in the same verse as election. Calvinists like Pink change foreknowledge here to fore-ordination (*Sovereignty, p. 57,58*). Acts 2:23 forces Calvinists to treat foreknowledge as foreknowledge and not fore-ordination, because foreknowledge follows the 'determinate counsel' of God. Some Calvinists avoid I Peter 1:2 because it does not say that election took place before the foundation of the world. Because foreknowledge is mentioned, they connect this verse to:  
 2) **Romans 8:29, 30** 'For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son.' Now that 'predestination' is introduced, they link this with:

- Ephesians 1:4,5** because v.5 contains the word 'predestinate' and v.4 mentions the terms 'chosen' and 'before the foundation of the world.'
- II Thessalonians 2:13** is quoted: 'God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation', while they fail to quote the rest of the verse which teaches both the divine initiative and human response in salvation 'through sanctification of the spirit, and belief of the truth'. For support they turn to:
- Acts 13:48** 'as many as were ordained to eternal life believed', without checking either the Greek meaning of 'ordained' or when this ordaining took place. They finally appeal to:
- Romans 9,10,11** and a few other verses to teach election to reprobation.

**The True Meaning of Election = Corporate Election of the Church, not Individual Election to salvation.**

When Peter describes New Testament believers, he quotes from the Old Testament and hence reveals the true meaning of New Testament election:  
 'But ye are a <sup>1</sup>chosen generation, a <sup>2</sup>royal priesthood, an <sup>3</sup>holy nation, a <sup>4</sup>peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light.' I Peter 2:9. This fourfold description of the **New Testament church** is quoted from God's fourfold description of **Old Testament Israel**: 'And ye shall be unto me a <sup>2</sup>kingdom of priests, and a <sup>3</sup>holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.' (Exodus 19:6).  
 'For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God, and the LORD hath chosen thee to be a <sup>4</sup>peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth'. (Deuteronomy 14:2).

**Key:** Calvinists have completely missed and overlooked the fact that, as the **nation of Israel** was corporately elect as a **body**, so also was the **Church elected as a body**. (Ephesians 1:22,23; Col.1:18). Rather than see the truth of corporate election, the Amillennial and Postmillennial Calvinists think that God has permanently rejected Israel and so they get all of Israel's blessings, but none of their curses.

**Note:** Calvinists completely miss the significance of Christians being described in this fourfold manner.

Forster and Marston rightly say: 'The prime point is that the election of the church is a **corporate** rather than an **individual** thing. It is not that individuals are in the church because they are elect, it is rather that they are elect because they are in the church.' (p.137). William Klein similarly concluded: 'In the old covenant a person entered the chosen nation of Israel through natural birth. In the new covenant, a person enters the chosen body, the church, through the new birth. To exercise faith in Christ, is to enter into his body and become one of the 'chosen ones.' (Klein, p 265). Hence, **New Testament election is of the body** and includes individual men only in association with the body. Election has nothing to do with how any man gets into the body.

Our **election of the New Testament church** is **typified by God's election of Israel** in three ways:

- As national election of Israel included only those 'in Jacob', so to get into New Testament election one must be 'in Christ.'
- As Old Testament Individuals were only elect according to their relationship to the nation of Israel, so New Testament individuals are elect only according to their relationship with Christ.

- c) **Key:** As God did not choose each individual Jew to be one of the elect, so God does not choose each individual Christian to be one of the elect – they are born into it. No unsaved man was ever elected to anything. **The basic error of Calvinism is to confuse election with salvation.**

In summary, the same five principles about Israel's election also apply to the Church's election:

1. Individuals are elect only according to their relationship to the elect one (Jacob or Christ);
2. God did not choose any individual;
3. The elect are only elect because of their birth (natural birth into Old Testament Israel, or new birth into the New Testament church);
4. Their election had nothing to do with salvation, but with service;
5. Their election was not by a sovereign, eternal decree.

#### **6. Predestined to Salvation?**

Predestine only occurs 4 times in NT. The context always determines what the person is predestined to.

#### **Question 45: Does the Biblical use of predestination match the Calvinists' definition?**

**Answer:** No. The Westminster Confession defines predestination as: 'By the decree of God, for the manifestation of his own glory, some men and angels are predestinated unto everlasting life, and others foreordained to everlasting death.' (III, 3).

#### **Question 46: What does the Bible say we are predestined to? Answer:**

- a) Son-placing in heaven: 'Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children (Greek: huiothesia = son placing) by Jesus Christ unto himself, according to the good pleasure of his will.' (Ephesians 1:5).
- b) Praise his glory: 'In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.' (Ephesians 1:11,12).
- c) Conformed to the image of his Son in heaven: 'For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called, and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.' (Romans 8:29,30).

Notice how these verses refute the Calvinist position:

- a) Predestination is never called a decree of God;
- b) Predestination is never said to take place before the foundation of the world;
- c) No-one is said to be predestined to salvation;
- d) No-one is said to be predestined to hell, condemnation, judgment or everlasting death;
- e) None of these verses mention predestination of angels.

**Conclusion:** Hence, what the Bible says about predestination is irreconcilable with what Calvinists say about it. Predestination only concerns our destiny as Christians.

**Note:** Three Scriptures overthrow Calvinistic foreknowledge, that God had an eternal love for the elect:

- a) 'But Jesus did not commit himself unto them because he knew all men.' (John 2:24). Hence Christ 'knew all men', not just the 'elect'.

- b) Christ did not know the 'elect' until their conversion: 'Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods. But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereinto ye desire again to be in bondage?' (Galatians 4:8,9). Hence, God could not have had an eternal, loving relationship with the 'elect' if He never knew them before their conversion.
- c) God foreknew the whole nation of Israel, but this didn't guarantee the salvation of anyone in the nation. 'I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew.' (Romans 11:1,2). All Calvinists agree that 'his people' means national Israel, but in v.2 God foreknew these people, yet not all Israelites were saved. Hence, foreknowledge here has nothing to do with foreordination to salvation. Believers are predestined by God to be conformed to the image of His Son (Romans 8:29). 'And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.' (I Corinthians 15:49; I John 3:2).

**Conclusion:** No unsaved man was predestined to anything.

**Calvinists' basic error is to confuse election and predestination with salvation.**

**Note:** It is only by constructing an order of salvation to match the TULIP theology, that Calvinists can appeal to the predestination verses in Romans.

**Elect Infants:** If God unconditionally determines the eternal destiny of every member of the human race, then this includes infants, because all men, whether 'elect' or 'reprobate,' first have to be born as infants. The problem for Calvinists is, what happens when an infant dies? Does he go to heaven or hell?

#### **Question 47: Are children who die in infancy counted among the 'elect'?**

**Key:** The obvious implication of Unconditional Election is that a dead infant is equally likely to be 'elect' or 'reprobate.' The most consistent Calvinist was Augustine, who held to the damnation of 'non-elect' and non-baptised infants. (*Webb*, p. 312,313; *Schaff History*, Vol. 8, p.556). Zwingli was the only Reformer who believed unconditionally in universal salvation for all infants by Christ's Atonement. When it comes to unambiguously stating that all infants who die are saved, most Calvinists hesitate.

**Note:** The uncertain, wavering attitude of Calvinists on the salvation of infants is a far cry from their dogmatic assertions about the reprobation of adult 'non-elect.'

**Key:** If Calvinists teach that **all dead infants go to heaven**, then this overthrows their whole system of Unconditional Election and Covenant theology. If Calvinists teach that **non-elect dead infants go to hellfire** forever, then this attacks the justice, mercy and love of God, as well as grossly offending normal human nature. Hence, Calvinists as a rule insist that all children who die in infancy are part of the 'elect.' They thus refute their own error of Unconditional Election.

Most Calvinists teach that infant 'baptism' (sprinkling) replaces circumcision. (Hoeksema, *Dogmatics* p694).

The Calvinist Baptist Spurgeon strongly disagrees, saying: 'A human and carnal invention, an addition to the Word of God, and therefore wicked and injurious.' (Spurgeon, *Infant Salvation*, p.3).

Reformed Calvinists who quote Spurgeon in an attempt to convince Baptists to become Calvinists, suddenly cease appealing to Spurgeon when the subject of baptism comes up.

**Conclusions about Unconditional Election:** The doctrine of election, which Calvinists identify with Unconditional Election, is only as Calvinists think 'prominently revealed in God's Word' because Calvinists have read it into every possible passage.

- a) The **other side** of the 'elect' being predestined to salvation before the foundation of the world, is that God has **predestined** the '**reprobate**' to **damnation** before the foundation of the world. This is unbiblical and abhorrent to the nature of God and man. Calvinists see election and reprobation as the twin branches of predestination.
- b) In commenting on John 17 which Calvinists use to teach Unconditional Election, Martin Lloyd-Jones (1899-1981) shows Calvinists' belief in **fatalism** and **reprobation**: "My friend, if you are a Christian, do you know that you were the object of God's interest and concern before the foundation of the world? All these things have been worked out in eternity, before time, so you must always remember that nothing can happen in time which will make the slightest difference." (*Saved in Eternity*, p.16). The best an unbeliever can do is to hope he is one of the elect. Lam 3:26.
- c) **Shaky assurance of salvation:** Unconditional Election forces a Calvinist to seek assurance of salvation in a mysterious, sovereign, eternal decree of predestination, instead of the clear statements in the Bible. The Calvinist Coppes writes: 'Predestination is the fount of assurance of salvation and God's answer to doubt.' (p.25).
- d) **Missions and Evangelism:** If it be true, as Calvinists assert such as Zanchius that 'the number of the elect, and also of the reprobate, is so fixed and determinate that neither can be augmented or diminished.' (p.92) and Storms: 'But eventually, if they are elect, in God's appointed time they will believe.' (*Chosen for Life*, p.105), then what possible difference could it make whether one sent or withheld missionaries?
- e) **Confusing mass of Terminology:** Wesley said, 'Call it . . . Election, Preterition, Predestination or Reprobation, it comes in the end to the same thing: By virtue of an eternal, unchangeable, irresistible decree of God, one part of mankind is infallibly saved, and the rest are infallibly damned; it being impossible that any of the elect should be damned, or that any of the non-elect should be saved. But if this be so, then is all preaching vain.' (John Wesley, quoted in Sell, p.73).
- f) **Practical results of Unconditional Election:** Wesley charged it with:
  - making all preaching vain;
  - tending to destroy holiness (Why try if all is predestined?);
  - tending to destroy the comfort of religion (Where lies any comfort if all is predestined?);
  - tending to destroy zeal for good works, yea
  - tending to destroy the whole Christian revelation by involving it in fatal contradictions. (Why command us to obey if our obedience or disobedience is predetermined?)

### 3. LIMITED ATONEMENT

The first 4 points of TULIP Calvinism involve the prefixing of a qualifying term to a Biblical doctrine:

- a) **Depravity** of man is a Biblical doctrine, but **Total Depravity** is not;
- b) **Election** is Biblical, but **Unconditional Election** is not.
- c) **Atonement** of Christ is Biblical, but **Limited Atonement** is not.
- d) **Grace** is Biblical (170x) but **Irresistible Grace** is not.

Limited Atonement is the most objectionable part of Calvinism. It adds insult to injury, the injury being Unconditional Election, for if some are not elected to salvation, then what does it matter whether Christ died for them or not? The non-elect couldn't possibly be saved, whether Christ died for them or not. Due to Limited Atonement's **non-essential** and **objectionable** nature, it is rejected by many Baptists and others who hold to Unconditional Election. Limited Atonement is connected with Unconditional Election. These 2 doctrines stand or fall together. We cannot logically accept one and reject the other. Total Depravity demands that God must elect and irresistibly save any who will ever be saved. Limited Atonement is so objectionable because it is so blatantly anti-Biblical. Limited Atonement is called by other names to de-stigmatise its implications, such as 'particular redemption, effective redemption, limited redemption.'

**Definition of Limited Atonement:** 'The Lord Jesus, by his perfect obedience, and sacrifice of himself . . . purchased, not only reconciliation, but an everlasting inheritance in the kingdom of heaven, for all those whom the father hath given unto him.' (*Westminster Confession, VII:5*).

**Simple Definition:** 'Christ shed his blood and made an atonement only for the sins of the elect.'

The theory behind Limited Atonement is that Christ's blood was shed for the 'elect' because God did not want anyone else to be saved.

**Question 1: Calvinists ask why others were not elected.** Their answer is that God wanted them to go to hell. It is a waste of time to discuss Limited Atonement with a Calvinist, because, if Christ died 1000 deaths for the 'non-elect' they would still go to hell.

**Key Question 2: Did God intend to save all men, or did He not?** (Sexton, p 15).

#### **Calvinists' Accusations Against their Opponents:**

1. If you reject T, U or L you are accused of being an **Arminian**. 'It is simply Arminian to teach that Christ died for all men.' (Hoeksema, *Limited Atonement*, p 49). Once they call you an **Arminian**, they then accuse you of believing in **works for salvation**, or being **Arian**, **Pelagian** or **Socinian**. This trick is known as 'guilt by association.' Clark, a Calvinist, says: 'Though no one accuses Arminians of being Catholics, the two agree . . . that while Christ's sacrifice was necessary for salvation, it is not sufficient. Man must add some meritorious work of his own.' (Gordon H Clark, *The Atonement*, p.140). Boettner, a Calvinist, says: 'The Arminian theory that God is anxiously trying to convert sinners but not able to exert more than persuasive power without doing violence to their natures, is much the same as the old Persian view that there were two principles of good and evil at war with each other, neither of which was able to overcome the other.' (Boettner, *Predestination*, p.218).

**Question:** Do we reject the Trinity or Incarnation because Catholics or Arminians believe them? No.

2. Calvinists accuse believers in Unlimited Atonement of 'believing that **salvation is partly our own doing** . . . that we are not fully delivered from sin by the grace of God alone,' (Rose, p.30) and that 'they must be ready to bear the weight of their own guilt, ready to atone for their sins the best way they can.'
3. Boettner accuses his opponents of **disparaging God**: 'If Christ's death was intended to save all men, then we must say that God was either unable or unwilling to carry out his plans.' (Boettner, *Predestination*, p.155).

**Answer:** Does God have the right to set forth the terms and conditions of how one appropriates salvation? Yes.

4. Calvinists claim that if Christ made a Limited Atonement, then **some of his blood was wasted**. **Answer:** This accusation has no Biblical support and is false.
5. Calvinists misrepresent their opponents by saying that: 'Arminians have long accused Calvinists of **limiting the power of the atonement**.' (Talbot and Crampton, p.37). **Answer:** Calvinists don't limit the atonement's power, but its extent.
6. Calvinists teach that **Unlimited Atonement robs God of His glory**: 'Only Calvinism with its effective atonement limits man's power and exalts God's power and glory.' (Coppes, p.49).

#### **Four Point Calvinism**

The reason a four-point Calvinist opposes Limited Atonement is to divert attention away from the fact that **he still believes in Unconditional Election**, which predestines the **reprobate to hell** with no chance of salvation. By focusing his opponents' attention on an **extreme position** that he does not believe, the four-point Calvinist appears to take the middle ground and **appear orthodox**.

The belief of 5-point Calvinists is that God provides salvation for the **elect that the elect might be saved**. The belief of 4-point Calvinists is that God provides salvation for **all men that the elect might be saved**.

So what is the difference? If only the 'elect' will be saved, **it doesn't matter who Christ died for**. Hence Limited Atonement is of **no importance** to the TULIP system.

The four-point position is **inconsistent** because, 'Why should Jesus bear the sins of men, whom God's decree has predestined to hell and have no chance of forgiveness?'

#### **The Atonement**

The true nature of the Atonement is 'substitution', where Christ became a sin bearer and curse bearer, not only **on behalf of** others, but **in the place of** others (II Corinthians 5:21; Galatians 3:13).

Christ's death as a penal substitution presupposes that God's holiness and justice demand man's sins be punished. (I Timothy 1:15). God could not just forgive the sinner, but the sinner can only be forgiven on the ground of Another bearing his punishment. Christ did this voluntarily (John 10:17,18), completely (John 19:30), once for all (Hebrews 10:10), and by one offering (Hebrews 10:14) that God 'might be **just** and the **justifier** of him which believeth in Jesus.' (Romans 3:26). The grace of God is any move of God toward man. The New Testament only mentions the word 'atonement' once: 'We also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the **atonement**' (Romans 5:11).

Old Testament Atonements just **covered sin**. Christ's New Testament Atonement includes:

- a) **Sacrifice**: God's provision where sin might be covered and the liability of wrath and curse removed (I Corinthians 5:7; Ephesians 5:2; Hebrews 7:27; 10:10,12).
- b) **Ransom**: The securing of release from bondage by paying a price. To be **redeemed** is to be delivered by paying a ransom. Christ, in His sacrificial death, was our substitute, thus redeeming us (Matthew 20:28; Colossians 1:14; I Timothy 2:6; Titus 2:14; Hebrews 9:12; I Peter 1:18,19).
- c) **Expiation**: Christ's ransom sacrifice was an expiation in that it removed the **guilt** of sin by cancelling it and purging it out. (John 1:29; Hebrews 1:3; 9:14; 9:26).
- d) **Propitiation**: means to placate, pacify, **appease** and conciliate. These presuppose the wrath and displeasure of God at our sin. Hence, Liberals and Modernists dislike the idea of propitiation. Propitiation removes the judicial displeasure of God. It is turning away (or opposing) the wrath of a righteous God against sin, by accepting Christ's death as a satisfactory substitute. (Romans 3:25; I John 2:2; 4:10).

- e) **Reconciliation**: The propitiatory sacrifice of Christ is the cause for reconciliation (Romans 5:10; II Corinthians 5:18,19; Ephesians 2:16; Colossians 1:20,21; Hebrews 2:17). Hence, to reject Limited Atonement is not to reject Biblical Atonement. We agree with Calvinists on the **NATURE** of the Atonement, but disagree on the **EXTENT** of the Atonement.

#### **Calvinist's 5 Main Arguments for Limited Atonement**

- i) **A universal atonement demands a universal salvation** (most common). Calvinists believe that, if the atonement was unlimited in scope, then it would result in the universal salvation of all mankind.
- ii) **Double Jeopardy**: If Christ has paid for a persons's sins, then legally speaking it would be double jeopardy (double punishment) for him to be judged for those sins and sent to hell. Hence, since all men are not saved, Christ could not have died for all men. No man can be held accountable for a debt that has already been paid on his behalf. For God to have laid the sins of all men on Christ, would mean that the sins of the lost would be punished twice, once on Christ, and again on them. That would be unjust. So, God would be unjust to condemn any man to hell for whom Christ died.
- iii) **A universal atonement doesn't actually save anyone**. 'Christ's death **in itself** did not actually secure or guarantee salvation for anyone.' (Steale and Thomas, p.39).
- iv) **The relationship between Adam and Christ**. Because the sin of Adam was the ground of all men's condemnation, so the righteousness of Christ secured the salvation of those He died for.
- v) **The sin of unbelief**. If Christ died for all the sins of all men, why are not all men freed from the punishment of all their sins? Because of their sin of unbelief. Since this unbelief is a sin, Christ was punished for this sin as well.

**Answer:** These Calvinist **false conclusions** about the Atonement are based on the **false premise** that the **Atonement** and its **application** is the same thing. That is, Calvinists confuse the **provision of a Saviour** with the **applying of salvation**. Note these Calvinists' false statements:

- a) 'What does redemption mean? It does not mean redeemability, that we are placed in a redeemable position. It means that Christ purchased and procured redemption.' (John Murray, *Redemption* p 63).
- b) 'From the moment that satisfaction has been made, that debt is forever removed.' (Hoeksema, *Limited Atonement*, p 50,51).
- c) 'To say that everything turns on the sinner's acceptance, is to affirm that Christ did nothing more for those who are saved than He did for those who are lost. It is not faith which gives Divine efficacy to the blood; it was the blood which efficaciously purchased faith.' (Pink, *Satisfaction*, p.264)

So what the Calvinists are saying is that the 'elect' were **actually saved**, redeemed, reconciled and justified by and **at the instant of the Atonement**.

**Answer:** Then how is it that the 'elect' were born '**dead in trespasses and sins**' (Ephesians 2:1)? and how could men who were saved, redeemed, reconciled and justified be '**by nature children of wrath**' (Eph. 2:1)? If Calvinists object to this conclusion, then the only other alternative is Unlimited Atonement.

#### **Old Testament Example proving that the Atonement and its Application are to be distinguished**

The blood of the slain Passover lamb (Exodus 12:6,21) became efficacious **only after it was applied** to the doorposts as per God's instructions (Exodus 12:7,22). When the Lord went



through the land of Egypt, He only passed over the houses where the blood was applied, not just where the lamb was slain.

**Key:** The death of the lamb saved no one: the blood had to be applied. It is obvious that the Bible differentiates between the universal provision and the individual application of Christ's Atonement.

The work of Christ is complete but conditional.

The Calvinist Boettner contradicts Limited Atonement:

'The nature of a ransom is such that when paid and accepted it automatically frees the persons for whom it was intended.' (Boettner, *Predestination*, p.155). Likewise Christ's Atonement must be made and accepted. There is a universal provision of Christ's death (Hebrews 2:9), as well as an individual application of Christ's death (John 1:12; Romans 10:13). Christ's Atonement does not result in anyone's salvation until it is applied.'

**Key 1:** The answer to Calvinists' five arguments for Limited Atonement is that they fail to distinguish between the universal provision and the need for an individual application of the Atonement.

**Key 2:** The Calvinists's argument (1) about a universal atonement demanding a universal salvation disappears when we realise that the so-called 'elect' did not exist when Christ died on the cross.

Calvinist argument (2) of 'double jeopardy' has the alternative that all those for whom Christ died are automatically saved at the cross before they were born. Those unbelievers judged at the Great White Throne Judgment are judged not for their sins, but according to their works that they trusted in to see if they measure up to Christ's perfect works. (Revelation 20:12,13).

The Calvinist argument (3), that a universal atonement doesn't save anyone, is wrong because:

- a) They imply that, because it did not save anyone at the time it was made, it is impossible to save anyone in the future;
- b) even if no man ever availed himself of a universal atonement in the Church age, the Calvinist would have to admit that Christ made an effectual atonement for Old Testament saints:  
'And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.' (Hebrews 9:15).

The Calvinist argument (4), concerning the analogy between Adam and Christ, is refuted by understanding that, although Adam's sin was both universal and unrefuseable, Christ's free gift (Romans 5:16,18) must be received (Romans 5:17).

- a) In Romans 5:15, although Calvinists correctly interpret the 'many' in the first part of v.15 as 'all', they change the 'all men' in the last part of v.18 into 'many', and restrict the 'all men' in v.18b and the 'many' in v.15b to only the 'elect'. 'But not as the offence, so also is the free gift, for if through the offence of one many be dead (many = 'all' Calvinists agree), much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.' (Many = 'all', but Calvinists being inconsistent restrict this 'many' to only the 'elect'). (Romans 5:15).

- b) Romans 5:18 'Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men (all men = everyone, Calvinists agree) to condemnation, even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men (all men = everyone, unlimited atonement, Calvinists disagree being inconsistent) unto justification of life.'
- c) Verse 19 explains: 'For as by one man's disobedience many (many = all) were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many (many = all who receive it) be made righteous.' (Romans 5:19).  
The future tense shows that the benefits of Christ's work apply only to those who receive it.
- d) This is confirmed by 'For as in Adam all die (all = everybody) even so in Christ shall all be made alive.' (1 Corinthians 15:22). Although the sin of Adam was the ground of all men's condemnation, they are excused if they get 'in Christ.' Calvinists go astray here because all men are in Adam by descent as sinners, and all men 'in Christ' are by faith 'children of God'. Everything depends on being 'in Christ'. (Ephesians 1:4).
- e) Isaiah 53:6 'All (all = everybody, Calvinists agree) have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us 'all' (all = everybody = unlimited atonement, Calvinists disagree inconsistently)..

Calvinist argument (5) of the 'sin of unbelief' has two clear inconsistencies in their reasoning:

- a) Why does God demand that men believe if Christ died for and thereby removed the sin of unbelief? If 'he that believeth not is condemned already' (John 3:18), and if this sin of unbelief is expiated and God is propitiated, then no one whom Christ died for could be held responsible for unbelief. They would already be saved.
- b) If Christ did not die for certain men (as Calvinists claim), then those people cannot be condemned for unbelief. If Christ did not die for a man, then there is no Gospel for him to reject or believe. The Holy Spirit will 'reprove the world of sin . . . because they believe not on me.' (John 16:8,9).

### Refuting Calvinists' Proof Texts for Limited Atonement

Calvinists use 3 types of Scriptures in trying to prove Limited Atonement:

- 1) Christ died for the world. } These clearly refute Limited Atonement, so Calvinists redefine
- 2) Christ died for all men. } 'world' and 'all men' to defend their position.
- 3) Christ died for a particular group.

The biggest problem with limited atonement is found in Scriptures teaching Christ died 'for all', or for the 'whole world'. The Calvinist Sproul adds: 'The world for whom Christ died cannot mean the entire human family. It must mean the universality of the elect (people from every tribe and nation)'. (Sproul, *Chosen by God*, p 207).

### 1. Passages showing that CHRIST DIED for THE WORLD.

These verses occur in John's gospel, Paul's letters, and in 1 John. Although Calvinists confuse 'the world' with 'the elect', the Bible clearly teaches Christ's unlimited atonement for the whole world:

#### A. JOHN'S Gospel

- a) John 1:29 'Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world'. The Calvinist Gunn twists this, saying: 'Christ will take away the sin of the world . . . at His Second Coming' (Gunn, p.18). This is false because in the millennium 'the sinner being an hundred years old shall be accursed' (Isaiah 62:20 and Revelation 20:7-10).

- b) **John 6:33** 'The bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, & giveth life unto the world'. The Calvinist John Owen twists this to teach that 'he saves all the people of God (not Jews only), all over the world'. (Owen, p.342).
- c) **John 3:16** 'For God so loved the world, that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life'.  
The Calvinist Pink twists this verse, saying: 'The world in John 3:16 must refer to the world of God's people. "Must," we say, for there is no other alternative solution'. (Pink, *Sovereignty*, p204). The Presbyterian Dabney writes: 'Make "the world" which Christ loved, to mean "the elect world", and we reach the absurdity, that some of the elect may not believe, and hence perish'. (Dabney, *Theology*, p.525).
- d) **John 4:42** 'this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world'.
- e) **John 6:51** 'the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world'.
- f) **II Corinthians 5:19** 'To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, . . .'
- g) **I John 2:2** 'And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world'.
- h) **I John 4:14** 'the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world'.

So everything hinges on the meaning of the word 'world'. Calvinists quickly point out that 'world' is used in different senses, such as hyperbolic phrases like: 'behold, the world is gone after him' (John 12:19) to prove that the world only means the 'elect'. We agree that 'world' is used in different senses. We dispute Calvinists' claim that 'the world' ever signifies the so-called 'elect'.

**FACT:** The word 'world' occurs **89 times** in John's Gospel and, although it is used in different senses, **it never refers to the 'elect'**. Consider these examples where 'world' **could never mean the 'elect'**:

- 1) The world (elect?) knew him not. (John 1:10).
- 2) The world (elect?) hates Christ. (John 7:7).
- 3) The world (elect?) consists of unsaved Jews. (8:23).
- 4) The world's (elect's) prince is Satan. (12:31; 14:30; 16:11).
- 5) The world (elect?) seeth me no more. (14:19).
- 6) The world (elect?) cannot receive the Holy Spirit. (14:17).
- 7) The world (elect?) hates the disciples. (15:18,19; 17:14).
- 8) In the world (elect?) ye shall have tribulation. (16:33).
- 9) The world (elect?) did not know the Father. (17:25).
- 10) Christ's Kingdom is not of this world. (elect?) (18:36).

Hoeksema inadvertently admits that 'when our Lord announces Himself as the light of the world, it is evident that He speaks of the world of men, of the entire human race'. (*Whosoever Will*, p 86).

Hence the world never denotes the 'elect', and the world is clearly condemned by God.

**The world in John 3:16 could not be the 'elect' because:**

- 1) What is true in the time of Moses (everyone that is bitten, when he looketh upon it shall live' (Numbers 21:8) is certainly true in the time of Christ ('whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life' (John 3:16).  
Hence, just as the cure for being bitten was believing what God said and doing it (Numbers 21:8), so the cure for sin was obtained by believing what God said and doing it (John 3:15).

- 2) In Calvinism, the so-called 'elect' have never been in danger of perishing and never can be.
- 3) John 3:19 defines the world as 'men': 'And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil'.

**B. PAUL'S LETTERS:** 'To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation'(II Cor 5:19).

**Question 3:** Calvinists use II Corinthians 5:19 to teach that not all men (without exception) have been reconciled, but that God has been reconciling His people ('elect') from the world one by one.

II Corinthians 5:19 teaches that there is a 'world' which is reconciled to God. **Who are they?** The 'elect', say Calvinists.

**Answer:**

- a) **Who is identified as the 'world'?** The 'world' occurs **69 times** in Paul's letters and is used in several different senses, but **never refers to the 'elect'**. Consider these examples:
  - 1) The world (elect?) by wisdom knew not God. (I Corinthians 1:21).
  - 2) Not the wisdom of this world (elect?). (I Corinthians 2:6). World is disparaged.
  - 3) The princes of this world (elect?) . . . crucified the Lord of glory. (I Corinthians 2:8).
  - 4) We have received, not the spirit of the world. (elect?) (I Corinthians 2:12).
  - 5) The saints shall judge the world. (elect?) (II Corinthians 4:4).
  - 6) Satan is the god of this world. (elect?) (II Corinthians 4:4).
  - 7) Deliver us from this present evil world. (elect?) (Galatians 1:4).
  - 8) In bondage under the elements of the world. (elect?) (Galatians 4:3).
  - 9) Christians shine as lights in the world. (elect?) (Philippians 2:13).
  - 10) The rudiments of the world (elect?) are warned against. (Colossians 2:20).
- b) **What is the nature of reconciliation in II Corinthians 5:19?** The Bible distinguishes between the universal provision of atonement and the individual application of the atonement.  
The context of II Corinthians 5:19 shows this is also true of reconciliation.
  - 1) **Galatians 1:4** Paul contrasts 'us' with the 'world': 'Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world . . .'
  - 2) The 'elect' could not have been reconciled at the cross (God 'not imputing their trespasses unto them'- II Corinthians 5:19) because they did not exist then.
  - 3) The 'elect' could not have been personally reconciled at the cross, because they were still in their sins until they were saved. ('If Christ be not raised. . .ye are yet in your sins.' I Cor 15:17).
  - 4) If the 'elect' were actually reconciled at the cross (as Calvinists say), then what is Paul doing with a ministry of reconciliation? (II Corinthians 5:18).
  - 5) In **II Corinthians 5:20**, Paul is beseeching unsaved people to be reconciled to God ('we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God'.) Obviously, unsaved people were not reconciled at the cross, but at salvation. Paul did not believe in Limited Atonement.
  - 6) The two aspects of reconciliation are seen in **Colossians 1:20,21** 'And having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled'.

On the cross, Christ laid the foundation for reconciliation between God and man. He did what He could to secure it. Christ executed a plan that, if properly appropriated by man, the blood of His cross was fitted to secure entire reconciliation between heaven and earth. The offended party (God) sought to be reconciled. God turned His face towards mankind. Hence, the world in II Corinthians 5:19 means the human race generally, without distinction of nation, age or rank. The whole world was alienated from God, and He sought to have it reconciled.

When one receives Christ, he is reconciled to God.

**C. I JOHN 2:2 and 4:14** clearly state that Christ died for the world, as an unlimited atonement.

**2:2** 'he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.'

**4:14** 'And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.' Calvinists admit that I John 2:2 is a problem to them: 'On the surface this text seems to demolish limited atonement'. (Sproul, *Grace Unknown*, p.176).

Pink gives the standard Calvinist position on I John 2:2: 'When John says, "He is the propitiation for our sins", he can only mean for the sins of Jewish believers. When John added, "And not for ours only, but also for the whole world," he signified that Christ was the propitiation for the sins of Gentile believers too, for, as previously shown, "the world" is a term contrasted with Israel.' (*Sovereignty*, p.259). Pink adds that 'to insist that the "whole world" in I John 2:2 signifies the entire human race is to undermine the very foundations of our faith'. (*Sovereignty of God*, p.260).

**Answer:** It is very strange how Reformed Calvinists, who are so anti-dispensational and who minimise any distinction between Israel and the Church, suddenly become dispensationalists when trying to explain away the unlimited atonement in I John 2:2.

**Question 4:** Is this catholic (universal) epistle (I John) **addressed only to Jews or to the churches?**

**Answer:**

- 1) 'These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God;' (I John 5:13).
- 2) The 'our' in I John 2:2 cannot be limited to just the Jews. This group referred to as 'our' has 'fellowship' with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ (I John 1:3), and has 'an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous'. (I John 2:1). John makes no Jew-Gentile distinction here whatsoever. In Christ there is no Jew or Gentile. 'There is neither Jew nor Greek . . . for ye are all one in Christ Jesus'. (Galatians 3:28).
- 3) The words Jew and Gentile do not even occur in I John.
- 4) **In I John**, the word 'world' occurs **23 times** and **never refers to the so-called 'elect'**.
  - i) We are commanded to 'love not the world' (elect?). (I John 2:15).
  - ii) The world (elect?) is full of lust. (2:16).
  - iii) The world (elect?) will pass away. (2:17).
  - iv) The world (elect?) knows neither Christ nor the Christian. (3:1).
  - v) The 'spirit of antichrist' is in the world. (elect?) (4:3).
  - vi) Believers overcame the world. (elect?) (5:4).
  - vii) In **I John 5:19**, John contrasts Christians with the world as **two separate groups**: 'And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in

wickedness'. John uses the term 'whole world' twice in I John (2:2; 5:19) and neither case refers to 'elect Gentiles'. Hence Christ is the propitiation for the sins of John, the believers he wrote to, as well as for the sins of the whole world.

**Question 5: Is John 11:49-52 a parallel proof passage as Pink claims?** 'If the reader really desires to know the meaning of I John 2:2 let him compare John 11:51,52 . . . it is a strictly parallel passage'. (*Satisfaction*, p 263; *Sovereignty*, p 259).

'Caiaphas, being the high priest . . . said . . . it is expedient for us that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not . . . he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad'. (John 11:49-52).

Pink makes the 'children of God' the Church: "Is it not remarkable that the members of the church are here called 'children of God', even before Christ died, and therefore before He commenced to build His church! The vast majority of them had not then been born, yet were they regarded as 'children of God'; children of God because they had been chosen in Christ before the foundation of the world".

(Pink, *Sovereignty*, p. 66).

**Answer:** But is it not more remarkable how wrong TULIP Calvinism is?

- i) If Christ died for the whole Jewish nation as prophesied by Caiaphas, then, according to Calvinist Limited Atonement, all Jews would have to be saved.
- ii) The phrase 'children of God' (except in referring to Israel, Deut.14:1; John 11:52) never refers to members of the church, until they are saved. 'For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus'. (Galatians 3:26). Before salvation, the 'elect' were 'children of wrath' (Ephesians 2:3) and 'children of disobedience.' (Colossians 3:6).
- iii) If a man was already a New Testament child of God, why would he need an atonement?

**Question 6: Who** were the 'children of God that were scattered abroad', mentioned in John 11:52? Are they Israel or are they future elect Christians? **Answer:** They are Israel because:

- 1) John meant only the Jews who were dispersed among all nations since Rome conquered Judea. . . . These are called the 'dispersed' ('to the 12 tribes which are scattered abroad,' James 1:1; 'will he go to the dispersed among the Gentiles?' John 7:35).
- 2) The term 'children of God' was an ancient title of the Jewish people, as seen in:
  - 'Ye are the children of the LORD your God: ye shall not cut yourselves' (Deuteronomy 14:1)
  - 'I have said,..... all of you are children of the most High.' (Psalm 82:6).
  - 'I will say,..bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth' (Isaiah 43:6)
- 3) The meaning is: 'Christ was to die, not only for the then inhabitants of Judea, but for all the Jewish race scattered abroad. This would result in all Jews being gathered from dispersion abroad into one body. Paul prophesied that this would occur after Christ's second coming (Romans 11:1-32). John interprets Caiaphas' prophecy that Christ would die for the Jewish nation, as well as for the Jews 'scattered abroad'. (v.52). Hence John 11:49-52 does not interpret I John 2:2.

## 2. Passages showing that Christ DIED for ALL MEN

As with the word 'world', Calvinists point out that the word 'all' is used in different senses, such as hyperbolic phrases like 'hated of all men' (Matthew 10:22) to teach that 'all' only means the 'elect'.

### Answer:

1) These are normal accepted cases of **hyperbole**, meaning 'an exaggerated statement not meant to be taken literally' (*Oxford Dictionary*). Other examples of hyperbole that Calvinists use to distract people from the unlimited atonement meaning of 'all men' are:

- 'all men seek for thee.' (Mark 1:37).
- 'all men did marvel.' (Mark 5:20).
- 'Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you.' (Luke 6:26).
- 'Ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake.' (Luke 21:17).
- 'Thou shalt be his witness unto all men.' (Acts 22:15).
- 'Your obedience is come abroad unto all men.' (Romans 16:19).
- 'Prayers ... be made for all men.' (I Timothy 2:1).

2) We agree that 'all' is used in **different senses**. We disagree with Calvinist claims that 'all' ever means the so-called 'elect.' The Bible clearly teaches that Christ's Atonement was for all men.

i) **Isaiah 53:6** 'All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned **everyone** to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all'..

The last 'all' is just as extensive as the first 'all' and 'everyone'. Calvinists agree that all men have gone astray, but disagree that all men's iniquities have been laid on Christ. Let us be consistent: 'all' means the same in both places. The context defines 'all' as 'everyone'.

If words have any meaning, then 'all' those who went astray (100% of mankind) had their iniquity laid on Christ.

**Question 7: Have all men gone astray or only some of them? All!**

**Note:** If Calvinists want to get dispensational and say that Isaiah was only referring to Jews (Isaiah 53:8), then they still have the same problem, that the sins of every Jew was borne by Christ (an unlimited atonement for Israel).

ii) **II Corinthians 5:14,15** 'For the love of Christ constraineth us ('elect'); because we ('elect') thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead. And that he died for all, that they which live (are saved) should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again'. Calvinists limit 'all' to the 'elect'.

**Answer:** The 'all' in v.14 means 'all men' as seen by:

- a) The 'elect' are already represented in v.14 by 'us' and 'we'.
- b) Calvinists' mistake is assuming that all for whom Christ died will live.
- c) After the restrictive 'us' and 'we' in v.14, 'all' is used 3 times in a universal, unlimited sense.
- d) The restrictive phrase 'that they which live' (v.15) implies that **not everyone** of the 'all' for whom Christ died, lives. Dabney recognised this: 'If we make the all for whom Christ died, mean only the elect, it implies that of those elect that Christ died for, only a part will live to Christ'. (*Theology* p.525).

iii) **I Timothy 2:1-6** 'I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers ... be made for all men, for kings, and for all that are in authority; they we (elect) may lead..., for this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; who will have all men to be saved, and to come to the knowledge of the truth. .... the man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all'.

Since Calvinists confuse universal provision and the individual application of the Atonement, they maintain that 'a ransom for all' should be limited to 'a ransom for the elect' because the 'elect' are the only ones who get saved. Custance thinks it means 'all sorts of men.' (Custance p.162)

**Answer:** Five reasons why 'a ransom for all' does not refer to 'a ransom for the elect':

- a) The mediator is between 'God and men', not 'God and the elect'.
- b) The 'all men' of v.1,4 do not refer to just classes of men, because **classes of men** are given in v.2. There would be no point doing this, if it had already been done in v.1.
- c) The 'all that are in authority' of v.2 already make up a class, and hence would be meaningless if Calvinists consistently interpret the 'all' of v.2 as they did in v.1.
- d) If Paul wanted to say all 'classes of men' he could have done so: 'to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.' (Matthew 10:1). 'For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea,' (James 3:7)
- e) Calvinists attempting to make the 'all' (v.6) and 'all men' (v.4) refer to all classes of men, does not solve their problem. God desires their salvation (v.4) and gave Himself a ransom for them (v.6). The 'we' (v.2) are the 'elect', not the 'all men' (v.1,3,6).

iv) **I Timothy 4:10** 'For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe'.

This irrefutably proves unlimited atonement by giving the biblical definition of 'all men'. The phrase 'all men' (100% of mankind) is **contrasted** with 'those that believe' (the 'elect'). Hence the 'all men' couldn't be 'all sorts of elect men' as Calvinists want it to be in I Timothy 2:1-6. This contrast between 'all men' (100% of mankind) and 'those that believe' (the 'elect') occurs 4 times:

- a) **I Timothy 4:10** 'Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe'.
- b) **Galatians 6:10** 'Let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.'
- c) **Romans 3:22** 'Even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all (100% of mankind) and upon all them that believe (the 'elect'): for there is no difference.'
- d) **Titus 2:11,12** 'For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared unto all men (100% of mankind), teaching us (the 'elect') that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world.'

v) **Hebrews 2:9** 'But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man'. Calvinists change Scripture when it doesn't agree with TULIP. Boettner gives the standard Calvinist interpretation: 'The original Greek, does not use the word "man" here at all but simply says, "for every".' (*Predestination*, p.288).

**Answer:**

- (a) Boettner takes advantage of most people's lack of knowledge of simple Greek grammar, and shows his ignorance as well. Like any other adjective, demonstrative,

participle or prepositional phrase, the word **'every'** is used **substantively**. This means that the word 'every' is used by itself without a noun because the noun 'man' is so commonly and obviously understood to be meant. Examples include:

Luke 6:30 'Give to every (Greek: παντι ) (man) that asketh thee.'  
Romans 12:3 'to every (Greek: παντι) (man) that is among you.'  
I Peter 3:15 'be ready to give an answer to every (Greek: παντι) (man)'  
Revelation 22:18 'I testify unto every (Greek: παντι) (man) that heareth'  
Hebrews 2:9 'should taste death for every (Greek: παντι) (man).'

**Question 8:** Is Boettner supported by any Greek grammarian? Not Henry Alford (1810-1871). Not Kenneth Wuest (1893-1961). Not A T Robertson (1863-1934). Pink violates every Greek grammar and text in the world and alters 'every man' to 'every son', inventing a reading to support limited atonement that occurs in no New Testament manuscript anywhere in the world. If God wanted to teach limited atonement here, he could have added the word 'son' (Greek: υιος).

See Hebrews 12:6 'scourgeth every son (Greek: παντι υιον) whom he receiveth.'

(b) The starting thought is **'What is man?'** (Hebrews 2:6) not **'what are the elect?'**

Calvinists fail to note that the context changes from the general (v.9) discussing man in general, to the particular (v.10). The importance of **'every man'** is that it is even **stronger** than **'all men'**. As Alford writes, "Why 'every man' rather than 'all men'. We may safely say, that the singular (every man) brings out **far more strongly than the plural** (all men) would, the applicability of Christ's death to each individual man." (Alford, Vol. 4, p.1459).

#### 4. **Passages showing that CHRIST DIED for a PARTICULAR GROUP.**

Calvinists, when faced with such a mountain of evidence for unlimited atonement, retreat to Scriptures discussing Christ dying for a particular group, hoping this will disprove unlimited atonement. In these passages, Calvinists insist that Christ died for a particular group (the 'elect') to the exclusion of all mankind. Calvinists presume that if Christ died for a particular group (the 'elect'), then he died for no one else.

Consider these examples:

a) **His People:** Calvinists identify the 'many' that Christ died for as **God's people**. **Matthew 1:21** 'And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.' All Calvinists presume that 'his people' here are 'the elect', all whom the Father has 'given' him. (Pink, *Sovereignty*, p 65).

What Scriptures prove this? They don't give any.

#### **Question 9: Who are 'his people'?**

Answer: The nation **Israel**, because,

- i) 'the world knew him not. He came unto his own (Israel), and his own received him not.' (John 1:10,11). **Question:** Are the 'world' and 'his own', the same as the 'elect'?  
**Answer:** No, because they neither knew him, nor received him.
- ii) 'A Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.' (Matthew 2:6).
- iii) 'Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people.' Luke 1:68

b) **Sheep:** 'I lay down my life for the sheep.' (John 10:15).  
In **John 10:15** the 'sheep' are the same as 'his people', the nation Israel:

**Key:** If Christ died for all of Israel & some were lost, then Christ made an unlimited atonement.

c) **Church of God:** 'Feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood'. (**Acts 20:28**). 'Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ loved the church, and gave himself for it'. (**Ephesians 5:25**).

d) **Many:** In **Matthew 20:28** 'The Son of man came..... to give his life a ransom for many.'

'For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins' (Matthew 26:28). 'Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many.' (Hebrews 9:28).

Every TULIP Calvinist who has ever lived, presumes that 'many' means 'elect'. **'Many:** Notice, this verse does not say that he gave his life a ransom for all, but for many.' (Boettner, *Predestination*, p.155). 'The name "sheep" is synonymous with "elect", for such are "sheep" before they believed, yea, before they are born'. (Pink, *Satisfaction*, p.251-2). Notice that the word **'many' sometimes means 'all'**:

**Romans 5:15** 'For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.'

**Romans 5:19** 'For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.'

**Question 10:** Did Adam's fall affect all or only some of his descendants? (Ans: All). 'Many' is used because it better contrasts with 'one'. Hence 'many' does not prove Limited Atonement.

Calvinists' claim that **Christ only died for a particular group** is proven **false** because:

i) The Bible never states that Christ died only for these groups to the exclusion of all others.

ii) These groups are **not all one and the same**. Israel is not the church (I Corinthians 10:32).

iii) **Key:** Using this same false Calvinist reasoning, one could conclude that Christ died:

- only for Paul, '... who loved me, and gave himself for me'. (Galatians 2:20), or
- only for John and those he wrote to, 'he laid down his life for us' (I John 3:16), or
- only for Paul and Titus, 'who gave himself for us' (Titus 2:14), or
- only for weak believers, 'the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died.' (I Cor 8:11).

Calvinists' err by confusing **universal provision & individual application** of the atonement.

iv) There are **other groups** mentioned in Scripture **for whom Christ died** that Calvinists don't want to discuss, because they prove unlimited atonement:

a) Those that Christ died for **who will ultimately go to hell**.

'But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.' (II Peter 2:1).

Not only is Jesus Christ the Saviour (I Timothy 4:10) and Redeemer (I Timothy 2:6) for the world, but he bought the false prophets and false teachers. (II Peter 2:1).

**Question 11:** Calvinists claim that 'Lord' here refers to God the Father and not Christ, because the Greek word for Lord (despotes) is not the usual word for 'Lord'.

**Answer:** If it is God the Father spoken of in II Peter 2:1 it makes no difference, because Paul told the Ephesian elders to 'Feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.' (Acts 20:28). (The same Greek word is used of God in Luke 2:29; Acts 4:24; Revelation 6:10; and of Christ in 2 Timothy 2:21).

**Question 12:** Some Calvinists change 'bought' to 'delivered' or 'created'.

**Answer:** The same word 'bought' is used in I Cor. 6:20: 'For ye are bought with a price.'

b) Those groups Christ died for that **describe everybody, all mankind**.

'For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost'. (Luke 19:10). All of us!

'For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.' Romans 5:6

'To redeem them that were under the law.' (Galatians 4:5). Are we all born under the law?

'Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners.' (I Timothy 1:15). Are we all born sinners?

'For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust.' (I Peter 3:18). All unjust!

**Answer:** The reason Calvinists never mention these verses is because, if Christ died for and came to save the lost, the ungodly, those under the law, sinners, and the unjust, then he made an unlimited atonement, for that is the condition of all men, not just the 'elect'.

Are only the 'elect' lost? (No.) Are only the 'elect' ungodly? (No). Are only the 'elect' under the law? (No). Are only the 'elect' sinners? (No). Therefore, Jesus Christ is 'the Saviour of the world' (John 4:42; I John 4:14), of all men, whether all men accept him or not.

c) Christ died for **his friends**: 'Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.' (John 15:13).

**Question 13: Who are Christ's friends?**

**Answer:** Judas was one of Christ's friends, yet Judas was not 'elect'.

'And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come?' Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him'. (Matthew 26:50).

**Problem:** Calvinists read Limited Atonement into every conceivable verse, for example:

'The Lord redeemeth the soul of his servants.' (Psalm 34:22).

The Calvinist Jimmie Davis makes 'servants' to be 'none other than the elect'.

d) "**Whosoever**" verses proving that Christ's atonement was for **all men**.

These verses teach that "**whosoever believeth**" may claim Christ's atonement and be saved.

- 'through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins'. Acts 10:43.

- 'gospel of Christ... is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth.' (Romans 1:16)

- 'Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.' (Romans 10:11).

- 'For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.' (Romans 10:13).

- 'Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God'. (I John 5:1).

- 'And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.' (Revelation 22:17).

**Key:** There are no 'whosoevers' with a doctrine of Limited Atonement.

### **Calvin's Rejection of Limited Atonement**

Calvin is thought by some to have modified his doctrine of Limited Atonement as he became older and wiser, until he finally reached the conclusion of an unlimited atonement. (James Richards, *Lectures on mental Philosophy and Theology*, New York, M W Dodd, 1846, p 308).

Others claim that it was Beza and other followers of Calvin who developed the doctrine of Limited Atonement. Beza was Calvin's successor and chief theologian of the Reformed Church after Calvin.

**Note:** Article 31 of the Church of England's 39 *Articles* adopted shortly before Calvin's death, states that, 'The offering of Christ once made is the perfect redemption, propitiation, and satisfaction for all the sins of the whole world.' (Schaff, *Creeeds*, Vol 3, p 507).

Consider Calvin's comments on these verses:

a) 'gave his life a ransom for many' (Matthew 20:28) - '... Paul is not talking of a part of mankind, but of the whole human race'. (Calvin, *Commentaries*, Vol 2, p 273).

b) 'shed for many for the remission of sins' (Matthew 26:28) - 'The word 'many' does not mean a part of the world only, but the whole human race'. (*Commentaries*, Vol 3, p 139)

c) 'bear the sins of many' (Hebrews 9:28) - 'He says many meaning all, as in Romans 5:15' (Vol 12, p131)

d) 'taketh away the sin of the world'. (John 1:29) - 'When he says the sin of the world he extends this kindness indiscriminately to the whole human race'. (Vol 4, p 32).

### **The Other Side of Limited Atonement**

Calvinists insist that the reason Christ's blood was shed only for the 'elect,' is because God did not want any others to be saved.

The Calvinist Culance says: 'Limited Atonement tends to **weaken the incentive to evangelism**'. (Steele & Thomas, p.38). John Murray laments: 'It is frequently objected that this doctrine is **inconsistent with the full and free offer of Christ in the Gospel**.' (Culance, p.286).

**Key:** If no offer can be made to the 'non-elect', and the 'elect' are sure to be saved, all preaching is not only vain and useless, but an **absolute, total and complete waste of time**.

The Calvinist Culance says: 'We ought not to use such a misleading appeal as "**Christ died for you**" because we cannot apply this to any man indiscriminately unless we know he is to be counted among the elect, a knowledge which we cannot have with certainty'. (Steele and Thomas, p.38).

In Calvinism, election does not guarantee anyone's salvation unless Christ dies for them. Calvinists cannot tell someone that Christ died for him unless he is 'elect', which Calvinists cannot know for sure.

**Question 14: How does a Calvinist know if anyone is saved or not?**

**Answer:** The Calvinist answer is if they persevere in holiness in their profession of faith to the end.

**Conclusion:** The Calvinist debate about Limited Atonement is a smoke screen to conceal the true nature of Calvinism which says that God by a sovereign, eternal decree of Unconditional Election has consigned billions of people to hell before their birth. To make it certain, God has given them Total Depravity so that they will be unable to receive Irresistable Grace, which will not even be offered to them, since Christ did not make a Limited Atonement for them.

**Bible reply:** God's Word is not bound by the philosophical speculations of Limited Atonement. 2Tim2:9

**Conclusion:**

- i) Calvinists, in order to believe and preach limited atonement, must rewrite both the Dictionary and the Bible, so that:
  - a) "world" doesn't really mean "world",
  - b) "all" doesn't really mean "all",
  - c) "whosoever" doesn't really mean "whosoever".
- ii) Calvinists who believe limited atonement, cannot tell people that Christ died for "their" sins, or "our" sins, because they don't know if the unsaved hearers are elect. Yet Paul did tell the Corinthians this in 1 Cor. 15:3. Instead, they preach a false gospel saying that "Christ died for His people's sins."
- iii) If 5-point Calvinists want to limit the atonement to only the elect, then to be consistent, they must also limit the death which passed from Adam to the human race to many, and not all, as Romans 5:18, "Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life." This teaches that the free gift of eternal life is available to all mankind, not just to the elect. Paul's passionate drive for souls was based on the fact that "Christ died for all." 2 Corinthians 5:13-15.

**4. IRRESISTABLE GRACE (The Efficacious call of the Spirit).**

**Definition:** God's grace, when presented by the Holy Spirit, is such that it is impossible for the sinner to resist or refuse.

Calvinists claim that in addition to a general call to salvation which is made to everyone who hears the gospel, the Holy Spirit efficaciously calls the elect that inevitably brings them to salvation. Calvinists claim that God's grace is invincible, never failing to result in the salvation of those it is extended to.

**Answer:** There is no such thing in the Bible as "irresistable grace." Never in the Bible do we find the word "irresistable" connected with the word "grace". It is the vain philosophy and imagination of John Calvin and his followers.

Grace means "God's unmerited favour". Grace is an attitude, not a power. God does not force people to be saved with an imaginary "irresistable grace."

**I. Scriptures refuting "Irresistable Grace"**

Can a sinner resist God's grace when presented by the Holy Spirit? These verses say "YES":

- i) "Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye." Acts 7:51. Stephen declares that the Holy Spirit was exerting a drawing power on the Sanhedrin, but they resisted God's saving grace. They and their fathers opposed the message brought by Moses, the prophets, Christ, the apostles, and by Stephen. This refutes "irresistable grace".

People can resist the Holy Spirit. The term "stiffnecked" also refutes the Calvinist's "irresistable grace". It is a farming term describing stubborn oxen that would not submit to be yoked. Stephen applied it to the Sanhedrin who resisted God's efforts to save them.

- ii) "And the Lord said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man,..." Genesis 6:3. God's Spirit strove with sinners before the Flood, but only 8 were saved. All the rest resisted God successfully. This proves that people can resist God's striving with them for salvation.

**Question:** Why would God strive with sinners whom He has not chosen to be saved? The whole idea of God "giving people up" would be meaningless if there had not been prior strivings.

- iii) God the Holy Spirit strives with all men.

"And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, & of righteousness and of judgment." John 16:8

- iv) When sinners continually resist God's saving grace, there comes a time when God "gives them up". In Romans 1:24,26,28 three times it is said that "God gave them up". The whole concept of "giving people up" would be meaningless if there had been no prior strivings.

- v) Jesus said sincerely with tears (not generally) that He would have gathered them, but they would not.

The Jews at Jerusalem resisted Christ's efforts to gather them together, as seen by the phrase,

"how often would I have gathered thy children together...and ye would not." Matthew 23:37.

- vi) If Christians can resist God's grace in sanctification, so can unbelievers resist God's grace in salvation: "Quench not the Spirit." 1 Thessalonians 5:19.

"Grieve not the Spirit." Ephesians 4:30.

- vii) Proverbs 29:1 shows that men do resist and reject God. "He that being often reproved hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy." God often strives with and reproves some people, until after they have continually hardened their neck, God suddenly destroys them. This shows that man can resist God's saving grace.

- viii) Jesus said to the Jews, "Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life." John 5:40. Here Jesus clearly teaches us that men can and do resist God by refusing to come to Him. If "irresistible grace" was true, Jesus would have said "Ye cannot come to me". "Ye will not" means that:

- a) God wants all "non-elect" to be saved, thus refuting unconditional election, and
- b) Sinners can resist God's grace, thus refuting irresistible grace.

- ix) **Question:** Why would God strive with sinners whom He hasn't chosen to be saved? "Their eyes have they closed". Matthew 13:15. They resisted God's saving grace by closing their eyes.

- x) Men are condemned not because they are un-elect, but because they resisted God's saving grace, and because they loved darkness rather than light.

"And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil." John 3:19.

**Conclusion:** People do resist the Holy Ghost. Some do refuse to come to Christ. Some do harden their necks. Some do refuse when God calls.

This means that those who rejected Christ, could have received Him.

God offers salvation to all who want it, but doesn't force it on those who don't want it.

## II. Results of the 'Irresistible Grace' Error.

### 1. Hopelessness: Many people are hopelessly lost if TULIP is true.

If you are not pre-selected to salvation, this means that:

- a) You cannot ask Christ to save you, because you haven't got a free will. (T)
- b) You cannot get elected, because that decision was made before creation. (U)
- c) Even if you wanted to be saved, you couldn't, because the Limited Atonement

theory

says that Jesus did not die for your sins. (L)

- d) If you are un-elect, you never get any "irresistible grace" to save you. (I)

### 2. One wrong assumption leads to wrong conclusions.

All of this nonsense comes from one basic false assumption, which is that man has no free will.

Key: The Bible plainly teaches and everywhere assumes that mankind (saved or lost) has the power of choice even though he is sinful and powerless to save himself. Man would not be responsible for his actions if he had no choice. Follow how this wrong assumption leads to wrong conclusions:

- a) Total Depravity denies that man has a free will.

b) Unconditional Election teaches that, because man does not have a free will (being dead), he cannot choose Christ. Hence, if any are to be saved, God must predestine some to be saved and some to be damned. (This can be the only explanation as to why some are lost, following false assumption a)).

c) Limited Atonement logically follows because it would be unreasonable to expect God to lay the sins of non-elect people on Jesus if He had no intention of saving them.

- d) Irresistible Grace

~ If man has no free will to choose Christ (unless preselected), and

~ If God unconditionally elects some to be saved and others to be damned (if anyone was to be saved),&

~ If Jesus bore the sins only of the preselected ones, how could anybody resist God's determination to save them? They couldn't resist God! Hence if you have no free will, and you are elect, then you can't resist getting saved, right? No! Wrong! Dead wrong! All because of a wrong first assumption.

**Bible Truth**: God foreknows who will choose Christ to be their Saviour. When people receive Christ, they are part of the elect body, the church. God predestines them to glory. God wants all men to be saved and has provided sufficient redemption for all men to be saved. This includes: free will, a condition of election, and unlimited atonement. If men go to hell, it is because they rejected Christ.

"He that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him." John 3:17-19,36

### 3. Inventing a General Call and an Effectual Call to Salvation.

After accepting Irresistible Grace, Calvinists must then invent **two calls** (a General and an Effectual call) to explain why some get saved and others don't in response to Christ's many invitations to salvation. Calvinists support 'Irresistible Grace' by claiming that there are 2 calls:

- a) A General Call (or insincere call) of God to sinners. This invitation goes out to the whole world inviting them to receive Christ. This call is rejected by the non-elect. It is not intended to bring sinners to repentance, but to leave sinners without excuse. They cannot say that they were not invited to be saved. Therefore, they have to say that they rejected God's invitation. The general call is not effectual to produce salvation.

- b) An Effectual Call (sincere call) is the call that God gives to the elect. It does not go to the un-elect, but is reserved for those especially chosen to salvation. Calvinists claim support from these verses:

- i) General Call: "For many are called, but few are chosen. Matthew 22:14.  
"Come unto me all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest."  
Matthew 11:28.

This general call to sinners is designed to shift the blame for their damnation from God to them. There is no possibility that this general call can result in salvation.

- ii) Effectual Call: "We know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose." Romans 8:28.

4. This theory makes God out to be a hypocrite, dishonest, and a liar, who has a "sincere call" and an "insincere call". In the general call, He insincerely invites everybody to come for salvation, but He doesn't really mean it. What an insult against Christ that He would invite sinners to Himself, promising them salvation if they came, yet having no intention of giving them the effectual call that enables them to respond. This is BLATANT DISHONESTY. It is like offering lollies to a crippled child, knowing that he could not reach out and receive it. "God's blessings are God's enablings."

If God commands all men everywhere to repent (Acts 17:30), then it must be possible for all men to repent.

**There is no more serious charge against God than to infer that God is LYING when He invites millions of lost souls to be saved.** "It was impossible for God to lie." Hebrews 6:18.

"he (the devil) is a liar, and the father of it." John 8:44.

To attribute dishonesty to God is to identify God with Satan. This is a very serious error. Let Calvinists acknowledge their blasphemous error and seek the pardon of God for their sins. (Leviticus 4:22,28,35 discusses a sin offering made for the sins of ignorance).

## III. Verses Calvinists Use To Support "Irresistible Grace."

1. **John 1:13** "Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God."

**Question**: Doesn't John 1:13 say that we are born again NOT by the will of man, but by God's unconditional election?

**Answer**: What does the will of blood, flesh and man mean?

- a) "Not of blood": Jews prided themselves in being descendants of Abraham. (Matthew 3:9).

They saw this as a sign of God's favour. Here this error is corrected. It is not because men are descended from pious parents such as Abraham, that they are entitled to God's favour.

- b) "Nor of the will of the flesh": Not by the natural human desire for children, not by natural generation, not the result of the husband's will.

- c) "Nor of the will of man": Not to the will of man in adopting a child.

Hence, we become children of God, not by our descent from illustrious parents like Abraham, not by our natural birth, and not by being adopted by a pious man.

- d) "but of God": God produces the change and confers the privilege of being called His children.

A person receives Christ as Saviour, but the work of the Holy Spirit is "the cause" of regeneration.



**2. a) Matthew 22:14 “For many are called, but few are chosen.”**

**Question:** Doesn't this say that God only chooses a few to be saved, and that they experience irresistible grace, and that everyone gets a general call, but only a few get an effectual call?

**Answer:** No. It just teaches that the great mass of people in the time of Christ, who had been called, had rejected the mercy of God in Christ, so God didn't choose them.

When the King who made the marriage feast for his son greeted the guests, he noticed a man without a wedding garment. In anger, the King rebuked him, asking him to explain his situation. The man was speechless, so the King ordered him bound hand and foot, taken away, and cast into outer darkness. Then he said, “For many are called, but few are chosen.”

In Christ's day, wedding garments were provided by the host for the wedding guests. This man's lack of a wedding garment was inexcusable, and his speechlessness indicated his realisation of the fact.

A garment had been provided for him by the King, but he had refused or neglected to wear it.

Christ placed the responsibility for the man's lack of a wedding garment, squarely on the man himself. His lack of reply indicated his guilt. This in no way pictures “irresistible grace”, nor does it teach a “general” and “effectual” call. It pictures unlimited atonement because of:

- i) The custom was for the host to provide wedding garments.
- ii) His speechlessness & lack of excuse indicates his guilt & personal responsibility, not the King's fault.

**b) Matthew 20:16 “For many be called, but few are chosen.”**

The parable of the householder hiring labourers to work in his vineyard, has nothing to do with anyone's election to salvation, but it relates to service and rewards. It means that among the multitudes of Christians called to serve God, God chooses some to a short period of labour but to great usefulness, while this does not injure others who serve God longer but have less useful, less widespread and less rewarded ministries. Christ calls many to service, but few are chosen to big ministries. God chooses some for higher stations in churches, with superior talents, gifts and wider usefulness. Their life's work may be shorter, but Christ has a right to choose to honour them in this way. Christ chooses some to be more useful than others, without regard to their length of service. Christ will reward them accordingly.

**3. Acts 13:48 “And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.”**

**Question:** Calvinists claim that this verse teaches:

- i) Unconditional election of God ordaining some people to eternal life.
- ii) A Limited number only are “ordained to eternal life.”
- iii) This “ordination of God” is not to service or external privileges, but to eternal life.
- iv) Irresistible grace, as seen from the words “as many as” meaning that all who are ordained by God to eternal life will most certainly believe.

**Answer:** This text has been most pitifully misunderstood. Calvinists presume it to mean that those in the assembly who were foreordained, or predestined by God's decree to eternal life, believed under the influence of that decree.

We must be careful to study what a word means before we attempt to fix its meaning.

In Greek, “ordained” here is “tetagmenoi” coming from the verb “tasso” (5021) meaning to: “appoint, arrange in military order, to determine, to order, to place in a certain rank or order, to dispose.”

i) Notice how these **authorities** explain this passage:

- a) “It does not properly refer to an eternal decree, or directly to the doctrine of election; ...but it refers to their being **THEN** (not in eternity past decreed) disposed to embrace eternal life.  
They were **then inclined** by an influence from outside themselves, or so disposed as to embrace eternal life. It refers not to an eternal decree, but that **then** there was such an influence as to dispose them, or incline them, to lay hold on salvation. That this was done by the influence of the Holy Spirit, is clear from all parts of the New Testament. (Titus 3:5,6; John 1:13). It was not a disposition or arrangement originating with themselves, but with God...  
The meaning may be expressed in few words:- who were disposed, and in good earnest determined, to embrace eternal life, by the operation of grace on their hearts.” “Albert Barnes Commentary on the New Testament in One Volume” p.464.
- b) “Whatever “tetagmenoi” may mean, which is the word the KJV translates “ordained,” it includes no idea of preordination or predestination of any kind. The verb “tasso” signifies to “place, set, order, appoint, dispose”; hence it has been considered here as implying the disposition or readiness of mind of several persons in the congregation, such as religious proselytes mentioned in v.43, who possessed the reverse of the disposition of those Jews who spake against those things, contradicting and blaspheming, v.45.  
Though the word in this place has been variously translated, yet, of all the meanings ever put on it, none agrees worse with its nature and known signification than that which represents it as intending those who were predestined to eternal life; this is no meaning of the term and should never be applied to it.” ‘Adam Clarke's Commentary on the Bible’ p.995.
- c) “Ordained: This is the perfect passive participle of the verb “tasso”, which was used primarily in the military sense: “draw up in order, arrange in place, assign, appoint, order.” R.J. Knowing comments: “There is no countenance here for the absolute decree of the Calvinists, since v.46 had already shown that the Jews had acted through their own choice, “but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn unto the Gentiles.” He goes on to say: “The Jews as a nation had been ordained to eternal life- but they had rejected this election. But those who believed among the Gentiles were equally ordained by God to eternal life, and it was in accordance with His divine appointment that the Apostles had turned to them.” “Word Meanings in the NT”, Ralph Earle.
- d) “There is no evidence that Luke had in mind an absolutum decretum of personal salvation. Certainly the Spirit of God does move upon the human heart to which some respond, as here, while others push him away.” ‘Word Pictures in the NT.’ A.T. Robertson, Vol. III. p.200.

ii) Notice some **other Greek words** which were **not** used:

- a) “DIATASSO” is a strengthened form of “TASSO”, frequently denotes to arrange, appoint, prescribe (eg. of what was appointed for tax collectors to collect, Luke 3:13; as God appointed Moses to make the tabernacle, Acts 7:44; what Paul ordained in all the churches about marriage, 1 Cor. 7:17; what the Lord ordained regarding the support of preachers, 1 Cor. 9:14). These show “Tasso” is not irresistible.
- b) “PROTASSO” is to “appoint before”, as “pro” means “before”. God “hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation.” (Acts 17:26) of the nations. ‘Vines Expository Dictionary of NT Words’ p. 70,71. This word “protasso” is **NOT** used in Acts 13:48. If it had been used, it would have presented a stronger case for “foreordination.”

It's absence is fatal to the Calvinist's claim of unconditional election.

c) "PROORIZO" = "To predestine, decree beforehand" is not used.

iii) The word "**TASSO**" is used 8 times in the N.T., with meanings as follows:

a) To command, or designate: "Into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them." Matthew 28:16.

Before Jesus' death, he previously appointed or commanded them to meet him on a mountain. They could have disobeyed. There is no idea of irresistible compulsion. Jesus told Paul to "go into Damascus; and there it shall be told thee of all the things which are appointed for thee to do." Acts 22:10. The Jews at Rome "appointed Paul a day" to visit his house to hear him preach about Jesus. Acts 28:23.

b) To institute or appoint: "The powers that be are ordained of God." Romans 13:1.

c) To determine, take counsel, resolve: "they determined that Paul and Barnabus...should go up to Jerusalem about this question." Acts 15:2.

d) To subject to the authority of another: "For I also am a man set under authority." Luke 7:8. The centurion was appointed or designated, as a soldier, to be under the authority of another.

e) To addict to, devote to: "They have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints." 1Cor. 16:15.

#### **The meaning of "TASSO" is thus:**

I) "TASSO" is never used to denote an internal disposition or inclination arising from one's own self. It does not mean that they disposed themselves to embrace eternal life.

II) "TASSO" means ordering, disposing or arranging from the outside, from some source other than himself. Eg. As of a soldier, who is arranged, classified, disposed or inclined by the will of his superior officer.

III) **Key:** "TASSO" in Acts 13:48 means that the Gentiles were **THEN disposed**, and in good earnest determined, to embrace eternal life, **by the Holy Spirit influencing their hearts**. It does NOT refer to an eternal decree of election, but they then experienced and submitted to a drawing power of the Holy Spirit to salvation.

#### **5. PERSEVERANCE OF THE SAINTS (POTS)**

'Perseverance of the saints' is ambiguous and obscure. As POTS was originally formulated and interpreted, it is opposed to eternal security. POTS is not essential to Calvinism. Some Calvinists, recognising the Arminian implications of 'perseverance', change it to 'preservation'.

If all Calvinists defined POTS as Rose does, we would have no argument with them on the fifth point.

'The doctrine declares that once God has begun the work of salvation in any person, He will persevere therein to the end and will never let any of His own be lost'. (Rose, p. 49).

However, most Calvinists do not emphasise this. They say that it is the believer who perseveres outwardly in the faith, as shown in these 3 quotes: 'This doctrine teaches that those who truly come to saving faith in Christ will persevere in the faith.' (Gunn, p 24).

'We may entertain the faith of our security in Christ only as we persevere in faith and holiness to the end'. (John Murray, *Redemption*, p.155).

'They whom God hath accepted in the Beloved, effectually called, and sanctified by his Spirit, can neither totally nor finally fall away from the state of grace, but shall certainly persevere to the end, and be eternally saved'. (*Westminster Confession of Faith*, XVII:1).

In spite of Calvinists' attempts to connect them, God's preserving in salvation is not the same thing as the saints persevering outwardly in the faith.

#### **Six Conclusions from Calvinists' Definition of Perseverance of the Saints**

i) The saints will persevere in the faith.

ii) Only those who persevere in the faith are true Christians.

iii) Those who do not persevere in the faith are lost, no matter what they once professed. 'Those who persevere not in faith and holiness, love and obedience, will surely perish'. (Pink, *Eternal Security*, p28). Since all Christians do not always persevere in perfect obedience, Calvinists are faced with a problem.

iv) The solution to Christians not persevering is that real Christians will return to the faith before death.

v) When faced with the problem that some Christians never return to the faith, Calvinists conclude that such were never saved in the first place.

vi) Calvinists' definition of perseverance is that POTS is different from eternal security.

**Key:** Because eternal security is so often equated with POTS, Calvinists often coerce Christians into accepting all the 5 points of Calvinism, by capitalising on their opponents' belief in eternal security. This is done by implying that a rejection of election and predestination (as taught by Calvinists) is a rejection of eternal security. The Calvinist, Mason, says: 'If unconditional election is false, then the doctrine of "once in grace, always in grace" is false.' (Mason, p 32).

'If the doctrine of election is false, then this doctrine (POTS) is false too, but if the doctrine of election is true, then this doctrine (POTS) necessarily follows.' (Palmer, p 69).

Many who believe eternal security think they are Calvinists because they equate it with perseverance of the saints.

#### **Arminianism**

Calvinists insist that there are only two tenable schemes among true Christians: Calvinism and Arminianism. According to Calvinists, anything contrary to Calvinism is Arminianism.

**Key:** This arbitrary division of men into Calvinist or Arminian is the strength of the Calvinistic system. Calvinists make such shocking statements about Arminianism that no one would dare claim to be an Arminian. If there are only two theological systems, then most men who desire to appear orthodox would claim to be a Calvinist.

Calvinists further misrepresent their opponents by using the 'guilt of association' argument, by classifying Arminians with everything that is unorthodox or heretical. Calvinists then attempt to denigrate Arminianism by implying that Arminians believe in salvation by works. Calvinists think that only in Calvinism can we find the teaching of salvation by grace, so they charge any non-Calvinist with believing in salvation by works. This accusation is often enough to convert one to Calvinism.

**Key:** When everything contrary to Calvinism is labelled Arminian, and Arminianism is presented in the worst possible light, many know they are not Arminian and take the name of Calvinist by default.

#### **Note:**

i) Arminianism is not an acceptable alternative to Calvinism.

Calvinists think that if one rejects Calvinism, then he is an Arminian. To this we strongly object.

ii) Calvinists have a false view of eternal security. Their view on perseverance is the same as Arminians. a) R L Shank (an **Arminian**): 'There is no saving faith apart from obedience (*Life in the Son*, R L Shank, 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed, p 219, Westcott Publishers, Springfield).

b) 'There is no valid assurance of election and final salvation for any man, apart from deliberate perseverance in faith'. (Shank, p 293).

c) A W Pink (**Calvinist**): 'Reader, if there is a reserve in your obedience, you are on the way to hell'. (*Practical Christianity*, p.16).

d) 'Holiness in this life is such a part of our "salvation" that it is a necessary means to make us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in heavenly light.' (Pink, *Sanctification*, p.28).

Hence Calvinists have the same thinking on perseverance as Arminians.

Calvinists confuse God's preservation of the believer with the believer's perseverance in the faith, thus making salvation possible only with a holy life without any blemish. Hence, the other side of POTS is Arminianism, which is a works-based salvation, and not by faith alone. 'not of works, lest any man should boast'. (Ephesians 2:9). 'Not by works of righteousness which we have done ...' (Titus 3:5).

For a Calvinist to teach otherwise, is to teach another gospel (Galatians 1:6).

**Key:** Contrary to salvation through perseverance (as taught by Calvinists), the Bible presents salvation by one thing – believing.

'This one word "believe" represents all a sinner can do and must do to be saved.' (LS Chafer, *Salvation*, p32 God saves those who believe (John 3:16; 6:47; Acts 16:31; Romans 10:9). Those who refuse to believe are lost (John 3:18; 3:36; 8:24). Calvinists require that believers must persevere in good works as a condition of salvation. This is another gospel. Hence, Calvinists are Arminians regarding the fifth point. Calvinists and Arminians both wrongly presume that:

a) The 'castaway' in I Corinthians 9:24-27 has lost his salvation;

b) 'He that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.' (Matthew 10:22). Calvinists think this means that one's salvation is only sure by enduring to the end of one's life. This passage, in fact, has nothing to do with anyone's salvation in the Church age, but teaches that if Tribulation saints endure the Antichrist's persecutions until the end of the 7 year Tribulation, then they will be saved/delivered from this persecution by Christ's return.

c) 'Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself (*from carnality, not hell*), and them that hear thee.' (I Timothy 4:16). Calvin writes of this: 'Pastors ... own salvation and that of their people depends on their serious and earnest devotion to their office'. (Calvin, *Commentaries*, Vol 10, p 248). Calvinists and Arminians presume that the word 'salvation' always refers to salvation from hell. Salvation from hell is not meant in II Corinthians 1:6; I Timothy 2:15; Luke 1:71; Acts 27:31. Curtis Hutson wrote: 'The eternal security of the believer does not depend on his perseverance.' (p.16). The Calvinist E K Garrett calls Hutson an 'Arminian Baptist Evangelist.' Calvinists call any opponent an Arminian, no matter what they believe.

**Note:** The New Testament clearly teaches that Christians may not persevere. It is possible to:

- 1) Depart from the faith (I Timothy 4:1).
- 2) Err from the faith (I Timothy 6:10).
- 3) Err concerning the faith (I Timothy 6:20).
- 4) Deny the faith (I Timothy 5:8).
- 5) Make shipwreck of the faith (I Timothy 1:19).
- 6) Cast off one's first faith (I Timothy 5:12).
- 7) Swerve from the faith (I Timothy 1:6).
- 8) Not continue in the faith (Colossians 1:23).
- 9) Fall from their own steadfastness (II Peter 3:17).
- 10) Become barren and unfruitful (II Peter 1:8).
- 11) Deny Christ (II Timothy 2:12).
- 12) Be ashamed when Christ returns (I John 2:28).

Bible characters that did not persevere include:

- 1) The Corinthian fornicator who was delivered to Satan (I Cor. 5:5) and later restored (II Cor. 2:6-8).
- 2) Hymenaeus and Alexander were also delivered to Satan (I Timothy 1:20).
- 3) Demas forsook Paul having loved this present world (II Timothy 4:10).
- 4) Mark deserted Paul (Acts 13:13), yet Paul later said, 'He is profitable to me for the ministry.' 2Tim4:11
- 5) 'Just Lot' (II Peter 2:7), 'righteous' Lot (II Peter 2:8) last seen drunk in a cave committing incest with his two daughters (Genesis 19:33,36).

**Question:** Did Lot persevere in the faith? No. A righteous man can turn from his righteousness and never turn back ('When the righteous turneth away from his righteousness and commit iniquity.' Ezekiel 18:24).

The Bible exhorts believers to persevere, and practise good works, but never in order to keep salvation.

a) 'Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord.' (I Corinthians 15:58).

b) 'Keep yourselves in the love of God.' (Jude 1:21).

c) 'Be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind.' (Romans 12:2). These and other Scriptures have no meaning if all Christians are sure to automatically persevere.

See Ephesians 2:10; Colossians 1:10; Titus 3:8; Hebrews 10:24.

**Question:** Why do some Christians not persevere? (Matthew 26:41).

a) 'Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.'

b) 'For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not'. (Romans 7:18).

**Key:** The error of Calvinists and Arminians is in discounting the Judgment Seat of Christ (Romans 14:10; I Corinthians 3:13-15; II Corinthians 5:10) where crowns are given. (I Corinthians 9:25; I Thessalonians 2:19; II Timothy 4:8; James 1:12; I Peter 5:4).

Compare salvation and rewards:

a) Salvation is offered to the lost (John 3:18); rewards are offered to the saved (I Corinthians 3:14).

b) Salvation is a free gift (Ephesians 2:8); rewards are earned by our works (I Corinthians 9:25).

c) Salvation is a present possession (John 5:24); rewards are a future possibility (II Timothy 4:8).

**Key:** Christians are given many instructions on how to live, but never on how to maintain or persevere in salvation: 'Abstain from all appearance of evil.' (I Thessalonians 5:22); See I Corinthians 10:31; Colossians 3:17; Philippians 4:8.

**Question:** What can happen to Christians in this life if they fail to persevere?

**Answer:** They may lose their joy; assurance of salvation; close fellowship with the Father, Christ and believers; rewards; and physical life, but they cannot lose their salvation.

**Lordship Salvation:** The Calvinist teaching of Perseverance of the Saints has recently surfaced among modern Fundamentalists and Evangelicals as 'Lordship Salvation', which is 'front loading' the Gospel by requiring works of submission and obedience as conditions for salvation. (Dillow, p.10).

The **real issue** here is whether a sinner must make Christ the Lord of his life at the time he believes on Christ for salvation. Lordship advocate, Otis, writes: 'Friend, if Jesus Christ isn't the Lord of your life, then you are yet lost in your sins.' (Otis, p.7).

Notable propagators of Lordship Salvation are A W Pink, J I Packer and John MacArthur. MacArthur's Calvinism is seen from his using terms like 'sovereign grace' and 'perseverance of the saints'.

#### **Errors of Lordship Salvation are:**

##### **1) Their denial that there can be a carnal Christian.**

**Answer:** Paul referred to the Corinthian brethren as carnal: 'And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.' (I Corinthians 3:1).

##### **2) Their denial that a believer has two natures which conflict: 'For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.' (Galatians 5:17). This states the possibility of Christians not 'walking in the Spirit' which is not practising the Lordship of Christ. 'So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.' (Romans 7:25).**

##### **3) They blur the distinction between a believer's standing and state:**

**Answer:** **Standing** is, 'He hath made us accepted in the beloved'. (Ephesians 1:6) and **State** is: 'Wherefore we labour, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.' (II Corinthians 5:9). (See also Romans 5:1 and Philippians 4:7).

**Standing** concerns what I am as God sees me through Christ's work.

**State** concerns my actual condition of soul.

##### **4) They accuse their opponents of easy believism' or believing in 'cheap grace.'**

**Answer:** In the Bible, grace is not only cheap, it is free, otherwise it would not be grace.

'But not as the offence, so also is the free gift... much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, ... hath abounded unto many.' (Romans 5:15).

**Question:** What do we reply to the charge of 'Easy believism'?

**Answer:** Are Calvinists advocating 'hard believism'? What is 'hard believism'? How hard is belief?

The Bible nowhere presents believing on Christ for salvation as something hard to do. (Except in the NIV's false and foolish rendering of Mark 10:24). In fact, believing is the only thing one can do to claim salvation: 'But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.' (Romans 4:5).

It might be hard to admit that one is a sinner heading to hell, or hard to admit that trusting in religion or good works won't save us, but once these are conceded, believing on Christ for salvation is easy.

Salvation is pictured as being as easy as calling on Christ to save (Romans 10:13); looking (Isaiah 45:22); asking (John 4:10); coming (Matthew 11:28); receiving (John 1:12); eating (John 6:51); drinking (John 7:37); trusting (Ephesians 1:13), and taking (Revelation 22:17).

Claiming salvation is easy, since Christ has done all the work on the cross. We can add nothing to it.

**Note:** Departing from the Bible's plan of salvation is the only way that believing on Christ can be made difficult.

##### **5) They confuse salvation and discipleship. Salvation is obtained in an instant.**

Discipleship is an on-going process. Salvation costs us nothing. Discipleship costs us everything. (Luke 14:26,27).

That discipleship is not salvation, is seen from these Scriptures:

a) Some were disciples first and then Christians later: 'his disciples believed on him' (John 2:11)

b) Judas was a disciple, but not saved (John 12:4).

c) Joseph of Arimathea was a secret disciple for fear of the Jews (John 19:38,39), yet still saved.

d) If discipleship is salvation, then Christ's disciples lost their salvation when they lost their discipleship, because 'all the disciples forsook him and fled.' (Matthew 26:56).

##### **6) They fail to understand that there are 3 aspects of sanctification.**

This error leads to lordship salvation and perfectionism.

a) **Positional** sanctification: 'ye are washed, but ye are sanctified,... by the Spirit.' (I Cor. 6:11). 'We are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all'. (Heb.10:10). God sees us sanctified positionally in Christ.

b) **Progressive** sanctification: 'Sanctify them through thy truth'. (John 17:17). 'For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication'. (I Thess. 4:3). As we gain victory over temptation, we are progressively sanctified.

c) **Future** sanctification 'who shall change our vile body.' (Philippians 13:21).

'When he shall appear, we shall be like him.' (I John 3:2). (future sanctification).

'Every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself (progressive sanctification), even as he is pure (positional sanctification by justification)'. (I John 3:3).

The sanctification necessary for the salvation of any Christian has already been attained by Christ's sacrifice. (Hebrews 10:10).

##### **7) They have a distorted view of faith and repentance. Repentance is basically a change of mind about Christ, myself as a sinner, and the inability of my works to save me. Paul preached repentance as being different from turning to God and doing works: 'that they should repent, and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance'.**

(Acts 26:20). Calvinists and Lordship salvationists wrongly define repentance as turning from sin, changing one's life, remorse, etc.

**Key:** The obvious question is: **How much** must one turn from sin to be saved, when nobody can ever totally turn from sin? This brings us to works for salvation.

##### **8) They rely on modern Bible versions to prove Lordship salvation. Compare KJV (correct) with:**

**Colossians 2:6 KJV:** 'As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him.'

**New International:** 'So then, just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord, so continue to live in him.'

**Good News Bible:** 'Since ye have accepted Christ Jesus as Lord, live in union with him.'

Instead of reading 'the Lord' (KJV), many modern versions change it to 'as Lord' or 'is Lord'.

##### **Romans 10:9**

**Authorised Version (KJV):** 'That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus,'

**New International Version:** 'That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord", ...'

**Good News Bible:** 'If you declare with your lips, "Jesus is Lord", ...'

##### **II Corinthians 4:5**

**Authorised Version (KJV):** 'We preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; ...'

New International Version: 'For we do not preach ourselves, but Jesus Christ as Lord, ...'

Good News Bible: 'For it is not ourselves that we preach; we preach Jesus Christ as Lord.'

9) They **don't precisely define** what Lordship salvation really is.

Otis writes: 'Obedience to God's commandments is submission to Christ's Lordship.' (p. 21). 'Submitting to Christ's Lordship is the constant obedience to God's commandment.' (p.25).

**Answer:** If this is true, then no Calvinist ever submitted to the Lordship of Christ. To walk as Christ walked is to really submit to his Lordship. This means sinless perfection which is impossible before heaven. God demands absolute perfection at all times. Anything less is a rejection of Christ's Lordship. No Lordship salvation advocate says that a man must live absolutely sinless to be a genuine believer. But how much lordship is required to be one of God's 'elect'? Does smoking (as Spurgeon did) disqualify one from practising lordship? What about drinking alcohol, lying, coveting, pride, anger, bad thoughts? Calvinists reply that it is the habitual practice of these that prove one is lost.

**Question:** But how does one define 'habitual practice'?

**Question:** What if someone surrendered to quitting all these the moment he was saved, but was unable to continually achieve it always? Is his salvation now questionable?

**Key:** The real problem is that Lordship salvation teachers have set up their own standards to measure a person's salvation. If these standards are not met, they conclude he is not saved. Only if the person meets their standards do they consider him saved. 'The gospel of Christ is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth' (Romans 1:16) not to every one who surrenders to the Lordship of Christ.

10) The difference between salvation and lordship is seen in Paul's different instructions to unsaved and saved men:

To the unsaved: 'Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved.' (Acts 16:31).

To the saved: 'I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service'. (Rom 12:1). No unsaved man could ever meet the demands for always 100% surrendering to Christ's lordship.

The Calvinist John Robbins calls John MacArthur a semi-Arminian because of his book '*The Gospel According to Jesus*.' 'MacArthur's book is very confused and dangerous. It does not present the Gospel according to Jesus, but another gospel, which is not the gospel at all, and similar to that of the Roman Church.' (p.1,4).

Lordship salvation is dangerous because it gives:

- a **false assurance of salvation** to those trusting their works to save them;
- b) assurance of salvation based on our works, rather than a trust in Christ's finished work on the cross.

**Preservation by God or Perseverance by us?**

If salvation is all of grace and entirely the work of God, it could never depend on whether a man persevered. Perseverance implies persistence, continuance and effort by us, and is a work of man.

1) a) The word 'persevere' is used only once in the Bible, in relation to prayer (Eph. 6:18), not salvation.

b) The word 'preserve' is used 5 times in relation to salvation: (II Timothy 4:18.

- 'The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and **will preserve** me unto his heavenly kingdom'

- 'to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and **preserved** in Christ Jesus, and called.' (Jude 1).

- 'The Lord **shall preserve** thy going out and thy coming in from this time forth, & even for evermore.' Ps 121:8

- 'The Lord ... forsaketh not his saints; they are **preserved forever**.' (Psalm 37:28).

- 'Your whole spirit and soul and body be **preserved** blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.' (I Thessalonians 5:23).

2) Christians are united with Christ ('in Christ'). The solution is to get out of Adam and into Jesus Christ: 'For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.' (I Corinthians 15:22). Believers are: ~ 'joined unto the Lord.' (I Corinthians 6:17);

~ 'members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones' (Ephesians 5:30);

~ 'partakers of the divine nature' (II Peter 1:4);

~ 'crucified with Christ' (Galatians 2:20);

~ 'quickened with Christ' (Ephesians 2:5);

~ 'risen with Christ' (Colossians 3:1);

~ 'alive with Christ' (Colossians 3:3-4);

~ 'seated together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus' (Ephesians 2:6).

This union with Christ is the central truth in salvation, and is pictured as a:

i) Foundation and its building (Ephesians 2:20-22);

ii) Vine and its branches (John 15:5);

iii) Husband and his wife (Ephesians 5:23,30-32);

iv) Body and its members (I Corinthians 12:12);

v) Shepherd and his sheep (John 10:14);

vi) Adam and his descendants (I Corinthians 15:22).

3) **Question:** Is salvation an instantaneous act of God, or is it a process that depends on man's perseverance? Both Calvinism and Arminianism teach the latter.

4) Believers are preserved because of **Biblical predestination** that we are 'predestinated to be conformed to the image of his Son.' (Romans 8:29). This is one of the greatest promises and surest proofs of eternal security. ~'we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.' (I Corinthians 15:49).

~'who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body.' (Phil 3:21)

~'we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him.' (I John 3:2).

Predestination is a Biblical doctrine, but Calvinists have misapplied it.

5) 'If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself.' (II Timothy 2:13). Both Calvinists and Arminians teach that a man must continue believing throughout his life in order to be saved. (MacArthur, *Gospel According to Jesus*, p 172; Shank, *Life in the Son*, p 55,60). Both hastily refer to II Timothy 2:12 'if we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us'. (II Timothy 2:12). This verse refers to Christ's denying some believers the reward of millennial rulership if they deny him now. The next verse destroys Calvinist and Arminian perseverance: 'If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself'. (II Timothy 2:13). Our preservation depends on Christ's faithfulness, not on our perseverance. Christ would have to deny himself and his promises, if we lost His salvation, because we are in him (Philippians 1:1), no man can pluck us out of his hand (John 10:28), and we are part of his hand (Ephesians 5:30).

Calvinists make perseverance depend on something man does. Perseverance of the saints is a result of Reformation concern that 'justification by faith' would produce moral laxity in the church, so they teach that only those who persevere are truly saved.

#### **Bad results of Perseverance of the Saints:**

- 1) **Lack of Bible teaching** on: a) The Judgment Seat of Christ;  
b) God disciplining backslidden believers in this life;  
c) Gain or loss of heavenly rewards.

These subjects are rarely taught in churches that believe in works or perseverance for salvation.

- 2) Calvinists' error is in equating **preservation by God**, with perseverance of the saints. God knows who is saved: 'Man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart.' I Sam 16:7
- 3) Perseverance of the saints contains a **false view of assurance of salvation**, because it makes salvation depend on election, and not on receiving Jesus Christ as Saviour.

**Conclusion:** Calvinism, according to John Wesley, "represents our Lord as a hypocrite, a deceiver of the people, a man void of common sincerity, as mocking his helpless creatures by offering what He never intends to give, by saying one thing and meaning another." (Schaff, History, Vol. 8, p.566).

One's view of election determines one's method of evangelism. In Calvinism, there is no need for any evangelist at all, because the 'elect' are sure to be saved by 'irresistable grace' whether we preach the gospel or not. Refuting this, Paul warns, "Woe is unto me if I preach not the gospel." (I Cor. 9:16).

It is sure that the more consistently a man practices his Calvinism, the less evangelistic he becomes.

When all else fails, Calvinists appeal to Charles Spurgeon's ministry as proof that one can be both evangelistic and Calvinistic. Spurgeon's successful, large church was not due to his Calvinism, but was because he inconsistently practiced his Calvinism.

Custance alleges that "when we depart from Calvinism with its emphasis on God's sovereign grace and man's helplessness, we constitute ourselves as sowers, germinators, & with the power to give life." Paul departed from Calvinism: "my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds." Philemon 10.

"(I) might save some of them." (Romans 11:14). "that I might by all means save some." (I Cor. 9:22).

"in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel." (I Cor. 4:15).

**Source:** "The Other Side Of Calvinism", Laurence M. Vance, Vance Publications, PO Box 11781,

Pensacola, Florida, USA, 32524, Phone/Fax 850-474-1626. Used with kind permission of L.Vance.

#### **4 KEY DEFINITIONS: Adoption, Predestination, Foreknowledge, Election.**

Many people wrongly embrace Calvinism because:

- i) They fail to correctly define these four terms, and
- ii) They fail to study and understand all the scriptures discussing each term.

**1. ADOPTION** (Gk:huiiothesia =son-placed = getting our resurrected, glorified bodies in heaven 5206). Four scriptures discussing 'adoption' are:

i) **Present** adoption for our soul: "ye have received the spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God." Romans 8:15,16.

ii) **Future** adoption of our body: "For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, ...waiting for the adoption, the **redemption of the body**." Romans 8:23.

iii) **Future** adoption of our body: "to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, ..." Galatians 4:5,6.

iv) **Future** adoption of our body: "Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children (Gk: sons) by Jesus Christ to himself..." Ephesians 1:5.

**Definition:** "Adoption" in the NT is "**son placed**", not "**son made**."

It comes from the Greek word "huiiothesia" (5206), which is made up of two words, "**huios**" (a son, 5207), and "**theso**" (future tense of "to place" (5087)).

**I. The Meaning of Adoption** (huiiothesia). See Ephesians 1:5.

Adoption is an act where God sets a goal, or placed a certain destination and position for the believer. That goal is:

i) To receive a sinless resurrection body (Romans 8:23),

ii) To be fully conformed to the image of Christ in heaven (Romans 8:29), and

iii) To be introduced to the universe as fully glorified sons of God ( I John 3:2).

Adoption in the NT does **NOT** mean "adopting a child born of other parents."

Calvinists think that adoption means "**son made**", which would prove from Ephesians 1:5 that we are predestinated to become saved. Since adoption means "**son placed**" in heaven, this refutes the Calvinist view of predestinated to be saved, and proves that we are predestined to be conformed to the image of Christ. (Romans 8:29).

The difference between being "son made " and "son placed" is as follows:

i) You are "**son made**" or made a son of God the moment you receive Christ as Saviour. As a son, God has provided some privileges and benefits that we will only receive in the future, when we get our resurrection body at Christ's return.

ii) No one has been "**son-placed**" (adopted) yet. One time you will be. You belong to Christ now, just as much as you ever will be. But you have not yet arrived at the goal which God has predestinated you to become which is Adoption (or son placing).

#### **Question: What is the background meaning and origin of being "son -placed"?**

In the early days of the Roman Empire, when a boy was born into his family, he was cared for by his parents until he was 21 years of age. At age 21, they took their child and placed him in the marketplace before the public. This was his "son placing" event. From that time on he could sign his own legal documents, and possessed the full legal authority of a man.

**Note:** This act at the market place did not make him a son. He was made a son when he was born into his parent's family. At age 21 he was "**son placed**".

**Translation problem:** The KJV translators could find no equivalent English word for "huiiothesia", this act of "son placing" at age 21, because "son placing" does not occur in our society. So the KJV translators used the word "Adoption" as the only word to express God's transaction of placing a certain destination, position, inheritance and full legal status for the believer. Hence the translators have Paul using "adoption" in the NT to mean "son placed."

We can now see how Ephesians 1:5 **does NOT teach that God predestines us to be saved**, but that God predestines us to be "son placed" **after Christ's return**.

"Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children (Greek is "**sons**" in "huiiothesia") by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will." Ephesians 1:5.

**II. The Time of Adoption** (hiothesia = son placing). Romans 8:23.

**Question:** When will this “son placing” adoption take place?

i) When our groaning, travailing bodies get redeemed when Christ returns.

“For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit,... waiting for the adoption, to wit the redemption of the body.” Romans 8:23.

The firstfruits in a believer’s life are pardon, forgiveness, service, fellowship, acceptance, security, sanctification, etc. Notice that adoption is not mentioned here among the firstfruits of the Spirit. We should have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groaning within ourselves and waiting for something to take place.

**Question:** What are we waiting for? The Adoption.

**Question:** When will it take place? At the redemption of our bodies when Christ returns. (Romans 8:23). We now have redeemed souls in unredeemed bodies. Many teach that the new birth and adoption mean the same thing. This is not the teaching of God’s Word. The new birth took place when we received Christ as Saviour, and became a child of God.

Adoption will occur when we receive our glorified body. “That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.” Ephesians 2:7.

**Question:** When will believers experience the riches of his grace and kindness?

**Answer:** After we are “son placed” in heaven in the ages to come. Christ came not only to save us from the penalty and power of our sins, but He came that we might be “son placed.” The angels of heaven will gaze at us with an unbelievable amazement when they see the wonderful grace of the Lord Jesus in “son placing” saved sinners.

ii) We may not be much like Jesus now, but some day every believer will be like Him.

“Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.” I John 3:1,2. **This is the real purpose of God, to have many sons who would be like His Son.** Thus we define Adoption as “God setting a goal for each believer to be son placed in heaven.” This is what God predestines us to be, and our adoption is therefore certain.

**III. The Present Manifestation of Adoption.** Romans 8:15.

“For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.” Romans 8:15.

These believers in Rome in addition to receiving Christ as Saviour, had at the same time also received the Spirit of adoption, known as the Holy Spirit. As a believer, we have not yet been adopted, but we

do have the Spirit of adoption. We are:

- i) Now under God’s protection and care,
- ii) We relate to God as children by obeying him,
- iii) We call upon him as “Father” in loving confidence.

The Bible Knowledge Commentary states: “Because of present sufferings (Romans 8:18) believers,

like creation, groan inwardly (Romans 8:22) as they wait eagerly for their adoption as sons, which is identified as the redemption of their bodies. The word “adoption” (hiothesia) means “placing as a son”, and describes a believer’s legal relationship to God.

In one sense each believer has already received the adoption, because he has “received the Spirit of adoption” (Romans 8:15) and is a son of God (Galatians 4:6,7). At the same time, as Romans 8:23 states, believers still anticipate their adoption in its completeness, which is said to be the redemption of their bodies (Romans 8:23). This is called the “manifestation of the sons of God” (Romans 8:19), and the “glorious liberty of the children of

God” (Romans 8:21). It will occur at the rapture of the church when believers will be raised and transformed with glorious bodies. Paul called that day the “day of redemption.” (Ephesians 4:30). Walvoord and Zuck. p.472,473.

**IV. The Participants in Adoption – “we.”** Galatians 4:5.

“To redeem them that were under the law, that WE might receive the adoption of sons. And because

ye are sons...” Galatians. 4:5,6.

**Question 1:** Who looked forward to the adoption of sons?

**Answer:** “We.” This means that Paul and the Galatians both did. Only those who are “son made”

will be “son placed.”

**Question 2:** Why did Jesus Christ come?

**Answer:** a) To redeem them (everybody) that were under the penalty of the law.

b) That we might receive the adoption of sons.

**Comments by Other Authorities.**

i) “Adoption”: What is that to which God has foreordained us? The answer is: adoption. The Greek word is “hiothesia”, which occurs in Romans 8:15,23; 9:4; Galatians 4:5, and Ephesians 1:5. Literally the term means “a placing as a son.” “Adoption of children” (KJV, Eph. 1:5) is literally “adoption as sons.” We become children of God by the new birth; we become sons of God by adoption. The latter is a legal term. Adoption was not a Jewish custom, but a Roman one.” “Word Meanings in the NT.” R. Earle. p.289.

ii) “Waiting for the adoption (Romans 8:23): Waiting for the full blessings of the adoption. Christians have the spirit of adoption when they are converted (Romans 8:15), but they have not yet been admitted to the full privileges of their adoption into the family of God. The fullness of their adoption is their complete admission to the privileges of the sons of God. It is the completion of our being received into the family of God. “The redemption of the body”. The complete recovery of the body from death and corruption. The particular and striking act of the adoption... will be the raising up of the body from the grave, and rendering it immortal and eternally blessed. The particular effects of the adoption in this world are on the soul. The completion of it will be seen particularly in the body; and thus the entire man will be admitted into the favour of God, restored from all his sins, and all the evil consequences of the fall. In the presence of an assembled universe he will be acknowledged as a son of God. This elevated privilege gives to Christianity its high value.” Barnes Notes on the NT. p 608.

**2. PREDESTINATION** (Gk: “proorizo” = to determine or to decree beforehand. 4309).

It comes from 2 Greek words, “pro” (before, 4253) and “horizo” (to determine, 3724).

Let us study the 6 times it occurs in the NT (Acts 4:28; Romans 8:29,30; 1 Cor. 2:7; Ephesians 1:5,11.)

The peace of Christendom has been disrupted due to many people misunderstanding this word.

**I. Definition:** “Adoption” is an act where God sets a goal (son placing) for each believer. “Predestination” is an act where God makes that goal (of son placing) certain for each believer.

**Note:** “Predestination” is made up of 2 words, “pre” meaning “beforehand”, and “destination” meaning the “climax, end, farthest extent.” It has nothing to do with anything in between.

**Illustration:** By paying a train fare beforehand, the railway promises to deliver you to your destination.

## II. The Purpose of Predestination.

**Question 1:** What are we predestined to become?

**Answer:** i) The **Adoption of sons**, or “son placing” us in heaven.

“Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children (sons) by Jesus Christ himself, according to the good pleasure of his will.” Ephesians 1:5.

ii) **Conforming us to the image of Christ:**

“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose”. (What is God’s purpose?)

“For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, so that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.” Romans 8:28,29.

(Note: ‘Firstborn’ (4416 Gk: “prototokos” means “pre-eminent, first, ruler”, not “firstcreated”).

iii) **Becoming like Jesus Christ:**

“Beloved, now are we the sons of God (“son born”), and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.” 1 John 3:2.

## III. The Time of Our Conforming to the Image of Christ.

**Question 2:** When will we be conformed to the image of Christ?

**Answer:** When our body is redeemed (Romans 8:23) in heaven. That is the time of our adoption.

“We ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption (Gk: huiiothesia (5206) = son placing), to wit, the redemption of our body.” Romans 8:23.

## IV. The Church in Ephesians.

a) In Ephesians 1-3, we have the church as **God sees her**, accepted (v.6), redeemed, forgiven (v.7), an inheritance (1:11), sealed with the Holy Spirit (1:13), enlightened in understanding, hope of his calling, riches of glory, great power (1:18,19), Head of the church (1:22), quickened (2:1,5), raised and seated in heavenly places (2:6), his workmanship (2:10), near to God (2:13), broken partition (2:14), abolished enmity of the 10 commandments (2:15), reconciled (2:16), access to the Father (2:18), fellow citizens, household of God (2:19), built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ chief cornerstone (2:20), holy temple (2:21), habitation of God (2:22), Jews and Gentiles fellowheirs (3:6), demonstrating the wisdom of God to principalities and powers in heaven (3:10), boldness and access with confidence (3:12), family of God (3:15), inner strength (3:16), Christ in our hearts, rooted and grounded in love (3:17), filled with the fullness of God, knowing the love of Christ (3:19).

b) In Ephesians 4,5,6, we see the **Church** as God desires the **world** to see her, in her **walk** and **work** (Note 40 elements to walk worthy from 4:1).

c) In Ephesians 1:4,5 God decided before the foundation of the world that He would have a church with its **foundation “in Christ”**, and that it would be a **holy, blameless, and loving** church. The words “us” and “we” in Ephesians refer to the church as Christ’s body.

d) God does not predestine individuals to heaven or hell. The **only individual God predestines is Christ**, and it is to suffering and to glory: “the Spirit of Christ...**testified beforehand the sufferings** of Christ, and the **glory** that should follow.” 1 Peter 1:11. It is blasphemy to say that God predestines individuals to hell.

## V. NT Occurrences of “Predestination.” (proorizo (4309) = determine beforehand).

a) Acts 4:28 “For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel **determined before** to be done.”

Herod and Pilate crucifying Jesus was predetermined or foreordained by God.

b) “For whom he did foreknow, he also did **predestinate** to be conformed to the image of His Son... Whom he did predestinate, them he also called...” Romans 8:29,30.

c) “but we **speak** the wisdom of God in a mystery,..which God **ordained** before the world unto **our glory**.” I Cor. 2:7. We proclaim God’s wise plan of salvation. It’s purpose was for our glory and benefit.

d) “Having **predestinated** us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself...” (v.5) “being **predestinated** according to the purpose of him...” (v.11). Ephesians 1:5,11.

## 3. FOREKNOWLEDGE (proginosko (4267) = to know beforehand).

This comes from 2 Greek words, “**pro**” (before, 4253), and “**ginosko**” (to know, 1097).

“For whom he did **foreknow**, he also did **predestinate** to be conformed to the image of his Son” 1 Pet 1:2

**I. Definition:** Foreknowledge is a divine attribute, where God sees all things in the present tense. There is no past or future with God. God is “I AM”, eternally present tense. Neither time nor space restrict God, since He created both (2 Peter 3:8).

Because God foreknows all things, it doesn’t mean that He foreordains or causes them.

## II. Scriptures Teaching God’s Foreknowledge

i) Psalm 139:1-8 “Thou **knowest** my downsitteing and mine uprising, thou **understandest** my thought afar of...and art **acquainted** with all my ways. (v.3)...thou knowest it altogether (v.4).”

God knew David, his thoughts, his whole life conduct, at all times and in all places.

ii) John 8:55,58 Jesus said: “I know him (my Father)”, and “Before Abraham was, I am.” Jesus knew all things that existed before him in the present tense.

## 4. ELECTION (Greek: ekloge (1589) = to choose, select).

**Election in Romans 9: “God’s Election of Israel.”**

**9:1** “I say the truth in Christ, I lie not.”

Paul here makes one of the most solemn oaths possible. He makes a 3-fold appeal to:

i) **Christ** as the searcher of hearts, that he tells the truth.

ii) His **Conscience** was totally clear in this matter.

iii)The **Holy Ghost** bore him witness that what he said was true.

This oath in the Name of the Messiah shows that it is right on solemn occasions to appeal to Christ for the sincerity of our motives, and for the truth of our words.

Christ Who is present everywhere with all believers (as God) searches our hearts to detect insincerity, hypocrisy and perjury.

**9:2** “**That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.**”

Paul moved from the **joy** of thinking about **Christ** in Romans 8, to the **sorrow** and **burden** of unsaved **Israel** in Romans 9. Whenever Paul thought on Israel’s rejection of Christ, it gave him great grief.

**9:3** “**For I could wish that myself were accursed (Greek: anathema) from Christ for my brethren my kinsmen according to the flesh.**”

**Question:** What does this mean?

**A:** The word “accursed” (Greek: **anathema**) means anything devoted to destruction, complete ruin or subject to a **curse** (1 Kings 20:42). (Compare “anathema” = curse, with “anathēma” = suffering). It does not denote eternal death. Paul is saying: “I am willing to be destroyed, devoted to death, suffer the bitterest evils, to forego all pleasure, to endure any privation, suffering and toil if it resulted in saving the nation Israel.” Moses had this attitude (Exodus 32:32). Paul was willing to be so greatly devoted to Christ and to suffer and die if by that means he could save Israel. This is an example to all Christians that we should be willing to endure pain, privation, toil & death if this resulted in others getting saved.

**9:4,5** “(i) **Who are Israelites; (ii) to whom pertaineth the adoption**, and (iii) **the glory, and**



(iv) the covenants, and (v) the giving of the law, and (vi) the service of God, and (vii) the promises; (viii) whose are the fathers, and (ix) of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen.”

**Background:** Romans 9 discusses Israel's past election.

Romans 10 discusses Israel's present rejection.

Romans 11 discusses Israel's future restoration to favour.

In Romans 9, Paul shows how Israel's past history magnifies the character and attributes of God, those being His faithfulness (v.1-13), righteousness (v.14-18), justice (v.19-29), and grace (v.30-33).

In Romans 9:4,5 Paul mentions 9 historical benefits of Israel:

i) Who are Israelites: They were descended from Israel (formerly Jacob) meaning “prince of God” (Genesis 32:26-32). The name “Israelites” conveyed their very high dignity as a royal nation as being princes of the Most High God.

ii) The Adoption: God adopted the nation Israel into His family.

“Israel is my son, even my firstborn.” (Exodus 4:22).

“I am a father to Israel.” (Jeremiah 31:9).

“When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called my son out of Egypt.” (Hosea 11:1).

“The LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself...” (Deuteronomy 7:6).

This adoption took place when God made a covenant with them at Mount Horeb.

iii) The Glory: The shekinah glory cloud was the manifestation of God's very presence among them.

It appeared as the pillar of cloud and fire as they left Egypt (Exodus 13:21).

It appeared between the cherubim in the Ark of the Covenant in the Tabernacle (Exodus 25:22 and 40:34), and in Solomon's Temple (1Kings 8:10,11; Isaiah 6:1-5).

The glory Moses beheld on Mt. Sinai came to dwell with Israel (Exodus 24:16,17; Isaiah 6:1-5).

No other nation was ever thus favoured.

iv) The Covenants given to Abraham (Genesis 15:18), Moses and David (II Samuel 7:12-16).

The Covenants included the Abrahamic (Genesis 12:1-3; 15:1-7; 17:1-8), the Mosaic (Exodus 20,21), the Davidic (2 Samuel 7:10-16; 1 Chronicles 17:7-15; Psalm 89:27-37), and the New Covenant (Jeremiah 31:33; Ezekiel 34).

v) The Giving of the Law on Mt. Sinai to govern Israel's political, social and religious life (Exodus 20; Deuteronomy 5:1-33). It was the foundation of all true legal codes ever since.

vi) The Service: The ceremonies and sacrifices in the temple teaching the sinfulness of sin and the holiness of God.

vii) The Promises include the land of Canaan, the Messiah's blessings, and His coming 1000 year kingdom on earth.

viii) Whose are the fathers: some of the greatest men that ever lived were Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, Joshua, Samuel and David.

ix) And of whom as concerning the flesh came Christ who is over all (Most High) God blessed forever. Amen.

**Question:** Does Romans 9:5b refer to God or to Christ?

If it refers to Christ, it would clearly prove His Deity as reading “Christ who is over all God blessed forever. Amen.” There were no commas in the early NT Greek manuscripts. The placing of commas, full stops and question marks were inserted by the translators' opinion. Does Romans 9:5b equate Christ with God? We say it does refer to Christ as God because:

i) The KJV, ASV, NASV, NIV put a comma before 'who'. This endorses the Deity of Christ.

**KJV:** “of whom as concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is over all, God blessed for ever.”

**NIV:** ‘from them is traced the human ancestry of Christ, who is God over all, forever praised’.

This reading is supported by most church fathers.

ii) The RV, RSV, NEB, GNB, NWT place a full stop after “Christ”.

Thus they don't equate Christ with God. They merely make the end of the verse a benediction to God.

**GNV:** ‘Christ, as a human being, belongs to their race. May God, who rules over all, be praised forever’

**NWT:** ‘from whom Christ (sprang) according to the flesh: God, who is over all, (be) blessed forever’. **Answer:** We endorse i) for these reasons:

i) The antithesis implied between the 2 clauses in the verse, favours this view. Paul has just stated that Christ (as to his human nature) was an Israelite, and now states that according to His higher nature, is the supreme, Most High God, or “God over all.” These are a matching contrast, an appropriate antithesis, and are complementary to each other.

For a similar example see Romans 1:3,4 “Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh, And declared to be the Son of God with power according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead.”

Here Christ is said to be according to His human nature, the Son of David, but according to His Divine nature declared to be the Son of God.

ii) Romans 9:5b makes 3 statements about Christ.

He is Lord over all, He is God by nature, and He will be praised and blessed forever.

Paul's salvation experience and scripture study forced him to redefine his Jewish monotheism to include Christ within the category of Deity.

iii) The relative pronoun “who” must agree with its nearest antecedent, which is “Christ.” This link proves Christ is the Supreme God. There is grammatical agreement between the noun “Christ” (ὁ Χριστός) and the participle “who is” (ὁ ὢν).

iv) **Context:** The blessing to Christ best suits the context. It is a natural climax to the list of special privileges enjoyed by the Jews. It would be very unnatural to suddenly change the subject, and break out in blessing to God.

v) **Word Order:** Those who deny that Romans 9:5b teaches the Deity of Christ, must make the word “blessed” (Gk: eulogatos) refer to God the Father as a Doxology to Him.

Examples:

-The Revised Version (1880) reads: “...according to the flesh, is the Christ. God who is over all be blessed forever. Amen.”

-The Good News Version reads: “May God, who rules over all, be praised forever! Amen”.

-The New World Translation reads: “flesh: God, who is over all, [be] blessed forever. Amen.” They are faced with a major difficulty, as follows:

Whenever “blessed” (Gk: “eulogatos”) occurs in an independent doxology, “eulogatos” always precedes the name of ‘God’ (Θεός =theos) (eg: “εὐλογητός ὁ θεός” as in 2Cor.1:3; Eph.1:3; 1 Pet 1:3

But in Romans 9:5, “eulogatos” follows the name of God: “θεός εὐλογητός”.

The word order of doxologies is never “God blessed” or “God be blessed” as in Romans 9:5.

(In doxologies to God or Christ, the word “blessed” (“eulogatos”) always occurs first. This is not the case in Romans 9:5).

Hence Romans 9:5 cannot be a doxology to God, but must be taken as a declaration of who is blessed, that being Christ as God. This potent argument is conclusive in itself.

vi) **Absence of the article before “blessed.”** Because “εὐλογητός” (“blessed”) is not preceded by the article in Romans 9:5, the meaning cannot be “the blessed God”, which

would require a different reading “(ὁ) □εος ὁ εὐλογητος.” See “Jesus as God.” Murray J. Harris. p.161.

**vii) “over all”** is equivalent to **“Most High, supreme.”** We may read Romans 9:5b as: “as concerning the flesh came Christ who is Most High God blessed forever. Amen.”

The same words occur in Ephesians 4:6, “One God, who is above all.” (ἐπι παντων). This passage, therefore, shows that Christ is God in the highest sense of the word.

Since Jesus Christ is God over all, and blessed forever, how profound should be our reverence, how complete our obedience, and how joyful should be our confidence in Him.

**viii)** The expression “Christ who is over all (things) God blessed forever. Amen,” is expressly acknowledged to refer to Christ by **60 well known early church writers**, these being: Irenaeus, Hippolytus (3 places), Origen, Malchion, 6 Bishops at the Council of Antioch (269 AD), ps. Dionysius Alex (2 places), the Apostolic Constitutions, Athanasius (6 places), Basil (2), Didymus (5), Gregory of Nyssen (5), Epiphanius (5), Theodorus Mops, Methodius, Eustathius, Eulogius (2), Caesarius (3), Theophilus Alex (2), Nestorius, Theodotus of Ancyra, Proclus (2), Severianus Bishop of Gabala, Chrysostom (8), Cyril of Alexandria (15 times), Paulus Bishop of Emesa, Theodoret (12 times), Gennadius, Severus, Amphilocheus, Gelasius Cyz., Anastasius of Antioch, Leontius Byz (3), Maximus, J. Damascene (3), Tertullian (2), Cyprian, Novatian (2), Ambrose (5), Palladius the Arian at the Council of Aquileia, Hilary (7), Jerome (2), Augustine (30 times), Victorinus, the Breviarum (2), Marius Mercator, Cassian (2), Alcimus Avit, Fulgentius (2), Leo Bishop of Rome (2), Fernandus (2), Facundus, plus 6 ancient writers. All these see in Romans 9:5 a glorious assertion of the eternal Godhead of Christ. “The Revision Revised,” John Burgon, p. 210-214.

**ix)** If the **theme** of Romans 9:1-4 is **Israel’s unbelief**, it would be very appropriate to end the paragraph by referring to the exalted status and nature of Israel’s rejected Messiah. It would be totally inappropriate to conclude with a joyful praise to God in the context of Israel’s rejection of Christ.

**x)** Since Paul elsewhere taught that Jesus shares the full names, nature, attributes and functions of God, we should not be surprised to see Paul here referring to Jesus as God.

**xi)** The phrase **“blessed forever”** was usually added by Jewish writers after mentioning God’s name as an expression of reverence.

I Chronicles 16:36 “Blessed be the Lord God of Israel for ever and ever.”

I Chronicles 23:13 “to minister unto him, and to bless his name for ever and ever.”

I Chronicles 29:10 “Blessed be thou, Lord God of Israel our Father, for ever and ever.”

Nehemiah 9:5 “Stand up and bless the Lord your God for ever and ever.”

Psalms 72:19 “Blessed be his glorious name for ever.”

Psalms 145:1 “I will bless thy name for ever and ever.”

Daniel 2:20 “Daniel said: Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever.”

Romans 1:25 “the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.”

**Conclusion:** As opposed to the indignity and rejection perpetrated on Jesus by His fellow Israelites, the Messiah, Jesus Christ, is in reality exalted over the whole universe, He is fully God by nature, and is eternally the object of worship.

**9:6 “Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect.”**

In spite of these 9 privileges, Israel failed by rejecting and crucifying their Messiah.

**Question:** Does Israel’s failure mean that God’s word has failed? (Or taken none effect).

No.

**Question:** What is the “word of God” here?

**Answer:** The word of God means anything that God has spoken, and here it refers to the promises to Abraham regarding the salvation of Israel. These include

“I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant.” (Genesis 17:7);

“But my covenant will I establish with Isaac.” (Genesis 17:21);

(Gen.17:19.

“I will establish my covenant with him (Isaac) for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him.”

**“For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel.” (Romans 9:6)**

All the natural descendants of the patriarch Israel (Jacob) are not the true people of God.

Here Paul distinguishes between the natural seed and the spiritual seed of Abraham.

Romans 2:28,29 “For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly...But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly.”

**9:7 “Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, in Isaac shall thy seed be called.”** Natural descent from Abraham does not secure the promised inheritance. The seed, or natural descendants of Abraham, are not all true spiritual children. But, in Galatians 3:7 we see “They which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.”

Israelites cannot conclude that because they are Abraham’s natural descendants, that they are all the children in whom the promised inheritance will be fulfilled. “but in Isaac shall thy seed be called.” (Romans 9:7b and Genesis 21:12).

God chose Isaac as the son through whom the line of Christ and the covenant promises to Abraham would come. “But my covenant will I establish with Isaac.” (Genesis 17:21).

This has nothing to do with God choosing Isaac to be saved and Ishmael to be damned, because in Genesis 21:13 God assured Abraham that Ishmael would have a future because he too was Abraham’s offspring. “And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed.” (21:13)

**9:8 “That is they which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.”**

a) The children of God are not those who descend from Abraham’s loins, nor those who are circumcised as Abraham was (children of the flesh). This opposed the popular Jewish thinking that being an Israelite entitled them to the covenant blessings and to being children of God.

b) Who are the children of the promise? Galatians 4:22-31 is a parallel passage:

“And if ye be Christ’s, then are ye Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.”

(Gal. 3:29); “Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.” (Galatians 4:28).

Believers are the children of the promise in the same sense as Isaac was. The main idea is that the birth of Isaac was supernatural (when Sarah was age 90, humanly impossible, promised 10 years earlier), so believers in Christ are the children of God by virtue of a supernatural, spiritual birth (John 3:6-8), and heirs of the promise made to Abraham.

Hence Isaac was born because of a promise, and was also heir of the promised blessings.

“But he (Ishmael) who was of the bondwoman (Hagar) was born after the flesh (Abraham’s will): but he (Isaac) of the freewoman (Sarah) was by promise (v.23).

Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants: the one from the mount Sinai (Mosaic covenant of Law), which gendereth to bondage (of the Law, 10 Commandments), which is Agar (v.24).

But Jerusalem which is above (New Covenant of Christ by faith from heaven – Rev.21:2) is free, which is the mother of us all (v.26).

Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are children of promise (v.28).

So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.” (v.31). (Galatians 4:23-31).

**9:9 “For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son.”**

This is the promise made to Abraham in Genesis 18:10,14 and 21:1,2.

“At the time appointed I will return unto thee, according to the time of life, and Sarah shall have a son.” (Genesis 18:14). This promise was fulfilled one year later in Genesis 21:1,2: “And the LORD visited Sarah as he had said and the LORD did unto Sarah as he had spoken. And Sarah conceived, and bare Abraham a son in his old age, at the set time of which God had spoken to him.”

Meaning: God here assured Abraham that the promise would come through Isaac, not Ishmael.

“At this time” means “at the exact time promised, the prediction will be fulfilled.”

Note: God comes or visits whenever He especially manifests His presence or power in answering prayer. Luke 1:68; 19:44; Ezekiel 38:8; 1 Peter 2:12; John 14:23.

**9:10** “And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac;

**9:11** (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)

**9:12** It was said unto her, the elder shall serve the younger.

**9:13** As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.”

**Calvinist argument 1:** Calvinists claim that this passage teaches that God chooses (elects) both to

1) national privileges of Isaac and Jacob to be in the line of promise (we agree), as well as to

2) the personal salvation of individuals to eternal life, such as Isaac and Jacob and the personal damnation to hell of individuals such as Ishmael, Esau and others (we strongly disagree).

**Answer:** Paul is only explaining the basis of Israel's national election to be in the line of God's promises to Abraham. This passage is to be taken in a national sense, not a personal sense because:

i) v.4-6 explain nine national blessings of Israel. In spite of these blessings, Israel failed by rejecting and crucifying Christ. Does this mean that God's Word had failed? (taken none effect v.6)? No.

ii) The whole context of Romans 9,10,11 refers to Israel's past choice as the nation of Abraham's blessings (9), present rejection of Christ (10), and future restoration as the nation of God in the millennium (11).

iii) “The elder (Esau) shall serve the younger (Jacob).” Romans 9:12. Personally Jacob never did exercise any power over Esau, nor was Esau ever subject to (or serve) Jacob. Jacob was subject to Esau and was greatly afraid of him. (Genesis 32:8; 33:3). But nationally this was true.

iv) Jacob personally acknowledged Esau to be his lord (“Let my lord pass over before his servant” Genesis 33:14), and himself to be his servant (“Thy servant Jacob” Genesis 32:4; “The children which God hath graciously given thy servant.” Genesis 33:5).

v) Neither Esau, Jacob or their descendants are given here as examples of personal damnation from eternity, because many, if not most of Jacob's descendants were wicked and rejected by God. Some descendants of Esau were saved.

vi) The nation of Esau (Edom) did serve and was inferior to the nation of Jacob (Israel) as seen by their future history. The nation of Edom was subject to Israel under David. Edom was finally subjected under the Maccabees. Edom's history was outside the privileges and spiritual blessings of Israel.

vii) “The purpose of God according to election might stand,...it was said unto her “The elder shall serve the younger.” v.11,12. This clearly refers to election to service of Esau's nation to Jacob's nation. The purpose of God's election was for Esau's descendants to serve Jacob's descendants.

viii) The context of Romans 9:12 “The elder shall serve the younger” is from God's prophecy to Rebekah in Genesis 25:23 where He said “Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger.” This declaration refers not to Esau and Jacob personally, but to their posterity, their descendants as 2 nations.

Notice that **a)** God says nothing about the salvation of Jacob or Esau, but only that “one people shall be stronger;...and the elder shall serve the younger.” Genesis 25:23 shows that Romans 9:12 refers to the national posterity of Esau (Edomites) and not to Esau as an individual. The national descendants of Esau would be subject to the descendants of Jacob. Jacob was to have the priority, the promised land the promises and the honour of being God's chosen people.

**b)** God here refers to the babies as “two nations.”

**ix)** Romans 9:13 “Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.”

Two problems need to be resolved about this verse:

**a)** These words are not referring to God loving and saving Jacob personally, and hating and damning Esau personally, but refer to each of their nations. God did not say this before they were born.

God hated Esau's descendants because of their idolatry, continued wickedness and persecution of Israel. (See Obadiah). These words are quoted from Malachi 1:2,3 which were spoken 1400 years after their birth. They refer to God loving the nation Israel, and loving less the nation of Edom: “I have loved you, saith the LORD. Yet ye say, Wherein hast thou loved us? Was not Esau Jacob's brother? Saith the LORD: yet I loved Jacob, and I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste...”

**b)** The word “hate” means “to love less, to regard and treat with less favour.”

It was common among Hebrews to use the terms “love” and “hate” in a comparative sense where “love” implied strong positive attachment, and “hate” meant not positive hatred, but merely less love, or withholding affection. Examples of this are:

~Genesis 29:33 “Leah said, Because the LORD hath heard that I was hated (by Jacob)...”

~Proverbs 13:24 “He that spareth his rod hateth his son; but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes”

~Matthew 6:24 “No man can serve two masters, for either he will hate the one and love the other...”

~Luke 14:26 “If any man come to me, and hate not his father and mother, and wife, children, brethren, sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.”

~John 12:25 “He that loveth his life shall lose it; he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.”

**Conclusion:**

a) Paul and Malachi are not discussing the persons of Jacob or Esau, but their national descendants.

b) God's love to Jacob, or God's hatred to Esau did not determine their eternal destiny to heaven or hell

c) There is no Biblical or rational basis for the foolish Calvinist idea of unconditional election.

d) God does not hate sinners. God loves sinners as John 3:16 makes clear. The statement concerns national election to service, not individual election to salvation.

**Calvinist argument 2:** Calvinists claim that because Romans 9:11 says that God's election of Jacob and Esau took place before their birth and apart from their works, then these two ideas prove that God unconditionally and personally elects some to salvation and others to damnation, before their birth.

**Answer 2:** This Calvinist argument can be simply resolved by remembering that this entire passage discusses God's national election of Isaac and Jacob to inherit the promises and blessings made to Abraham. It does not mention individual election to salvation anywhere in the passage. To think so is adding to scripture and is the sin of presumption. God's election of Israel was not based on a) natural descent (9:6-10) or b) human merit (9:11-13). All the passage states is that God had a separate plan for Isaac, Ishmael, Jacob and Esau. In eternity past God chose each to serve God in a certain way and to fulfil God's plan for their lives. Their salvation or damnation is not in the text. So God has a different plan for each believer's life ever since. God has a different task for Paul, Peter, John, you and me. The purpose of God according to election was for life service and not for eternal salvation. Notice that in each case God chose the second born child to inherit the promises to Abraham, and bypassed the eldest son. This brings us to define the Biblical doctrine of Election.

**ELECTION** (Greek: ekloge (1589) = to choose, select).

**Definition:** Election is a Divine choice, where God (for reasons known only to Himself), in the blessing of mankind, sets aside the firsts, and chooses the seconds. ("For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth), It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger." Romans 9:11,12.

**Question:** What is the purpose of God according to election? (v.11).

**Answer: Service:** "The elder shall serve the younger." (v.12).

The firstborn serves the younger. The greater shall serve the lesser. God sets to one side the elder or the first, and chooses the younger or the second through whom the blessing would come.

**Question:** What Biblical examples do we find of God setting aside the first and choosing the second?

- i) Ishmael (Abraham's firstborn) was set aside, and Isaac (Abraham's secondborn) was chosen.
- ii) Esau (Isaac's firstborn) was set aside, and Jacob (Isaac's second born) was chosen.
- iii) Reuben (Jacob's firstborn) was set aside, and Judah (Jacob's fourth born) was chosen for the line of Christ to continue through. (1 Chronicles 5:1,2).
- iv) Manasseh (Joseph's firstborn) was set aside, and Ephraim (Joseph's secondborn) was chosen by Jacob and God for the promised blessing. "his younger brother shall be greater than he,... and he set Ephraim before Manasseh.." Genesis 48:17-20.
- v) Saul (Israel's first king) was set aside, and David (Israel's second king) was chosen by God for the line of Christ, Kings and blessing to continue through. (1 Samuel 15:23,28; 2 Samuel 7:1-17).
- vi) Eliab (Jesse's first born) was set aside, and David (Jesse's last born, or eighth) was chosen to be king of Israel. (1 Samuel 16:1-13).
- vii) Adam (the first man) was set aside, and Jesus Christ (the second man) was chosen to be the head of the human race. (1 Corinthians 15:47).
- viii) The first heaven and earth will be burned and set aside, and the second heaven and earth will be created to last forever. (Revelation 21:1,2).
- ix) Our first corruptible body will be set aside, & replaced by an immortal resurrection body. 1 Cor. 15:35

x) The Mosaic Covenant was set aside, and the New Covenant of Christ was chosen to replace it.

"For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second." Heb. 7:6,7,13.

xi) The Ten Commandments of Moses have been set aside (Eph. 2:15; 2 Cor. 3:7, 11; Heb. 8:13-9:4; Gal. 4:24, 25), and the New Testament Law of Christ was chosen to replace it. (Romans 8:2).

xii) The Sabbath (the Mosaic day of worship) was set aside, and Sunday (the N.T. day of worship) was chosen to replace it. (1 Cor. 16:1,2; Acts 20:7).

xiii) The OT offerings were set aside. Christ's perfect offering on the cross was chosen to replace them.

Election is not God choosing some to be saved and others to be damned. To believe this would limit the work of Christ on the cross, and would label God as a respecter of persons. **9:14** "What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid." What do we conclude?

**Question: Does God choosing Isaac and Jacob, whilst not choosing Ishmael and Esau to inherit the promises, privileges and blessings show God to be unjust or unrighteous?**

**Answer:** By no means, because, whatever God does is right. He may dispense His blessings to whoever He chooses, for whatever reasons He chooses. We don't know all the facts as God does, so we are in no position to charge God with unrighteousness (injustice) or to tell Him what to do. Each of us must best use our talents to honour God and further His kingdom. God has given every one of us unique and exciting opportunities to serve Him. We should not charge God with unrighteousness because God may have given someone else a different or apparently better ministry, talents or position.

**Calvinist argument 3:**

**9:15** "For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion." Calvinists here cannot resist the temptation to read personal salvation into another verse teaching national election to earthly privileges. Calvinists jump to the conclusion that mercy and compassion are limited to personal salvation. They read this verse as "I will save whom I will (the elect) and I will damn whom I will (the non-elect)." God says no such nonsense.

**Question: On whom will God have mercy?** Only the elect? No.

**Answer:** Romans 11:32 tells who are the objects of God's mercy.

"For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon ALL".

How many people are the objects and beneficiaries of God's mercy? The text clearly says that God has mercy upon ALL people. God not only has mercy on a few, but His mercy is bestowed on all men.

**Question:** What is the significance of Exodus 33:19 from which Romans 9:15 is quoted?

**Answer:** As God showed His mercy to Moses by making all His goodness pass before him, as well as proclaiming the name of YHWH before him, so God made it clear that no act of grace or mercy was merited by man. Mercy comes from God because God is essentially good, gracious, and merciful. It is God's will and pleasure to bless man and to be merciful to him. God will bestow mercy on all men in whatever way He sees fit. This verse does not say that God will only have mercy on a predetermined number of people. It states that it is God who shows mercy and grace. It is God-given, not man-given.

#### **Calvinist argument 4:**

**9:16** "So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy." Calvinists again introduce personal salvation into a context discussing God's election of individuals into the national privileges of promises to Abraham.

**Answer:** All this verse teaches is that God is the original cause of showing mercy to us in allocating our role of service to Christ in this life. "So then" links this back to v.15. The making or continuing of any people as the people of God is determined by the mercy of God, and not by the will or efforts of men.

#### **Calvinist argument 5:**

**9:17** "For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth."

**9:18** "Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth." Calvinists make two claims to support their position here:

a) God raised up (or called into existence) Pharaoh to declare God's name through all the earth, all along intending to damn him to hell as non-elect. They claim he was unconditionally elected to hell.v17 b) God hardened Pharaoh from the beginning as part of God's predestined plan to use him, then send him to hell as non-elect. (v.18).

**Answer: a) 9:17 Question: What does "raised up" mean?** Does it mean:

~ I have called Pharaoh into existence, and raised up Pharaoh as King? or  
~ To preserve alive, to raise Pharaoh from sickness of boils, to cause Pharaoh to continue at his post?

This second idea is correct because Hiphil verbs mean the continuance of a thing.

Hence, Hiphil of "to live" means to "preserve alive." (Genesis 6:19,20; 19:19).

Romans 9:17 is quoted from Exodus 9:16 "for this cause have I raised thee up, for to shew in thee my power." "Raised thee up" means "I have sustained or supported thee." That is, I have kept thee from death, I have strengthened Pharaoh by healing his boils which were "upon all the Egyptians" (Ex. 9:11-16). I have restored you to health by removing your boils, and by postponing your destruction to a later day, so that I may demonstrate my power in your final overthrow so that all mankind may learn that I am the righteous Judge of all the earth.

"That I might shew my power in thee" means that God's power (Romans 9:22) was demonstrated to all the earth by the mighty miracles He performed in defeating Pharaoh's military as He freed the Israelites from under Pharaoh's hand. Other nations heard about it and were awed at God's might (Exodus 15:14-16; Joshua 2:10,11; 9:9; 1 Sam. 4:8 (300 years later)). God kept Pharaoh in circumstances which were fitted to develop his true character, and to accomplish some great purposes by his existence and conduct.

**b) Question:** Does God hardening Pharaoh's heart prove unconditional election of Pharaoh to hell? NO

**Answer:** Whom does God harden? Those who purposely harden themselves against God. God showed mercy on Pharaoh even while Pharaoh hardened his heart.

**Question:** Who hardened Pharaoh's heart? Was it Pharaoh himself or God who hardened his heart? BOTH. In Hebrew, of the 20 passages discussing Pharaoh's hardening, exactly 10 ascribe it to Pharaoh himself, and 10 ascribe it to God. Although in the KJV only the word "harden" is used, yet in the Hebrew 3 different words are used. (See "Old Testament Bible History," A.Edersheim, Vol.1, p.59,60).

- i) Exodus 7:3 qashah (7185) = to make hard or insensible.
- ii) Exodus 10:1 kated (3513) = to make heavy, or unimpressionable.
- iii) Exodus 14:4 chazaq (2388) = to make firm, stiff, immovable.

Before the 10 plagues, when Aaron converted the rod to a serpent, Pharaoh hardened his heart himself. (7:13,14). After each of the first 5 plagues (7:22; 8:15, 19, 32; 9:7) Pharaoh hardened his heart himself. After the sixth plague (9:12) for the first time do we read that "the Lord made firm the heart of the Pharaoh." After the seventh plague (9:34), we read that Pharaoh made heavy his heart.

After the eighth plague God hardened his heart (10:1).1 Sam 6:6 Egyptians and Pharaoh hardened their hearts.

#### **Pharaoh hardening himself**

|             |                                |
|-------------|--------------------------------|
| Ex. 7:13    | Firm                           |
| 7:14        | Heavy                          |
| 7:22        | Firm (1 <sup>st</sup> p)       |
| <b>8:15</b> | Heavy (2 <sup>nd</sup> plague) |
| 8:19        | Firm (3 <sup>rd</sup> plague)  |
| <b>8:32</b> | Heavy (4 <sup>th</sup> plague) |
| 9:7         | Heavy (5 <sup>th</sup> plague) |
| <b>9:34</b> | Heavy (7 <sup>th</sup> plague) |
| 9:35        | Firm                           |
| 13:15       | Hard                           |

#### **God hardening Pharaoh**

|                                      |                                           |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------|
| Ex. 4:21                             | (God informed Moses before the            |
| <u>7:3 contest of the outcome</u> ). | <u>Insensible</u>                         |
| 9:12                                 | (6 <sup>th</sup> plague)                  |
| 10:1                                 | (8 <sup>th</sup> plague) Unimpressionable |
| 10:20                                |                                           |
| 10:27                                |                                           |
| 11:10                                |                                           |
| 14:4                                 | Immovable                                 |
| 14:8                                 |                                           |
| 14:17                                |                                           |

God, by declaring His Word and revealing His power, gave Pharaoh opportunity to repent, but instead, Pharaoh resisted and hardened his heart. The fault lay not with God, but with Pharaoh. The same sunlight that melts the ice, also hardens the clay. The outcome depends on what is inside the person. God was not unrighteous in His dealings with Pharaoh because He gave him many opportunities to repent. Pharaoh made a determined choice of evil, from which neither warning nor judgment would turn him away. Thus he hardened his own heart. (Exodus 8:15).

God bestows his mercy and blessings on one part of mankind (OT Jews and NT Gentiles), while He suffers another part (Egyptians of Moses' day and Jews during the Church age) to harden themselves in sin, until God judges them or brings them to repentance. Paul says nothing here about eternal life or hell. He never says or implies that God has created man (or Pharaoh) for the purpose of damnation.

## 108. CALVINISM – Summary and Review

### TOTAL DEPRAVITY

**Q1:** Does man have the free will to receive or reject Jesus Christ as Saviour?

Calvinist TD insists that man does not have a free will to receive Christ, nor do any good at all. Calvinists believe man's will is in bondage to his sinful nature, basing this on the premise that 'man is dead in trespasses and sins.' (Ephesians 2:1).

**Q2:** What is wrong with this Calvinist error that the natural man can only act according to his nature?

- 1) Paul still acknowledged his 'inabilities' after salvation: 'That which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not.' (Romans 7:15). 'For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit ... so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.' (Galatians 5:17). Paul acted contrary to his new nature.
- 2) Unsaved man lost his living spirit, but gained a conscience enabling him not to fully express the evil of his sin nature.
- 3) Depraved man has ability because of conscience, as seen from:
  - a) Romans 2:14 'When the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law ... their conscience also bearing witness ...'
  - b) John 7:17 'If any man will do his will ...' Jesus said that man has free will.
  - c) Many scriptures show that unsaved men have the ability to do good. 'A good man leaveth an inheritance to his children's children.' (Proverbs 13:22). 'Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.' Matthew 7:11; Luke 6:33; I Peter 2:18.

**Key:** The unsaved man sins because he yields to his depraved nature and chooses to sin, not because he is unable to do good.

**Q3:** If man cannot believe, then how can he be held responsible for what he cannot do? He can't be held responsible!

**Key:** Calvinists base their idea that man cannot receive Christ of his own free will on two pillars:

- 1) **John 1:13** 'which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.' This gives the source of the new birth, not the reason why men receive Christ.  
The source of the new birth is:
  - not of blood, not physical generation, inheritance, or natural descent;
  - not of the will of flesh, not reformation or self-effort;
  - not of the will of man, not relatives, preachers, or priests;
  - The source of the new birth is of God, not of man.

**Q4:** Why does God give the new birth to people?

**Answer:** God gives the new birth to 'as many as received him.' John 1:12 .

- 2) **Romans 9:16** 'So then, it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.' Calvinists claim that man does not have the will to receive Christ and salvation.

**Answer:** Man does have the ability to receive Christ, while in a state of depravity.

- If ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine.' (Romans 6:17).
- 'Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.' (John 5:40).
- 'Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.' (Revelation 22:7).

**Key:** The reason men don't receive Christ is because they will not, not because they are unable.

**Q5: Key:** All Calvinists compare TD to a physically dead man or to Lazarus. (John 11:43,44), saying 'A corpse does not call out for help.' 'You hath he quickened who were dead in trespasses and sins.'

**Answer:** It is true that a physically dead man does not call out for help, but spiritually dead people are different, being still biologically active and alive, able to walk, talk and fulfil desires.

- A spiritually dead man can lift up his eyes, see, speak, pray, hear, reason & feel torment. Luke 16:23-28.

- A true analogy of spiritual death, is how the prodigal son who 'was dead, and is alive again; he was lost and is found.' (Luke 15:24).

**Key:** This Calvinist analogy of a corpse not calling out for help breaks down because of responsibility.

**Q6:** Is a dead corpse responsible for anything? NO.

Is a lost sinner responsible for anything? YES.

### Refuting Calvinists' Proof Texts for Total Depravity

1) Someone who 'cannot do something'.

- a. **John 8:43** 'Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because ye cannot hear my word'.

**Question:** To whom does this refer?

**Answer:** Not all mankind, but unbelieving Jews. Why could they not hear Christ's words?

- because they did the lusts of their father the devil. (John 8:44).

- because they did not believe Christ when He told them the truth. (John 45,46).

- because they did not believe that Christ was I AM. (John 8:24).

- b. **John 14:17** 'Even the Spirit of truth: whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him....'

**Question:** What does it mean 'whom the world cannot receive'?

**Answer:** Because 'it seeth him not, nor knows him.' This means that they judge by their physical senses. What they cannot see, hear, taste, or feel makes no impression on them. Because they cannot see the Holy Spirit operating, they don't receive His testimony about Christ.

- c. **Romans 8:8,7** 'Because the carnal mind is enmity against God ... they that are in the flesh cannot please God.' Calvinists say 'enmity against God' is Total Depravity, and 'cannot please God' is Total Inability.

**Answer:** The minding of the things of the flesh (v.5) leads to hatred of God Himself, because He is opposed to it. The supreme regard to the flesh is opposed to God's law, is hostile to God, is utterly irreconcilable with God's law, and can never be made to harmonize with it, just as adultery cannot be chastity; falsehood cannot be truth. The passage says nothing about whether man has the ability to obey God's law or to love God.

2) Someone's '**Inability**' but with a **reason given for it**:

a. **John 6:44** 'No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.' Calvinists say this 'drawing' is Irresistable Grace. Calvinists say 'No man can come to me' is Total Depravity because of the lack of an 'irresistable effectual call' by God the Father.

**Calvinist error:** By misapplying v.44 to Salvation in the Church Age, Calvinists conclude that, if God draws all men, then all men will be saved. Hence they conclude that God only draws the 'elect', those whom He has given to the Son. (John 6:37).

**Answer:** Jesus explains the Father's drawing in v.44 by v.45: 'They shall all be taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh to me.' This is quoted from Isaiah 54:13 discussing restored Israel in the Millennium, not 'elect' in the Church Age.

**Key:** Calvinists don't understand that in John 6:44 it is the Father who draws people to Christ during His 3 year ministry, but in John 12:32 it is Christ who draws all men to Himself after Calvary, along with the Holy Spirit's reprovng work in the Church Age in John 16:7-11.

**John 12:32** 'And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.'

**John 16:7-11** 'When he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.' Hence the Holy Spirit will reprove the world of sin, not just the 'elect.'

**John 1:9** 'That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.'

**Key:** Calvinists' error in John 6:44 is to:

- i) misapply it from Christ's three-year ministry to Israel, to a doctrinal statement on salvation in the Church Age.
- ii) make the Father's drawing irresistible and equate it with Salvation in the Church Age. (Acts 7:51 shows God's Grace is resistable).

b. **John 6:65** 'No man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.' (Same answer as John 6:44 above).

c. **John 12:39-40.** See Isaiah 6:9,10. Calvinists use these verses to claim that some have the inability to believe because God has blinded their eyes by reprobation, proving that God hardens people. 'Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them'. (John 12:39-40).

**Answer:** This prophecy in Isaiah 6:9,10 is mentioned 5 times in the New Testament. (Matthew 13:14,15; Mark 4:52; Luke 8:10; John 12:39-40; Acts 28:25-27).

- i. These passages all refer to 'this people', which is the nation Israel. (Acts 28:26,27; Matthew 13:15).
- ii. Of these 5 NT occurrences, 2 cannot teach reprobation because the people closed their own eyes: 'their eyes they have closed.' (Matthew 13:15; Acts 28:27).
- iii. Israel shutting their eyes took place after they were born, not in eternity past.
- iv. Note the order of events: John 12:37 'they believed not on him', then v.39 'they could not believe.' They would not believe, so God gave them up, and now they could not believe.

**Key:** These passages teach the judicial hardening of a nation, not the sovereign hardening of individuals.

v. As further proof, notice where this prophecy appears:

- in the Gospels, when the Jews rejected Christ and the mystery form of the Kingdom;
- in John's Gospel when the Jews rejected Christ and He finished his public dealings;
- in Acts 28 when the Jews rejected Christ, and God turned to the Gentiles in the Church Age;
- in Isaiah 6 it introduces the Tribulation when the Jews will accept a false Christ.

d. **Romans 3:11** 'There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.'

i. Paul is not teaching the inability of unsaved people to receive Christ, eg:

Unregenerate Cornelius was a 'devout man, and one that feareth God with all his house.' (Acts 10:2).

ii. Paul is not saying that people are unable to seek God. The Bible commands men to seek God (11 times): 'Seek ye the Lord while he may be found ...' (Isaiah 55:6).

The commands to seek God are not in vain:

'I said not unto the seed of Jacob, seek ye me in vain.' (Isaiah 45:19).

iii. Seeking God is different from believing the Gospel, eg: A Jew who seeks God by keeping the Old Testament Law is just as lost as Gentiles who don't seek God.

**Question:** If Total Depravity is not the reason men don't seek God, then what is it?

**Answer:** Pride. Psalm 10:4 'The wicked, through the pride of his countenance will not seek after God.'

e. **I Corinthians 2:14** 'But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.' Calvinists conclude here that faith is given by God, and is not our decision.

**Answer:** Receiving spiritual things and receiving Jesus Christ are two different things.

The natural, unsaved man cannot discern the truth, beauty, wisdom, value and excellence of divine things, because he does not yet have the indwelling Holy Spirit. If he received Christ as his Saviour, he would then have the Holy Spirit, and would then be able to know and discern spiritual things. It doesn't teach that he is unable ever to receive Christ, due to Total Inability or Election to hell.

**Question:** Is a man responsible for what he cannot do?

**Answer:** Yes and No. It depends on why he is unable. For example:

A drugged man is accountable for his actions, only if he wilfully took drugs. A drugged man is not accountable for his actions, if he did not wilfully drug himself.

**Key:** Two kinds of Scriptures overthrow Total Depravity/Inability:

a) Scriptures commanding people to believe:

- 'Look unto me and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth.' (Isaiah 45:22)
- 'Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden.' (Matthew 11:28)
- 'God ... now commandeth all men everywhere to repent.' (Acts 17:30).

**Question:** If Total Inability is true, is God mocking His creation by offering salvation to men, knowing that men could never take it? In Isaiah 45:19 God guarantees His offers are genuine:

'I said not ... seek ye me in vain: I the Lord speak righteousness, I declare things that are right.'

Erasmus said to Luther: 'If it is not in the power of every man to keep what God commands, all God's promises, threats, reproofs, blessings, curses and precepts are useless.'

b) Scriptures implying the possibility that a man can believe:

- 'Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.' (John 5:40).

- 'Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved.' (I Thessalonians 2:16).

These verses show that if we preach to Gentiles, the possibility exists that some might be saved.

**Key:** If there exists the slightest possibility that a man could believe (as seen by 'might') then Total Inability is destroyed, because there are no possibilities in TULIP Calvinism.

## UNCONDITIONAL ELECTION

**Q1:** Does God elect some men to salvation or not? (Key Issue).

**Key Error of Calvinism:** Calvinists confuse election and predestination with salvation.

**Q2:** Does God foreordain all things? Eg: the Fall, all sin, all suffering? Does God foreordain rape, murder, blasphemy, sodomy, incest, bestiality, burning babies, dismembering a concubine, Herod massacring two-year-olds? NO.

**Q3:** Why does God bring evil upon a people?

1) Because of their sins, not because of an arbitrary decree.

2) God didn't decree their sins: 'Which I commanded not nor spake it, neither came it into my mind'. (Jeremiah 19:5).

3) God's holiness would not allow Him to author sin. God would never command a man to repent, then fix it so he couldn't repent, in order to damn him.

**Q4:** Which Scripture calls predestination a Divine decree? NONE.

1) Of God's 7 Decrees, none are eternal, or involve election or predestination. (Isaiah 10:1).

2) To Calvinists' invented decrees, God says, 'Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees.'

**Key 1:** Calvinists' error is to exalt God's sovereignty (arbitrariness) above all His other attributes, such as His holiness and justice.

**Key 2:** Calvinists' error is to confuse God's influence, direction, control and permission with God's election, predestination, foreordination and decrees. God foreknows without foreordaining.

**Key 3:** Calvinists' error is to read 'foreordained' into expressions discussing God's control and influence.

**Q5:** Does God change His mind? YES.

1) God was going to kill Hezekiah, but changed His mind to add 15 years to his life. (Isaiah 38:5).

2) God repented of the evil He planned for Nineveh, because they turned from their evil. (Jonah 3:10)

3) Calvinists contradict their belief that God predestines our lifespan, by using medical advances to lengthen their lifespans. Some men 'shall not live out half their days.' (Psalm 55:23).  
'Why shouldst thou die before thy time?' (Ecclesiastes 7:17).

**Q6:** How could God decree and foreordain burning babies if it never came into His mind? (Jerem.19:5)

**Q7:** Why does sin take place? Because God foreordained it? NO, but because of:

1) Man's depravity

2) God punishes people's sins: 'Behold, I will bring evil upon this place ... because they have forsaken me ...' (Jeremiah 19:3-5).

3) God expressly stated that He didn't decree their sins: 'Which I commanded not nor spake it' Jer19:5

4) God permits it. Permit and decree are different concepts. Our responsibility is to 'resist the devil and he will flee from you.' (James 4:7).

**Q8:** If predestination is a secret decree of God, how is it that Calvinists know so much about it? (Deuteronomy 29:29 'The secret things ...')

**Key:** Ten examples of man's free will in Scripture refute the Calvinist error that man's actions have been foreordained from eternity past:

1) Free will offerings (16 in OT) show that after a person had made all the offerings prescribed by the Mosaic Law, he might out of gratitude to God give something extra: 'Ye shall offer at your own will a male without blemish.' (Leviticus 22:19). The phrase 'at your own will' teaches that he had the free will to give it or not give it.

2) Free will Journey to Jerusalem teaches that a man has free will: 'I make a decree, that all they of the people of Israel ... which are minded of their own free will to go up to Jerusalem, go with thee.' (Ezra 7:13).

3) Adam and Eve had free will: 'of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat'. (Genesis 2:16).

4) The people and governors of Israel 'willingly offered themselves' to defeat Sisera (Judges 5:2,9).

5) David encouraged Solomon to serve God with a 'willing mind.' (I Chronicles 28:9).

6) During Nehemiah's time some people 'willingly offered themselves to dwell at Jerusalem' Neh 11:2

7) NT prayer promises are based on believers' free will: 'If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.' (John 15:7).

8) Paul preached willingly: 'For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.' (I Corinthians 9:17).

9) Salvation is received by taking it of our own free will: 'Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.' (Revelation 22:17).

10) David exercised his free will when he praised God: 'Accept, I beseech thee, the freewill-offerings of my mouth, O Lord ...' (Psalm 119:108).



**Q9:** Does prayer change things?

**A:** YES. Prayer proves that God has not predestined all things:

- 1) Moses' prayer changed God's mind about destroying Israel and Aaron. (Deuteronomy 9:18-29).
- 2) Hezekiah's prayer changed God's mind to lengthen his life by 15 years (II Kings 20:1-6)
- 3) Elijah prayed for no rain, then later for rain. (James 5:17,18).
- 4) A righteous man's effectual, fervent prayer availeth much. (James 5:16).

**Key:** God doesn't foreordain all things because of:

- 1) **Contingency** verses showing the possibility of an event happening. There are many things in Scripture that are not fixed or predestined:
  - a) If Christ's works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented. (Matt. 11:21).
  - b) 'How often would I have gathered thy children together ... and ye would not. (Luke 13:34).
  - c) 'ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.' (John 5:30).
  - d) 'Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved.' (I Thessalonians 2:16).
  - e) Many of God's promises to Israel were conditional. (Deuteronomy 5:33; 6:23).
- 2) **Chance** disproves God's foreordaining things. Does anything happen by chance? According to the Bible, some things do. 'And by chance there came down a certain priest that way..' (Luke 10:31). 'If a bird's nest chance to be before thee in the way ...' (Deuteronomy 22:6). This doesn't mean that God doesn't know what is going to happen, or has no control over His creation, but it does mean that there is no all-encompassing decree of predestination.
- 3) **Common Sense** rejects any foreordained all-encompassing decree. If 'What will be, will be' were true, then nobody could avoid carrying out God's eternal, sovereign, foreordained decree.

**Q10:** Would God be just in electing some and passing by the rest?

**Answer:** Did Jesus recommend the behaviour of the priest and levite who passed by the half-dead man in the Good Samaritan story? (Luke 10:30-34). NO. Jesus commands us to 'go and do thou likewise' (Luke 10:37) as the Good Samaritan helped the man. Does Jesus practise what he preaches? Surely.

**Key:** Calvinists divert their opponents' criticism by pitting Arminianism against Hyper-Calvinism, and then take Calvinism as a mediating position.

**Note:** Romans 9 is the Calvinists' 'haven of reprobation', just as Proverbs is the Calvinists' 'haven of divine foreordination'.

**Q11:** How do we answer these verses which Calvinists use to teach God electing someone to hell?

- 1) **Proverbs 16:4** 'The Lord hath made all things for himself:.. even the wicked for the day of evil.'

**Answer:** This teaches the use God makes of His creation, not the decisions He makes for them.

- Since God does all his pleasure (Isaiah 46:10) and has no pleasure in the death of the wicked (Ezekiel 33:11), then He could not have created a man wicked just to show His power by damning him.

- God has made all men the same in the sense of: 'He fashioneth their hearts alike'. Psalm 33:13-15
- God makes the wicked serve his own glory and purposes. 'Surely, the wrath of man shall praise thee.' (Psalm 76:10).

- 2) **II Thessalonians 5:9** 'God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ.' Calvinists think this teaches that God has appointed some to wrath.

**Answer:**

- a) 'Wrath' = 7 year Tribulation, not hell.
- b) 'Salvation' = deliverance from the 7 year Tribulation by the rapture.
- c) 'Appointed' = God's will for Christians to be raptured, not God's decree to save the 'elect'.
- d) 'The great day of his wrath is come' (Revelation 6:17) is the Tribulation (Revelation 6-19).
- e) The context of I Thessalonians 5:3 is 'sudden destruction cometh upon them'.

- 3) **I Peter 2:8** 'And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient; whereunto also they were appointed'. Calvinists think 'some have been appointed (same word as I Thessalonians 5:9) unto disobedience'.

**Answer:** God appoints to destruction all those who reject Christ, stumbling at the rock of offence. (See Proverbs 31:8 'all such as are appointed to destruction'. The disobedience is defined in the context as unbelief (I Peter 2:7), just as obedience is defined as belief in Romans 10:16 ('they have not all obeyed the Gospel').

- 4) **II Peter 2:12** 'But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption.'

Calvinists think that these 'false prophets' and 'false teachers' (II Peter 2:1) have been foreordained 'to be taken and destroyed' before the foundation of the world.

**Answer:** In both II Peter 2:12 ('perish in their own corruption') and Jude 10 ('as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves') the corruption was their own doing. God never makes a man in a reprobate condition. Men are always reprobate because they've done something to earn it, as the next verse makes clear: 'and shall receive the reward of unrighteousness.' (II Peter 2:13). A reward is something they earn. God 'destroyed them that believe not.' (Jude 5).

- 5) **II Peter 2:17** '... to whom the mist of darkness is reserved forever.'

**Jude 13** '... to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever.'

Calvinists claim these people have been reserved for condemnation by a sovereign, eternal decree.

**Q:** Who is reserved?

**Answer:** False prophets and false teachers who deny the Lord (II Peter 2:1); ungodly (Jude 15); angels that sinned (II Peter 2:4; Jude 6); unjust (II Peter 2:9); wicked (II Peter 2:7), etc.

They were reserved in their lives after they committed wicked actions and because of their sins.

6) **Jude 4** 'For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained (Greek *prographo* – 4270) to this condemnation, ungodly men, ... denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.' Calvinists think these men were ordained of old to condemnation before the foundation of the world by a sovereign, eternal decree.

**Answer:**

**Q1:** When were they ordained?

**Answer:** During Enoch's ministry. 'Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these saying: Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.' (Jude 14,15).

**Q2:** Why were they ordained to condemnation? **Answer:** Because of their ungodly deeds.

**Q3:** How were they ordained? **Answer:** By Enoch.

**Q4:** What does 'ordained' mean? **Answer:** Ordained (4270) = *prographo* (Greek) = to write previously, to announce. They were announced by Enoch, not foreordained by a sovereign, eternal decree from before the foundation of the world.

7) **Isaiah 6:9,10** = Matthew 13:14,15. Calvinists think that some have inability to believe because God has blinded their eyes by reprobation, and hardened their hearts.

**Answer:**

- 'This people' = the nation Israel.
- 'Their eyes they have closed' (Matthew 13:15; Acts 28:27). They deliberately closed their eyes.
- In John 12:37 they did not believe. In John 12:39 they could not believe.
- These 5 passages describe the judicial hardening of a nation not the sovereign hardening of individuals.

8) **Romans 9:13** 'Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.' Calvinists think Jacob was personally elected to salvation, and Esau was personally elected to eternal desolation (hell).

**Answer:**

- The purpose of God according to election (Romans 9:11) concerns service: 'The elder shall serve the younger.' (Romans 9:12). This teaches national preference, not election to salvation.
- Genesis 25:23 'Two nations are in thy womb ... the elder shall serve the younger.'
- Romans 9:13 is quoted from Malachi 1:1-3, written 1400 years later: 'Yet I loved Jacob, and I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste.'  
In Genesis we have a prophetic statement looking forward.  
In Malachi we have a historical statement looking backward.
- Calvin admits that this refers to Jacob's and Esau's posterity (*Institutes*, p 930, III, xxi,7).
- God didn't hate Esau personally in eternity past. God hated him nationally after seeing his sins for 1400 years.
- Jesus loved the rich young ruler who rejected him. (Mark 10:22).

9) **Romans 9:18** 'Pharaoh ... whom he will he hardeneth.'

**Q:** Were Pharaoh and Esau sovereignly hated from eternity? NO, because:

**Answer:**

- God raised up Pharaoh from sickness of boils (Exodus 9:11-16) not into existence.
- Q: **When** does God harden a persons heart? From eternity or after he hardens his own heart? Pharaoh hardened himself first. (Exodus 8:15,32; 9:34) 'Pharaoh hardened his heart.'  
God reinforced Pharaoh's decision by hardening him later.

10) **Romans 9:22** 'God...endured with much longsuffering, the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction.'

**Q:** Does God fit the non-elect to destruction by His foreordaining decrees?

**Answer:** No, because:

- The potter and the clay was a common Old Testament illustration (Isaiah 29:16; 45:9; 64:8; Jeremiah 18:1-6) yet it never referred to anyone's salvation.
- Jeremiah 18:1-10:** Israel = clay; God = Potter; Marring of clay = Israel's disobedience;  
God making clay again = God's change of plans from good to evil discipline of Israel.
- The individual determines what kind of vessel he will be. II Timothy 2:20,21 says, 'If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, ... prepared unto every good work.' Vessels are made empty. God doesn't make anyone honourable or dishonourable.
- Israel as the vessels of wrath, fitted themselves to destruction, because they 'stumbled at that stumblingstone' (Romans 9:32), were 'guilty of the blood of Christ' (Matthew 27:25) and were 'enemies of the Gospel.' (Romans 11:28).
- Key:** All men are 'vessels of wrath' (Eph. 2:3), but God will have mercy on all who receive Christ. (Romans 11:32 'Have mercy on all'; and I Peter 2:10 'but now obtained mercy.').
- Calvinist error in Romans 9 is in reading sovereign personal election and reprobation, into a passage teaching national election of Israel to service, and God disciplining Israel for their sins.
- Conclusion:** When a man is reserved, appointed, ordained or fitted to destruction, it is always because of something evil he did, not by an eternal decree of reprobation.

#### SEVEN KINDS OF UNCONDITIONAL ELECTION 'PROOF' TEXTS

**Key:** The fallacy of Unconditional Election is that they divide mankind into two groups: the 'elect' and the 'reprobate'.

**Answer:**

- God has made all men the same because of Psalm 33:13-15: 'He beholdeth all the sons of men ... he fashioneth their hearts alike'. Hence, there is no such thing as the 'elect' or 'reprobate'.
- There is no such thing as God's one, eternal, sovereign, all encompassing decree.
- Salvation is not limited to the 'elect':
  - John 7:37 'If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.'
  - Acts 10:43 'whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.'
  - Romans 9:33 'whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.'
  - I John 5:1 'Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.'
  - Revelation 22:17 'Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.'

- 1) **God's People – Acts 18:10** 'I have much people in this city.'  
**Q:** Did God have a predetermined number of unsaved people in Corinth waiting to be saved by Irresistible Grace? NO, because:  
a) They were not unsaved elect, because unsaved people are never spoken of as God's people, but as 'children of disobedience.' (Ephesians 2:2).  
b) The 'much people' are defined in v.1-9 as Aquila and Priscilla (v.2); Jews and Greeks (v.4); Silas and Timothy (v.5); Justus (v.7); Crispus (v.8); and many Corinthians who heard, believed and were baptised (v.8).
- 2) **Book of Life – Revelation 13:8 and 17:8**  
**Q:** Are the names of the 'elect' written in the Lamb's Book of Life, and those of the 'non-elect' not written there? 'Whose names are not written in the book of life of the lamb slain from the foundation of the world'. (Revelation 13:8).  
**Answer:** Everybody's name is written in the Book of Life at birth. When they wilfully reject Christ, their names are blotted out of the Book of Life. (Revelation 3:5; 22:19).
- 3) **God's Sheep – John 10:14-16,26**  
**Q:** Are God's sheep the 'elect' before they are born?  
**Answer:**  
a) If the elect are sheep before they believe, they already have eternal life, were never goats and contradicts the truth that all are born 'dead in trespasses and sins.' (Ephesians 2:1).  
b) **Q: Who are the sheep?** **Answer:** Israel according to Jesus (Matthew 10:6; 15:24); Micaiah (I Kings 22:17); David (Psalm 79:13; 95:7); Jeremiah (Jeremiah 23:1; 50:6,17); and Ezekiel. 'Go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.' (Matthew 10:6).  
c) When Christ came, his sheep like Simeon, Anna, Zacharias, Elizabeth, the Shepherds, and the Disciples, knew Him, followed Him, and received eternal life.
- 4) **Given to Salvation.**  
**Q:** Does the Father give the 'elect' to the Son?  
**John 6:37** 'All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh ...'  
**John 6:39** 'Of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing ...'  
**John 17:2** 'He should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.'  
**John 17:6** 'Thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.' (v. 9,11,12,24).  
Calvinists presume that only those whom the Father gives to Christ can come to Him.  
**Answer:** This was not a sovereign, eternal decree for all believers, because:  
a) One of those given to Christ was a devil (John 6:70) who was lost (John 17:12).  
b) John 6:37,45 The Father gave to Christ those who believe (v.45).  
'Every man that hath heard and learned of the Father, cometh to me'.  
c) John 17:6. Christ manifested His name unto the 'men which thou gavest me'.  
- Christ hasn't manifested His name to anyone since then.  
- Those given to Christ were men. Are all women lost? NO.  
- Have all Christians kept God's Word? NO. 'They have kept thy word.' (John 17:6).  
d) John 17:8,14. Christ personally gave them the Father's Words. We have the Bible, but Christ didn't personally give them to us.  
e) **Conclusion:** Those the Father gave to the Son during His earthly ministry were the little flock of Jewish disciples, known as apostles, and his sheep. (John 10:27,29).
- 5) **Ordained to Salvation**  
**Acts 13:48** 'And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.'  
Calvinists think this teaches U,L,I and that every saved person was 'ordained to eternal life' before the foundation of the world by a sovereign, eternal decree.  
**Answer:**  
a) 'Ordained' (Greek: *tetagmenoi*, a form of *tasso*<sup>5021</sup>) means that the Gentiles were THEN disposed, and determined to embrace eternal life, by the Holy Spirit influencing their hearts. It does not refer to an eternal decree of election, but that they then experienced and submitted to the drawing power of the Holy Spirit to salvation. (See Barnes, Adam Clarke, A T Robertson, Ralph Earle, and many others).  
b) The Greek root word is *tasso* (appoint, incline, dispose), not proorizo (predestine, decree beforehand), not protasso (appoint before) and not diatasso (a strengthened form of *tasso*).  
c) The word 'ordain' is never used in Scripture to describe an unconditional, sovereign, eternal decree, eg: Judas was 'ordained' with the other 11 disciples (Mark 3:14), yet he turned out to be a devil (John 6:70).  
d) Acts 13:48 says 'ordained', not 'foreordained'.
- 6) **Chosen to Salvation – Matthew 20:16 and 22:14**  
Calvinists after 'chosen', add 'to salvation'. If Calvinists see 'chosen' or 'choose', they always read it as unconditionally, sovereignly, eternally elected to salvation.
- **i) Matthew 22:14** 'For many be called, but few chosen.'  
**Q:** Doesn't this say that God only chooses a few to be saved, that they experience irresistible grace, and that everyone gets a general call, but only a few get an effectual call?  
**Answer:**  
a) NO. It teaches that the great mass of people in the time of Christ who had been called, had rejected the mercy of God in Christ, so God didn't choose them. A garment had been provided for this man by the King, but he had refused or neglected to wear it.  
This man's lack of a wedding garment was inexcusable, as proven by his speechlessness.  
b) This pictures unlimited atonement because:  
- the custom was for the host to provide wedding garments.  
- his speechlessness and lack of excuse prove his guilt and personal responsibility, not the King's fault.  
b) The ones chosen were 'bid to the marriage' (Matthew 22:9), not fore-ordained to go. They were chosen because they accepted the invitation.
  - **ii) Matthew 20:16** The parable of the householder hiring vineyard labourers relates to service and rewards, not election to salvation. Christ calls many to service, but few are chosen to big ministries. Christ calls some to be more useful than others, without regard to their length of service. Christ will reward them accordingly. Matthew 20:16 concerns labourers, but salvation is a gift (Romans 6:23; Ephesians 2:8).

- **iii) John 15:16** 'Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit ..' Christ chooses his disciples to bear fruit, not to be saved. Calvinists' error here is seen from John 6:70, 'Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil', and Mark 3:13-14 'He ordained twelve, that they should be with him.' By reading Unconditional Election into these verses, we end up with a sovereignly elected, irresistably called, ordained devil.
  - **iv) Acts 9:15** 'He (Paul) is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles.'  
**Acts 22:14** 'The God of our Fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldst know His will, and see that Just One, and hear the voice of his mouth.'  
Paul was not chosen to salvation, but he was chosen - to bear the Lord's name (Acts 9:15);
    - to know God's will (Acts 22:14);
    - to see Christ and hear his voice (Acts 22:14);
    - to be a minister and a witness (Acts 26:16);
    - to open the Gentiles' eyes and turn them to God (Acts 26:18). Calvinists miss the context.
  - **v) Galatians 1:15,16** 'God who separated me from my mother's womb.'  
a) Un.El. is supposed to be from eternity, but these verses say it is from their mother's womb.  
c) Paul was separated on another occasion (Acts 13:2).
  - **vi) I Peter 2:9** 'But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you ...'  
a) It is not said when or why this choosing took place.  
b) This fourfold description of NT church is quoted from God's fourfold description of OT Israel. Exodus 19:6 'Ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, an holy nation...to the children of Israel.'  
Deut. 14:2 'the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations.'  
**Key:** Calvinists have completely missed and overlooked the fact that as the nation of Israel was corporately elected as a body, so also was the church corporately elected as a body. (Ephesians 1:22,23; Colossians 1:18). The election of the church is a corporate matter rather than an individual thing. It is not that individuals are in the church because they are elect.  
It is rather that individuals are elect because they are in the church.  
Individuals are not the subject here, but the church, as a collective body is.  
**Key:** As God did not choose each individual Jew to be one of the elect, so God does not choose each individual Christian to be one of the elect – Christians are born into it. No unsaved man was ever elected to anything.  
**Key:** The basic error of Calvinism is to think election is to salvation.
  - **vii) Psalm 65:4** 'Blessed is the man whom thou chooseth ... that he may dwell in thy courts ... of thy house, even of thy holy temple.'  
a) This discusses God's courts, God's house, God's temple, not salvation.  
b) The time of choosing and NT salvation are not discussed.
  - **viii) James 2:5** 'Hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, heirs of the kingdom..' **Answer:** Is every welfare recipient 'elect' and 'chosen to salvation'? It means that the poor are more receptive to the gospel than the rich.
  - **ix) II Thessalonians 2:13** 'God hath from the beginning (Gk: *ap arche*) chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth.'  
a) 'from the beginning' (*ap arche* as in Acts 26:4) is different from 'from eternity' (*ap aionos* as in Acts 15:18) as God did not choose the Thessalonians from eternity past, but from the beginning of when Paul left Philippi. 'Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia ...' (Philippians 4:15,16). Paul defines 'the beginning of the gospel' as when he left Philippi to begin his departure from the province of Macedonia. God chose that the Thessalonians would hear the gospel from the beginning of Paul's departure from Philippi (II Thessalonians 2:13), when Christ gave Paul the Macedonian call in Acts 16:10 and 17:1-4 in 53 AD, and not by a sovereign decree in eternity past.  
b) The conditions of God saving the Thessalonians are 'sanctification of the Spirit (God's part) and belief/obedience of the truth of Christ (man's part).'
  - **x) I Peter 1:2** is a similar passage: 'Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ.'  
c) Calvinists err saying that 'from the beginning' means 'from before the beginning of the world'  
d) In Calvinism the 'elect' are all put in Christ in eternity past, but in the Bible no-one is put in Christ until he is saved. 'Salute Andronicus & Junia...who also were in Christ before me.' Rom 16:7
  - **xi) Ephesians 1:4.** Calvinists use Ephesians 1:4 and II Thessalonians 2:13 to teach Unconditional Election to salvation in eternity past. 'According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.' (Ephesians 1:4).  
a) We are chosen not to be saved, but to be holy and without blame.  
b) **Key:** God chose that whoever was in Christ would be 'blessed with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places' (v.3) and be 'holy and without blame before him in love.'
  - **xii) II Timothy 1:9** 'Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.'
- Q:** When did God give us saving grace? In eternity past (Calvinism) or when we got 'in Christ' (Bible)?  
**Answer:** Grace was not physically given to any man 'before the world began', because there were no men around to give it to. Grace was 'given to us in Christ Jesus'.
- Key:** God deposited grace in Christ before the world began, but it was only given to us when we got 'in Christ'.

- **xiii) Jeremiah 31:3** 'Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee'. The error of the 'eternal union' of the 'elect' with Christ is based on uniting the phrases 'in him' (Ephesians 1:4) and 'in Christ Jesus' (II Timothy 1:9) with 'before the foundation of the world' (Ephesians 1:4) and 'before the world began' (II Timothy 1:9) to teach that the 'elect' were in Christ before the world began.

**Answer:**

- a) The problem Calvinists create for themselves is that, before 'the elect' got 'in Adam' (I Cor. 15:22) they already had a relationship with Christ. This means that according to Calvinism:
  - The Fall didn't affect the elect;
  - One can be 'dead in sin' and yet be 'in Christ' at the same time;
  - No elect have ever been in danger of going to hell;
  - Before God, His people are justified from eternity past.
- b) This nonsense is a complete overthrow of the gospel, meaning that the elect were never lost.  
**Key:** The Fall affected all men equally: 'death passed upon all men'. (Romans 5:12).
- c) No-one was ever 'in Christ' until his salvation. 'Salute Andronicus and Junia, ... who were in Christ before me'. (Romans 16:7).
- d) If the elect were always children of God, they could never have been 'children of the devil' or 'children of wrath'. (Ephesians 2:3).

**Conclusion:** In Calvinism, the elect are all put in Christ at the same time, in eternity past. In the Bible, no-one is put in Christ until he is saved.

- **xiv) I Timothy 5:21** 'I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels.'

  - a) 'Elect' cannot refer to holy angels, because they never fell to be elected back to holiness.'
  - b) God chose the angels that didn't fall. Hence they are called or appraised as 'elect angels.'

**Question: How is Jesus Christ Elect when He never sinned?**

**Answer:** When 'elect' is applied to Christ, it shows His value and worth, not His selection to salvation.

Isaiah 42:1 'Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect ...' (Matthew 12:18).

I Peter 2:6 'Behold I lay in Sion a chief Corner stone, elect, precious.' (Isaiah 28:16).

**ISRAEL is still called 'ELECT' in the New Testament.**

1. **Matthew 24:22,24,31** 'but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.' (v.22). 'if it were possible they shall deceive the very elect'. (v.24). 'they shall gather his elect from the four winds'. (v.31). Those addressed are not 'elect sinners' waiting to be saved by Irresistible Grace, but Jewish saints in the future 7 year Tribulation. (v.21,29).
2. **II Timothy 2:10** 'I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus ...' This refers to elect Israelites, not unsaved 'elected' Gentiles. If the elect were elected before the foundation of the world, they

could never miss salvation, whether Paul preached it or not. To believe that Paul strove, laboured, endured beatings, stonings, jail, shipwreck, pain, hunger and cold, for the elect who would certainly be saved, is nonsense.

3. **Luke 18:7,8** 'Shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them.'  
**Q:** Who are these elect? When, why, and how they were elected is not said. The elect are likely to be suffering saints in the Tribulation, crying out to God for revenge. (Revelation 6:9,10). This verse concerns prayer (Luke 18:1), not a sovereign, eternal decree.
4. **Romans 9:11,12** 'that the purpose of God according to election might stand, ... it was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. The purpose of God according to election is service, not salvation or reprobation. It concerns the election of the Messianic line to come through Abraham, Isaac and Jacob to Jesus Christ.
5. **Romans 11:28** 'As touching the election, they are beloved'. This refers to the corporate election of the whole nation Israel, and has nothing to do with salvation.
6. **Romans 11:5,7** 'at this present time there is a remnant according to the election of grace. (v.5). Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded'. (v.7). Calvinists see Unconditional Election to salvation here because these verses concern only a portion of Israel.  
**Answer:** The 'remnant according to the election of grace' (v.5) refers to the 7000 men reserved to God who had not bowed the knee to the image of Baal (v.4).  
**Question:** Why were these 7000 men reserved to God?  
**Answer:** Because they had not bowed to Baal, not because of a decree of Unconditional Election. Only the remnant of Israel who sought righteousness by faith participated in the 'election of grace'.

**The CHURCH is called 'ELECT' nine (9) times in the New Testament.**

These have nothing to do with any decree of God:

1. **I Peter 5:13** 'The church that is at Babylon, elected together with you saluteth you'.  
**Answer:** The church at Babylon as a body is elected. No individual is said to be elected.  
Nothing is said about when, how or why anyone was elected.
2. **I Thessalonians 1:4** 'Knowing brethren beloved, your election of God.'  
**Answer:** No mention of when, why, or how of this election; no eternal decree. It refers to how the Thessalonians received the Gospel by God electing Paul to go to Macedonia. (Acts 16:9,10).
3. **II Peter 1:10** 'Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall'.  
**Key:** This verse destroys TULIP Calvinism because calling comes first, then election after. Pink panicked at this verse because all his life he taught the opposite, that election comes first, and calling later.  
**Question:** How could anyone 'give diligence' to make sure a supposedly irresistible, sovereign, eternal decree that was already sure to happen?  
**Key:** This calling and election relate to service, not to salvation.

4. The word 'elect' is applied to Christians 6 times. None say that this election is a decree of God; none say it is eternal; none say it is unconditional, and none say it results in salvation. The word 'elect' here is just a title for NT Christians, showing our value, worth, appraisal and assessment. This is the same use of 'elect' as applied to Jesus Christ and angels:

**Romans 8:33** 'Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect?'

**Colossians 3:12** 'Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved....'

**Titus 1:1** 'Paul, a servant of God ... according to the faith of God's elect'.

**1 Peter 1:2** 'Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through ...'.

**1 John 1** 'The elder unto the elect lady, and her children'.

**1 John 13** 'The children of thy elect sister greet thee'.

**Key:** Whenever Calvinists see 'elect', they read into the text their doctrine of an eternal, sovereign, irresistible, unconditional election to salvation. The above verses show that no-one is elect until they are saved. Believers are described as elect, holy, justified, beloved and having faith. None of those are true of believers from eternity past.

**Question:** How do Calvinists build a case for eternal, unconditional election?

**Answer:** They read it into every verse where election is found, and follow these verses:

- 1 Peter 1:2 since salvation is mentioned with election, and change foreknowledge to fore-ordination.
- Romans 8:29,30 They link predestination here with
- Ephesians 1:4,5 containing 'predestinate', 'chosen' and 'before the foundation of the world'.
- 1 Thessalonians 2:13 'God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation', while not quoting the rest of the verse showing two parts to salvation.
- Acts 13:48 'as many as were ordained to eternal life believed', without checking the Greek meaning of 'ordained', or when this ordaining took place.
- Romans 9,10,11 to teach election to hell.

**Question: Predestination** What does the Bible say we are predestined to?

- Son-placing in heaven (Ephesians 1:5), 'Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children' (Greek: *huiothesia* = son-placing).
- Praise His glory (Ephesians 1:11,12).
- Conformed to the image of His Son in heaven (Romans 8:29,30).

**Key:** a) Predestination is never called a decree of God or takes place before the foundation of the world.

b) No-one is said to be predestined to salvation or to hell.

**Question:** Do non-elect dead infants go to hell?

**False Conclusions of Unconditional Election:**

- God has predestined the 'non-elect' to hell before the foundation of the world.
- Fatalism:** Nothing can happen in time which will make the slightest difference.
- Shaky Assurance of Salvation** in mysterious eternal decree of election, instead of in Bible promises
- Missions and evangelism:** If the number of elect and reprobate are fixed, what difference could it make to send or to withhold missionaries, or to go soul winning?
- Confusing Terminology.**
- Making** all preaching vain, destroys holiness, destroys religious comfort, destroys zeal for good works, destroys Christian revelation by fatal contradictions.

**Question:** Did God intend to save all men, or did He not?

## LIMITED ATONEMENT

### Calvinists' 5 Arguments for Limited Atonement

- A universal atonement demands a universal salvation.
- Double jeopardy – if God laid all man's sins on Christ, the lost would be punished twice for their sins: once on Christ, and a second time in hell.
- Universal atonement doesn't actually save anyone.
- Adam's sin brought condemnation to all. Christ's righteousness only secured the salvation of those He died for.
- The sin of unbelief.

**Answer to each:** These false conclusions are based on the false premise that Christ's

**Atonement** and its **Application** are the same thing.

Calvinists confuse the **Provision of a Saviour** with our Applying of Salvation.

Calvinists say that the 'elect' were actually saved, redeemed, reconciled and justified at the instant of the Atonement.

**Question:** Then how is it that the 'elect' were born 'dead in trespasses and sins'?

(Ephesians 2:1), and were by nature 'children of wrath'? (Eph. 2:1). If Calvinists object to this conclusion, the only alternative is unlimited atonement.

### Old Testament Examples proving the Atonement and its Application are Different:

- The blood of the **Passover Lamb** became efficacious only after it was applied to the doorposts as God instructed (Exodus 12:6-22).

**Key 1:** The death of the lamb saved no-one. The blood had to be applied. Christ's death is complete but conditional. Universal provision (Hebrews 2:9) and individual application (John 1:12; Romans 10:13) of Christ's atonement are two different things.

**Key 2:** The answer to Calvinists' 5 arguments for Limited Atonement is that they fail to distinguish between Christ's universal provision and the need for individual application of the atonement.

**Key 3:** Calvinist argument (1) about a universal atonement demanding a universal salvation disappears when we see that the 'elect' did not exist when Christ died on the cross.

**Q:** How can the elect be saved before they were born?

- Those who were **snake bitten** in the wilderness had to leave their tent and deliberately look at the brass serpent on a pole to be healed. Setting up the brass serpent saved no-one. They had to individually apply its healing power by looking. Those who didn't apply it, died (Numbers 21:5-9). Jesus endorsed this need for individual application in John 3:14,15.

**Calvinist Argument 3 Refuted:** If nobody after 33 AD availed themselves of Christ's universal atonement, Christ's atonement was effectual for Old Testament saints: 'And for this cause he is the mediator of the New Testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.' (Hebrews 9:15).

**Calvinist Argument 4 Refuted:** Although Adam's sin was universal and unrefuseable, Romans 5:17 states that Christ's gift must be received: 'they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life ...'

**Key:** A major blunder of Calvinists is to inconsistently redefine Many, All men and All in Romans 5:15,18 and Isaiah 53:6.

- 1) **Romans 5:15** 'For if through the offence of one MANY be dead (Calvinists agree 'many' = all), much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace ... hath abounded unto MANY'. Calvinists say that the first 'many' = 'all', but the second 'many' = 'not all' but only the 'elect'.
- 2) **Romans 5:18** 'Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon ALL MEN to condemnation (Calvinists agree that 'all men' = all); even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon ALL MEN unto justification of life'. Calvinists contradict themselves, saying that the first 'all men' = 'all', but the second 'all men' = 'not all' but 'elect'. Note the phrase 'even so'.
- 3) **Isaiah 53:6** 'All we like sheep have gone astray (Calvinists agree that 'all' = 'all'); we have turned every one to his own way (Calvinists agree 'everyone' = 'all'); and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all'. (Calvinists want this 'all' to mean 'not all', but 'the elect'). Calvinists contradict themselves a third time, saying that the first 'all' = 'all', but the last 'all' = 'not all'.

**Conclusion:** The second many, all men and all must be interpreted as the first many, all men and all to prove unlimited atonement in Romans 5:15,18 and Isaiah 53:6.

**Calvinist Argument 5 Refuted:** Why does God demand that men believe, if Christ died for and removed the sin of unbelief as Calvinists claim? 'he that believeth not is condemned already'. John 3:18

### **Christ dying for 'all men', 'all', and 'the world' refute Limited Atonement**

Calvinists redefine 'world' and 'all men' to defend Limited Atonement:

#### **I. CHRIST DIED FOR THE WORLD**

Calvinists quote 'the world is gone after him' (John 12:19) (an example of hyperbole or exaggeration) to prove that 'world' doesn't always mean 'all men', but only the 'elect'.

##### **Answer:**

- 1) In **John's Gospel** the word 'world' occurs 89 times, but never refers to the 'elect'. (eg: 'The world hates Christ' in John 7:7).
- 2) **John 1:29** 'Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.'
- 3) **John 6:33** 'For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, & giveth life unto the world.'
- 4) **John 3:16** 'For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.'  
Note: If 'world' here means 'elect', some of the 'elect' may not believe, and hence perish.
- 5) **John 4:42** 'This is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.'
- 6) **John 6:51** 'My flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.'
- 7) In **Paul's letters**, the word 'world' occurs 69 times, and is used in several different senses, but never refers to the 'elect'.
- 8) Paul differentiates between 'us' believers and the 'world' in:

- a) **Galatians 1:4** 'Who gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from this present evil world.'
- b) **II Corinthians 5:19** 'God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation'.  
The 'elect' could not have been reconciled at the cross, because:  
i) They did not exist then; ii) They were still in their sins until salvation.  
iii) Paul in 60 AD is still beseeching lost people to be reconciled to God.
- 9) **I John 2:2** states that Christ died for the world as an unlimited atonement: '**he is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world**'. This demolishes limited atonement. Calvinists think 'our sins' refers to Jewish believers, and 'world' means 'Gentile unbelievers'. This is wrong because:
  - a) I John is addressed to 'you that believe on the name of the Son of God'. (I John 5:13).
  - b) 'Our' in I John 2:2 has fellowship with the Father and His Son Jesus Christ (I John 2:1).
  - c) 'Our' has 'an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.' (I John 2:1).
  - d) The words Jew and Gentile do not occur in I John. John makes no such distinction here.
  - e) In I John the word 'world' occurs 23 times, and never refers to the 'elect' (eg, 'love not the world/elect?') (I John 2:15).
  - f) John contrasts Christians and the world as two groups: 'We know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.' (I John 5:19). Hence Christ is the propitiation of John's sins; the sins of the believers he wrote to, and the sins of the whole world.
- 10) **I John 4:4** 'The Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.'

#### **Calvinist Objection: Is John 11:49-52 a parallel passage to I John 2:2?**

'Caiaphas, being the high priest ... said ... that Jesus should die for that nation; and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.' (John 11:49-52).

**Question:** Who are the 'children of God'? Calvinists think they are the church who were chosen by God before the foundation of the world.

**Answer:** 'Children of God' here refers to all the Jewish race scattered abroad being gathered from dispersion abroad into one body, after Christ's second coming. Why Israel? Because:

1. The term 'children of God' was an ancient title for Israelites:
  - 'Ye are the children of the Lord your God.' (Deuteronomy 14:1).
  - 'all of you are children of the Most High.' (Psalm 82:6).
  - 'I will say..bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth.' Isaiah 43:6
2. John meant only Jews who were dispersed among all nations since Rome conquered Judea. These are called the dispersed in:
  - 'to the 12 tribes which are scattered abroad.' (James 1:1).
  - 'will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles?' (John 7:35).
3. The meaning is: 'Christ would die, not only for the then inhabitants of Judea, but for all the Jewish race scattered abroad. This would result in all Jews being gathered from dispersion abroad into one body, after Christ's second coming.'

4. **Question:** If Christ died for the whole Jewish nation as prophesied by Caiaphas, then according to Limited Atonement, all Jews would have to be saved.
5. The phrase 'children of God' never refers to members of the church until they are saved:  
'For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus (Galatians 3:26). Before salvation, the 'elect' were 'children of wrath' (Eph. 2:3) and 'children of disobedience' (Colossians 3:6).
6. **Question:** If a person was a child of God, why would he need an atonement?

## II. CHRIST DIED FOR ALL MEN

Calvinists say that 'all' doesn't mean 'all' but only 'elect' as seen by 'hated of all men'.  
Matt 10:22.

### **Answer:**

1. This is hyperbole, meaning 'an exaggerated statement not meant to be taken literally'.
2. We agree that 'all' is used in different senses, but we disagree that 'all' ever means 'elect'.

Christ's atonement was for all men, as seen from:

1. **Isaiah 53:6** 'All we like sheep have gone astray: we have turned everyone to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all'. The last 'all' is just as extensive as the first 'all', and 'everyone'. 'All' means the same in both places. The context defines 'all' as 'everyone'. **Question:** Have all men gone astray, or have only some of them? ALL HAVE!
2. **II Corinthians 5:14,15** 'For the love of Christ constraineth us ('elect') because we ('elect') thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead. And that he died for all, that they which live (saved people) should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again'.  
Calvinists limit 'all' to the 'elect', but 'all' here means 'all men' as seen by:  
a) The 'elect' are already mentioned as 'us' and 'we', so the 3 'alls' must mean all men.  
b) After the restrictive 'us' & 'we' in v.14, 'all' is used 3 times in a universal, unlimited sense.  
c) The restrictive phrase 'that they which live' (v.15) implies that not everyone of the 'all' for whom Christ died, lives.
3. **II Timothy 2:1-6** 'I exhort...that...prayers be made for all men, for Kings,...for all that are in authority; that we ('elect') may lead...God our Saviour; who will have all men to be saved, ... the man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all'.  
Ransom for 'all' does not mean a 'ransom for the elect' because:  
a. Three 'alls' do not mean 'elect', because the 'elect' is described by 'we'.  
b. The mediator is between 'God and men', not between 'God and the elect'.
4. **I Timothy 4:10** 'living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe'.  
**Key:** This contrast between 'all men' and 'those that believe' occurs in 4 places:  
a. **I Timothy 4:10** 'Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.'

b. **Galatians 6:10** 'Let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.'

c. **Romans 3:22** 'Even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all (100% of mankind) and 'upon all them that believe (the 'elect').

d. **Titus 2:11,12** 'For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared unto all men (100% of mankind), teaching us (the 'elect') that, denying ungodliness ...'

5. **Hebrews 2:9** 'he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.'

**Calvinist Objection:** 'The original Greek here does not use the word 'man' but says, 'for every'.

### **Answer:**

- a. Calvinists take advantage of most people's ignorance of Greek grammar. Like any adjective, demonstrative, participle, or prepositional phrase, the word 'every' is used substantively, ie: 'every' is used by itself because the noun 'man' is so commonly and obviously understood to be meant, for example: - Luke 6:30 'Give to every (man) that asketh thee.'  
- Romans 12:3 'To every (man) that is among you.'  
- I Peter 3:15 'Be ready to give an answer to every (man).'
- b. The singular (every man) brings out far more strongly than the plural (all men) would, the applicability of Christ's death to each individual man.
- c. The starting thought is 'what is man?' (Hebrews 2:6), not 'what are the elect?'

## III. CHRIST DIED FOR HIS PEOPLE, SHEEP, CHURCH OF GOD, MANY

Calvinists presume that, if Christ died for a particular group (the 'elect'), then He died for no-one else, hoping this proves limited atonement. Consider these examples:

1. **Many:** 'The Son of Man came ... to give his life a ransom for many'. (Matthew 20:28).

'This is my blood ... which is shed for many for the remission of sins'. (Matthew 26:28). 'Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many'. (Hebrews 9:28).

**Calvinist Objection:** 'Christ did not give His life a ransom for all, but for many'. Every Calvinist presumes 'many' = 'elect'.

**Answer:** 'Many' is used because it better contrasts with 'one'. 'Many' sometimes means 'all':

'the offence of one many be dead....the gift hath abounded unto many'. (Romans 5:15).

'As by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous'. (Romans 5:19).

**Question:** Did Adam's fall affect all or only some of his descendants? ALL.

2. **His People:** Calvinists presume that 'his people' here are the 'elect', eg: 'He shall save his people from their sins'. (Matthew 1:21).

**Question:** Who are 'his people'? **Answer:** ISRAEL.

- 'A Governor, that shall rule my people Israel'. (Matthew 2:6).

- 'Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people'. (Luke 1:68)



3. **Sheep:** 'I lay down my life for the sheep'. (Israel). (John 10:15).  
**Question:** Who are the 'sheep'? **Answer:** ISRAEL, because:  
'Go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel'. (Matthew 10:6).  
'I am not sent but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel'. (Matthew 15:24).

**Key:** If Christ died for all of Israel, & some were lost, this proves Christ's atonement was unlimited.

**Conclusion:** Calvinists claim that Christ only died for a particular group is proven false because:

- The Bible never states that Christ died only for these groups to the exclusion of all others.
- These groups are not the same, that is, Israel is not the church.
- Using this same false Calvinist reasoning, one could conclude that Christ died:
  - only for Paul, '... who loved me, and gave himself for me'. (Galatians 2:20).
  - only for weak believers: 'the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died'. (I Corinthians 8:11).

**Key:** There are other groups in Scripture for whom Christ died that Calvinists don't want to discuss, because they prove unlimited atonement.

4. Those Christ died for who will ultimately go to Hell. 'But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction'. (II Peter 2:1).  
Not only is Jesus Christ the Saviour (I Timothy 4:15) and Redeemer (I Timothy 2:6) of the world, but he bought the false prophets and false teachers, paying for their sins as well.

Despotes (Gk: 'Lord') in II Peter 2:1 is used of Christ in II Timothy 2:21 ('meet for the master's use').

**Note:** The same word 'bought' is used elsewhere of Christ: 'For ye are bought with a price'. (I Cor. 6:20).

5. Those groups Christ died for that describe **everybody, all mankind**.
- Luke 19:10** 'The Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost'.  
Are all lost? YES. Are only the 'elect' lost? NO.
  - Romans 5:6** 'Christ died for the ungodly'.  
Are all ungodly? YES. Are only the 'elect' ungodly? NO, all are.
  - Galatians 4:5** 'To redeem them that were under the law'.  
Are all under the law? YES. Are only the 'elect' under the law? NO.
  - I Timothy 1:15** 'Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners'.  
Are we all born sinners? YES. Are only the 'elect' sinners? NO.
  - I Peter 3:18** 'Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust'.  
Are all unjust? YES. Are only the 'elect' unjust? NO.

**Key:** If Christ died for the lost, the ungodly, those under the law, sinners, and the unjust, then He made an unlimited atonement, for that is the condition of all men, not just the elect.

6. Christ died for **His Friends**. 'Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.' (John 15:13). **Question:** Who are Christ's friends? **Answer:** Judas was one of Christ's friends, yet Judas was non-elect. 'Jesus said unto him, Friend..' (Matthew 26:50).

7. Christ died for '**whosoever believeth**' may claim Christ's atonement and be saved, proving 'unlimited atonement'. - **Acts 10:43** 'Whosoever believeth in him shall not be ashamed.'  
- **Romans 1:16** 'Gospel of Christ is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believeth.'  
- **Romans 10:11** 'whosoever believeth in him shall not be ashamed.'  
- **Romans 10:13** 'whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.'  
- **I John 5:1** 'whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.'  
- **Revelation 22:17** 'whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.'

**Key:** There are no 'whosoever wills' in Limited Atonement.

**Key:** Calvin rejected Limited Atonement as seen in 4 quotes.

**Key:** If no offer can be made to the 'non-elect', and the elect are sure to be saved, then all preaching is not only vain and useless, but an absolute, total and complete waste of time.

**Conclusion:** The Calvinist debate about Limited Atonement is a smokescreen to conceal the true nature of Calvinism, which says that God by a sovereign, eternal decree of Unconditional Election has consigned billions of people to hell before their birth. To make it certain, God has given them Total Depravity so that they will be unable to receive Irresistible Grace, which will not even be offered to them, since Christ did not make a Limited Atonement for them.

**PERSEVERANCE OF THE SAINTS. Question:** How do Calvinists know if they are saved?

**Answer:** Only if they persevere in holiness to the end, not by Bible promises. God's preserving in salvation is not the same thing as the saints persevering outwardly in the faith.

**Key:** POTS is not the same as eternal security. Calvinists view on POTS is the same as Arminians.

**Key:** Contrary to salvation by perseverance (Calvinism), the Bible teaches salvation by believing.

**Key:** Calvinists and Arminians both wrongly presume that:

- The castaway in 1 Corinthians 9:24-27 lost his salvation.
- "He that endureth to the end shall be saved" (Matthew 10:22; 24:13) says that one's salvation is only sure by enduring to the end of one's life.
- "continue in them for thou shalt save thyself and them that hear thee." (1 Timothy 4:16).

**Key:** Calvinists call any opponent an Arminian, no matter what they believe.

**Key:** Because eternal security is so often equated with POTS, Calvinists coerce Christians who believe in eternal security into accepting all five points of Calvinism. This is done by implying that a rejection of election and predestination (as taught by Calvinists) is a rejection of eternal security.

**Key:** The NT teaches that some Christians may not persevere, but:

1. Become barren and unfruitful (2 Peter 1:8),
2. Be ashamed when Christ returns (1 John 2:28),
3. Hymeneus and Alexander who were delivered to Satan (1 Timothy 1:20),
4. Demas forsook Paul having loved this present world (2 Timothy 4:10),
5. Just Lot (2 Peter 2:7), righteous Lot (2 Peter 2:8), last seen drunk in a cave committing incest with his two daughters (Genesis 19:33,36). Did Lot persevere in faith? No.
6. A righteous man can turn from his righteousness and never return back. "When the righteous turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity." (Ezekiel 18:24).

**Key:** Scriptures exhorting believers to persevere and practise good works, (not to keep salvation) have no meaning if all Christians are sure to persevere;

a) Jude 1:21 "Keep yourselves in the love of God." b) 1 Cor. 15:58; c) Romans 12:1,2.

**Q:** Is salvation an instantaneous act of God, or is it a process that depends on man's perseverance? Both Calvinism and Arminianism teach the latter.

**Key:** POTS is a result of Reformation concern that "justification by faith" would produce moral laxity in the church, so they teach that only those who persevere are truly saved.

**Conclusion:** Bad results of POTS:

- a) Lack of Bible teaching on the Judgment Seat of Christ and gain or loss of heavenly rewards.
- b) POTS contains a false view of assurance of salvation, because it makes salvation depend upon election and not on receiving Christ as Saviour. (Why don't you go SW?)

## 109. GOD HAS NOT CAST AWAY HIS PEOPLE ISRAEL

Romans 11:1,2

Many groups in Christendom think that God has permanently cast away Israel, and that Israel has no part in any of God's plans for the future. Whenever they see a passage on Israel, they read it as applying to the church. They think that the church has inherited all the Old Testament promises to Israel. When Israel became a nation in May 1948, they see no relevance for modern day Israel in the events surrounding the second coming of Christ.

However, even a casual study of eschatology (second coming of Christ) will reveal that Israel is closely connected to the events of Christ's return.

Groups denying any future for Israel include Seventh Day Adventists, Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons, Roman Catholics, Muslims and Amillennarians (including many Anglicans, Presbyterians, Baptists, Uniting and Congregational churches) as well as Calvinists. These groups regard themselves as the God favoured remnant (Revelation 12:17) taking the place of Israel, as "prophesied" by their false prophets.

The Thomson Chain Reference Bible mistakenly applies references concerning Israel to the Church.

It overlooks the Ethnic Division principle of interpreting Scripture where God gives three ethnic divisions of mankind as Jew, Gentile and Church.

"Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God." 1 Cor. 10:32.

This means that to correctly understand any Scripture, we must first ask "To whom is this passage referring? Is it spoken to or about Jews, or Gentiles or the Church?"

Let a passage referring to Jews, teach what it says about Jews, without putting a foreign meaning on it.

There are more than 130 clear Bible passages which teach that Jesus Christ will return in person to rescue and convert the nation of Israel, and to rule on the earth from Jerusalem as King of the Jews, with Israel being the chief nation on earth.

Ask if the following 211 verses teach that Israel has a future in God's plans, in these 107 passages.

### 1. **PAUL TEACHES ISRAEL'S FUTURE CONVERSION. Romans 11**

- i) Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. v.1
- ii) God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. v.2
- iii) Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid. v.11
- iv) If their fall be the riches of the world, how much more their fullness? v.12
- v) If the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead? (a resurrection of believers). v.15
- vi) How much more shall these (Jews), which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? v.24
- vii) **Blindness IN PART** is happened to **Israel**, **UNTIL** the fullness of the Gentiles be come in. (Rapture). v.25
- viii) And so **all Israel** shall be **saved**: as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob. v.26
- ix) For this is my covenant with them (Israel) when I shall take away their sins. v.27
- x) As concerning the gospel, they (Jews) are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election (of Israel), they are beloved for the fathers' sakes (patriarchs). v.28

### 2. **JESUS CHRIST TAUGHT ISRAEL'S FUTURE CONVERSION.**

- i) Ye (Israel) shall not see me henceforth, **TILL** ye shall say, Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord. Matthew 23:37-39.
- ii) Now learn a parable of the fig tree (national Israel as in Joel 1:6-7); When his branch is yet tender and putteth forth leaves, (Israel becoming a nation in 1948) ye know that summer (Christ's return) is near. Matthew 24:32.
- iii) Christ shall rule my people Israel (in the Millennium). Matthew 2:6.
- iv) Christ promised **judgment on this wicked generation**, not on Israel's future generations forever.
  - The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation and shall condemn it. 41
  - The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it. 42
  - Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation. Matthew 12:41,42,45.
  - All these things shall come upon this generation. Matthew 23:36.
- v) Jesus prophesied that **future Israel will receive the Antichrist as their Messiah.**
  - "I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not (as Messiah): if another shall come in his own name (Antichrist), him ye will receive." John 5:43.
- vi) Jesus prophesied that **His disciples, in the regeneration (millennium) will judge the 12 tribes of Israel.**
  - "Ye which have followed me (the disciples), in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of His glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel." Matthew 19:28.

### 3. **MOSES said that GOD WILL NOT FORSAKE or DESTROY ISRAEL, or FORGET THE COVENANT OF THY FATHERS.**

When thou (Israel) art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice: (For the Lord thy God is a merciful God) **he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant** of thy fathers which he swore unto them. Deuteronomy 4:30-31.

### 4. **The PALESTINIAN COVENANT PROMISES 7 THINGS FOR ISRAEL in Deut. 30:1-10.**

- i) **Dispersion for disobedience.** v.1 "Thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, where the Lord thy God hath driven thee."
- ii) **Future repentance of Israel** while in dispersion. v.2
- iii) **The return of the Lord.** v.3 "The Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion on thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations . . ."
- iv) **Restoration to the land.** v.5 "The Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy Father's possessed, and thou shalt possess it: and he will do thee good . . ."
- v) **National conversion.** v.6 "The Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart and soul. . ."
- vi) **Judgment of Israel's oppressors.** v.7 "The Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies. . ."
- vii) **National prosperity.** v.9 "The Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand."

5. **MOSES PROPHESED a FUTURE TROUBLE for ISRAEL and a GOOD LATTER END.**

- i) Evil will befall you in the latter days (Tribulation). Deuteronomy 31:29.
- ii) O that they were wise, that they understood this, that they would consider their latter end! How should one chase a thousand. . . Deuteronomy 32:29,30.

6. **The DAVIDIC COVENANT is UNBREAKABLE. "My Covenant Will I Not Break".Ps89:34**

I will **not lie** unto David. v.35

His **seed** shall endure **forever**, and his **throne** as the sun before me. v.36

It shall be established forever. v.37

The seed of David is the nation Israel who will endure forever.

Some say that God has broken His covenant with David (Israel) because of Israel's disobedience.

However, Psalm 89:34 clearly states that God will not break His covenant with David, nor with His seed Israel.

7. **ISAIAH TAUGHT ISRAEL'S REGATHERING TO THE LAND, THEIR CONVERSION and that GOD WOULD NOT FORGET THEM.**

1. Isaiah 2:1-4 states-in the last days **Judah, Jerusalem** and the **Lord's house** will be exalted:

- i) All nations shall flow unto it.
- ii) Many people will say, Let us go to the house of the God of **Jacob**.
- iii) He will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths.
- iv) Out of **Zion** shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from **Jerusalem**.
- v) He shall judge among the nations.
- vi) Christ shall rebuke many people.
- vii) They shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks.
- viii) Nation shall not lift up sword against nation.
- ix) Neither shall they learn war anymore.

O house of **Jacob**, come let us walk in the light of the Lord.

2. In that day, the **remnant of Israel**, and such as are escaped of the house of **Jacob**....shall **stay upon the Lord**, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. Isaiah 10:20.

The remnant shall return, even the remnant of **Jacob**, unto the **mighty God**. v.21.

3. **Israel's remnant will be regathered a second time**. The Lord shall set His hand again the **second time to recover the remnant of his people**, which shall be left, from Assyria, Egypt, Ethiopia, Iraq, and from the islands of the sea. Isaiah 11:11-12.

He (Christ) shall assemble the **outcasts of Israel**, and **gather the dispersed of Judah** from the four corners of the earth.

4. **God will choose Jacob and Israel**, and **set them in their own land**. Isaiah 14:1.

5. The **land of Judah shall be a terror unto Egypt**. This prophecy is fulfilled today because Israel's military has defeated Egypt in every war since 1948. Isaiah 19:17.

6. **Egypt, Assyria and Israel will become God's people**. The Lord of Hosts shall bless, saying, Blessed be Egypt my people, and Assyria the work of my hands, and Israel mine inheritance. Isaiah 19:25.

7. The **Lord shall reign** in Mount Zion, and in **Jerusalem**, and before his ancients gloriously. Isaiah 24:23.

8. **Israel shall blossom and bud**, and fill the face of the world with fruit. Isaiah 27:6.

9. Ye shall be **gathered** one by one, O ye children of Israel . . . and shall **worship the Lord** in the holy mount at Jerusalem. Isaiah 27:12-13.

10. The light of the sun shall be sevenfold . . . in the day that the Lord bindeth up the breach of his people, and **healeth the stroke of their wound**. Isaiah 30:26.

11. As birds flying, so will the **Lord of hosts defend Jerusalem**; defending also he will **deliver it**; and passing over He will **preserve it**. Isaiah 31:5.

Jews dwelling at Jerusalem will be defended, delivered and preserved by Jesus Christ at His return to earth.

12. O **Israel**, thou shalt **not be forgotten of me**. Isaiah 44:21.

13. **God promises that: "I will not forget Israel."**

"But Zion said, The Lord hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me.

Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? Yea, they may forget, yet **I will not forget thee**." Isaiah 49:14-15.

14. **God will comfort and redeem Jerusalem**.

"Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of **Jerusalem**: for the Lord hath **comforted his people**, he hath **redeemed Jerusalem**." Isaiah 52:9.

This will happen when Christ returns to rescue Jews at Jerusalem from the Antichrist. They will be comforted and redeemed.

15. **God has only temporarily forsaken Israel**. Isaiah 54:7,8,10.

For a **small moment** have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I **gather thee**. v.7.

In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with **everlasting kindness** will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer. v.8.

**My kindness** shall not depart from thee, neither shall the **covenant of my peace** be removed. v.10.

16. **God's covenant with Zion and Jacob is forever**.

The Redeemer shall come to **Zion**, and unto them that **turn from transgression in Jacob**, saith the Lord. This is **my covenant** with them, . . . saith the Lord, from henceforth and **forever**. Isaiah 59:20-21.

17. **Wealthy Jews from overseas will return by air and sea to Israel at the start of the Millennium**.

Who are these that **fly** as a cloud? v.8.

Surely the **isles** shall wait for me, and the **ships** of Tarshish first, **to bring thy sons from far**, their **silver** and their **gold** with them, unto the name of the Lord thy God, and to the Holy One of **Israel**, because **he hath glorified thee**. v.9.

The **sons of strangers** shall build up thy walls, and their kings shall minister unto thee: for in my wrath I smote thee, but **in my favour have I had mercy on thee**." v.10.

The nation and Kingdom that will not serve thee shall perish; yea, those nations shall be **utterly wasted** (by drought). Isaiah 60:8,9,10,12.

At the start of the millennium, Jews will return to Israel by aeroplane (v.8) and by ship (v.9) from the isles, maybe from England, the United States and South Africa where there are many wealthy Jews, bringing their silver and gold with them. The Lord will glorify Israel after His return. Gentiles will help rebuild Jerusalem (v.10). God's favour will rest on Israel (v.10). Zechariah 14:16-19

describe how Israel's enemies will be destroyed in the millennium, under Christ's rule. (v.12).

18. **Jerusalem** shall be called, Sought out, **A city not forsaken**. Isaiah 62:12.

19. **Israel's return to the land in 1948 will be so quick, that it will be like a woman giving birth before labour pains**. Isaiah 66:8-20. (v.8)

Shall a **nation** be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children.

**Rejoice ye with Jerusalem**, and be glad with her, **all ye that love her**.

Behold, I will extend **peace to her** like a river. . . v.10,12.

As one whom his mother comforteth, **so will I comfort you**; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem. v.13.

They (Gentiles) shall bring all your **brethren** (Jews) for an offering unto the Lord out of all nations . . . **to Jerusalem**. v.20.

20. **The Jewish nation (seed) and their name shall remain forever**.

For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall **your seed** and **your name remain**. Isaiah 66:22.

## 8. **JEREMIAH TAUGHT THAT ISRAEL AS A NATION WOULD BE SAVED, REGATHERED and BLESSED WITH AN EVERLASTING COVENANT WITH GOD.**

1. **God will regather Judah and Israel from the land of the north (Russia) to the land of Israel**. Jeremiah 3:17-18.

At the time (millennium) shall they call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord; and all nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the Lord, to Jerusalem: **neither shall they (Jews) walk anymore after the imagination of their evil heart**. v.17.

In those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel, and **they shall come together out of the land of the north** to the land that I have given for an inheritance unto your fathers. v.18.

2. **God will regather, save, feed, protect and provide for Israel**.

I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries where I have driven them, and will bring them again **to their folds**; they shall be **fruitful** and **increase**. v.3.

I will set up shepherds over them which shall **feed them**: and they shall **fear no more**, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord. v.4.

In his days (Christ's 1000 year rule) **Judah shall be saved**, and **Israel shall dwell safely**. v.6.

The Lord liveth, which brought Israel out of the north country, and from all countries where I had driven them, they shall **dwell in their own land**. v.8. Jeremiah 23:3-8.

3. **Israel will be saved out of the Tribulation to serve God**.

It is the time of Jacob's trouble, but he shall be **saved** out of it. v.7.

I will burst thy bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him. v.8.

They shall **serve the Lord their God**, and David their King, whom I will raise up unto them. v.9.

O Israel, **I will save thee** from afar . . . and Jacob shall return, and shall be in rest, and be quiet, and none shall make him afraid. v.10.

For **I am with thee**, saith the Lord, **to save thee** . . . yet will I not make a full end of thee: but I will correct thee in measure. v.11.

I will punish all that oppress them. v.20.

**Ye shall be my people**, and I will be your God. v.22. Jeremiah 30:7-22.

4. **God will regather, build, plant and make a new covenant with Israel and Judah**. Jeremiah 31:10,28,31,36,37.

He that scattered Israel will **gather him**, and **keep him**. v.10.

I will **watch over** them (Israel), to **build**, and to **plant**. v.28.

Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will **make a new covenant** with the **house of Israel**, and with the house of **Judah**. v.31.

If those ordinances (sun and moon) depart from before me saith the Lord, then the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before me forever. v.36.

If heaven above can be measured, and the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done, saith the Lord. v.37.

5. **God will regather Israel as His people, save them, bless them, and make an everlasting covenant with them**. Jeremiah 32:37-42.

I will **gather** them out of all countries . . .

I will **bring them again** unto this place, and I will cause them to **dwell safely**. v.37.

They shall be **my people**, and I will be their God. v.38.

I will give them **one heart**, and one way, that they may **fear me forever**. v.39.

I will make an **everlasting covenant** with them . . . they shall **not depart** from me. v.40.

I will rejoice over them to **do them good**, and I will **plant them** in this land assuredly. v.41.

As I have brought all this great evil upon this people, so I will bring upon them **all the good** that I have promised them. v.42.

Ten promises here show that God has a great future for Israel, in Jeremiah 32:37-42.

6. **God will save Israel and Judah, they will dwell safely, and the Davidic covenant is as permanent as day and night**. Jeremiah 33:14-22.

I will perform that **good thing** which I have promised unto the house of **Israel** and to the house of **Judah**. v.14.

In those days, and at that time, I will cause the Branch of righteousness (Christ) to grow up unto David; he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land. v.15.

In those days shall **Judah be saved** and **Jerusalem shall dwell safely**. v.16.

If ye can break my covenant of the **day** and my covenant of the **night**... v.20.

Then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne. v.21.

As the **host of heaven** cannot be numbered, neither the **sand of the sea** measured: so will I multiply the seed of **David** my servant . . . v.22.

7. **I will not make a full end of thee** (Israel), but correct thee in measure; Jeremiah 46:28.

8. **Jacob and Israel** (the rod of his inheritance). **Thou art my battle axe** and **weapons of war**: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy Kingdoms. Jeremiah 51:19,20.

This will only be fulfilled at Christ's return.

9. **EZEKIEL PREDICTED A REMNANT OF ISRAEL WOULD BE SAVED IN THE LATTER DAYS.**

1. Yet **will I leave a remnant** that ye may have some that shall escape the sword among the nations, when ye shall be scattered through the countries. Ezekiel 6:8
2. **Israel to be regathered and be saved.** Ezekiel 11:17,19,20.  
I will even gather you from the people, and assemble you out of the countries where ye have been scattered, and **I will give you the land of Israel.** v.17.  
I will put a **new spirit** within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh. v.19.  
They shall be my people, and I will be their God. v.20.
3. That the **house of Israel** may go **no more astray** from me, neither be polluted any more with all their transgressions; but that **they may be my people** and **I may be their God.** Ezekiel 14:11.
4. **I will remember my covenant with thee** in the days of thy youth, and I will establish unto thee an **everlasting covenant.** Ezekiel 16:60.  
Then thou shalt remember thy ways and be ashamed. v.61.
5. I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the **bond of the covenant:** Ezekiel 20:37,38,42,43.  
I will purge out from among you the rebels. v.38.  
Ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I shall bring you into the **land of Israel.** v.42. There shall ye remember your ways...and **loathe yourselves.** v.43.  
Israel will be disciplined, purged, saved, regathered and repent.
6. **God will regather and save Israel to dwell safely.** Ezekiel 28:25,26.  
When I shall have **gathered the house of Israel** from the people among whom they are scattered, and shall be **sanctified** in them in the sight of the heathen, then shall they **dwell in their land** that I have given to Jacob. v.25.  
They **shall dwell safely** . . . they shall dwell with confidence, when I have **executed judgments** upon all those that despise them round about them; and they shall know that I am the Lord their God. v.26.  
These events have never happened before. They can only refer to a future regathering and blessing of Israel.
7. I will **gather them** from the countries, and will bring them to their own land. Ezekiel 34:13,24,25,28.  
**I the Lord will be their God** and my servant David a prince among them. v.24.  
I will make with them a **covenant of peace.** v.25.  
They shall **dwell safely** and none shall make them afraid. v.28.
8. I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. v.24.  
Then I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and **ye shall be clean.** v.25.  
A **new heart** will I give you, and a **new spirit** will I put within you. 26.  
I will **put my spirit** within you. v.27.  
**Ye shall dwell in the land** that I gave to your fathers: **Ye shall be my people** and I will be your God. v.28.  
**I will save you** from all your uncleanness. v.29.  
I will yet for this be enquired of by the house of Israel, to do it for them. v.37.  
Ezekiel 36:24,25,26,27,28,29,37.
9. **The valley of dry bones.** Ezekiel 37:11,12,14,21-27.  
These bones are the whole house of Israel. v.11.  
Behold, O my people, I will open your graves and bring you into the land of Israel. v.12.

I shall put my Spirit in you, and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the Lord have spoken it, and performed it. v.14.  
I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen...and bring them into their **own land.** v.21.

I will make them **one nation in the land** upon the mountains of Israel. v.22.  
I will **save them** out of all their dwelling places, where they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so they shall be **my people**, and I will **be their God.** v.23.  
David my servant shall be king over them. v.24.  
They shall **dwell in the land** that I have given to Jacob. v.25.  
I will make a **covenant of peace** with them; it shall be an **everlasting covenant** with them. I will set **my sanctuary** in the midst of them forevermore. v.26.  
My tabernacle also shall be with them: yea, I will be their God, and **they shall be my people.** v.27.

10. **Russia will invade regathered Israel in the latter days.** Ezekiel 38:8-16.  
In the **latter years** thou shalt come into the **land** that is brought back from the sword, and is gathered out of many people, against the mountains of Israel, . . . it is brought forth out of the nations, and they shall **dwell safely** all of them. v.8.  
In that day when **my people of Israel dwelleth safely.** v.14. Thou shalt come up against my people of **Israel**... it shall be in the **latter days.** v.16.
11. **Israel in the land will be saved after Russia's defeat.** Ezekiel 39:7-29.  
I will make my holy name known in the midst of my people Israel.  
I will not let them pollute my holy name any more.  
The heathen shall know that I am the Lord, the Holy One in Israel. v.7.  
They that **dwell in the cities of Israel** shall go forth, and shall set on fire, and burn the weapons . . . seven years. v.9.  
The **house of Israel** shall know that I am the Lord their God from that day and forward.v.22. The heathen shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity. v.23.  
I will have **mercy** upon the **whole house of Israel.** v.25.  
I have **poured out my Spirit** upon the **house of Israel.** v.29.
12. **The Shekinah glory cloud will fill the Millennial Temple.**  
The glory of the God of Israel came into the house by the way of the east. Ezekiel 43:2,4,5.
13. **Levites shall serve in the Millennial Temple.** Ezekiel 44:10,11.  
The Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray . . . yet they shall be **ministers in my sanctuary**, having charge at the **gates of the house** they shall slay the burnt offering.
14. The **rest of the land** shall they give to the house of **Israel** according to their **tribes.** Ezekiel 45:8.
15. The **gates of the city** shall be after the names of the **tribes of Israel.** Ezekiel 48:31.

|          |          |          |        |
|----------|----------|----------|--------|
|          | Naphtali | Asher    | Gad    |
| Simeon   | 4500     |          | Reuben |
| Issachar | 4500     | 4500     | Judah  |
| Zebulun  | 4500     |          | Levi   |
|          | Dan      | Benjamin | Joseph |

10. **DANIEL STATES that the ARCHANGEL MICHAEL STILL REPRESENTS ISRAEL IN the TRIBULATION, and that ISRAEL WILL BE DELIVERED.**

At that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy (Daniel's) people (Israel): and there shall be a **time of trouble**, such as never was...at that time **thy people (Israel) shall be delivered.** Daniel 12:1.

11. **HOSEA TEACHES ISRAEL'S CONVERSION IN THE LATTER DAYS.** Hosea 2:18-20,23.

1. **Israel, the adulterous wife will be restored.** 2:14-23.

In that day I will make a **covenant** for them. v.18.

I will make them to lie down **safely.** v.18.

I will betroth thee unto me **forever** . . . in righteousness, in judgment, in loving kindness, in mercies, in faithfulness. v.19,20.

Thou shalt **know the Lord.** v.20.

I will say to them which were not my people,

**"Thou art my people"** and they shall say, **"Thou art my God"**. v.23.

2. The **children of Israel** shall abide many days (the church age) **without a king**, without a prince, without a sacrifice, without an image (idols), without an ephod (priesthood), and without teraphim (Divination device). v.4.

**Afterward** shall the **children of Israel return** (to the land) and **seek the Lord** their God, and David their king; and **shall fear the Lord** and his goodness in the **latter days.** v.5. Hosea 3:4,5. For about 2500 years Israel has not had a king.

After the Church age, Israel will return, seek God and be saved. This has partly happened since 1948.

3. **Christ returns to heaven until the Jews seek Him.**

I (Jesus Christ) will go and return to **my place** (heaven at His ascension), till they (Jews) acknowledge their **offence** (of crucifying Christ), and seek my face: in their affliction (the 7 year Tribulation) they (the Jews) will seek me (Jesus Christ) early. Hosea 5:15.

**Jews talking:** Come, and let us return unto the Lord: for he hath torn (God's discipline of Israel), and he will heal us;

he hath smitten, and he will bind us up. Hosea 6:1.

After **two days** (maybe about 2000 years) will he **revive us** (Israel gets converted at Christ's return): in the **third day** (maybe from 2000 AD to 3000 AD) he will **raise us up** (Israel converted nationally), and we shall **live in his sight"** (for 1000 years). Hosea 6:2.

This agrees well with Israel now returning to the land after 2000 years. If Christ returns soon, Israel will be saved and live under Christ's rule for 1000 years (Revelation 20:1-9).

4. **Israel will be converted.** Hosea 14:4,5,6.

I will heal their backsliding,

I will love them (Israel) freely:

for mine anger is turned away from him (in the Millennium). v.4.

I will be as the dew unto Israel. v.5.

His branches shall spread. v.6.

12. **JOEL TEACHES THE CONVERSION OF ISRAEL.**

1. Then will the Lord be jealous for his land, and **pity his people.** Joel 2:18.

I will **no more** make you a **reproach** among the heathen. v.19.

I will remove far off from you the northern army (Russia). v.20.

I will **restore to you** the years that the locust hath eaten. v.25.

Ye shall know that I am **in the midst of Israel**, and that I am the Lord your God, that hath dealt wondrously with you: my people shall **never** be ashamed. v.27. Joel 2:18,19,20,25,27.

2. I will gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there for **my people** and for **my heritage Israel**, whom they have **scattered** among the nations, and **parted my land.** Joel 3:2.

Today the nations are parting "my land Israel" amongst the Arabs in exchange for peace. God will judge and punish those nations who pressure Israel to give up parts of her land.

3. The Lord will be the hope of his people, and the strength of the **children of Israel.** Joel 3:16.

**Judah shall dwell forever**, and **Jerusalem** from generation to generation.

**I will cleanse their blood** that I have not cleansed: ..the Lord dwelleth in Zion.

Joel 3:20,21.

13. **AMOS TEACHES the REGATHERING and BLESSING OF ISRAEL.**

1. In that day I will **raise up** the Tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof;

I will **raise up** his ruins, and

I will **build it as in** the days of old. v.11.

- That they (Israel) may possess the remnant of Edom (man), and of all the heathen, which are called by my name. v.12.

- I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel, and they shall **build the waste cities**, and inhabit them. v.14.

- I will plant them upon their land, and they shall **no more be pulled up out of their land** which I have given them, saith the Lord thy God. v.15. Amos 9:11,12,14,15.

14. **MICAH TEACHES THAT ISRAEL WILL BE THE MIGHTIEST NATION IN THE MILLENNIUM.**

1. The **remnant of Jacob** shall be among the Gentiles in the midst of many people as a **lion** among the beasts of the forest, as a **young lion** among the flocks of sheep: who, if he go through, both treadeth down, and teareth in pieces, and none can deliver. Micah 5:8.

2. The **nations shall see** and **be confounded at all their might:** they shall lay their hand upon their mouth. Micah 7:16.

3. He will turn again, he will **have compassion on us.** Micah 7:19.

4. Thou wilt perform the truth to Jacob, and the mercy to Abraham, which thou hast **sworn** unto our fathers from the days of old. Micah 7:20.

15. **ZEPHANIAH TEACHES THAT ISRAEL WILL BE SAVED**

1. The remnant of Israel shall **not do iniquity**, nor speak lies; neither shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth . . . none shall make them afraid. 3:13.

2. The King of Israel, the Lord, is in the midst of thee: thou shalt **not see evil any more.** 3:15.

3. I will get them (Israel) **praise and fame in every land** where they have been **put to shame.** 3:19.

4. At that time I will bring you again, even in the time that **I gather you.** 3:20.

## 16. ZECHARIAH TEACHES THAT ISRAEL WILL BE RESTORED

1. He that toucheth **you** (Israel) touches the **apple of God's eye**. 2:8.
2. The Lord **shall inherit Judah** his portion in the holy land, and **shall choose Jerusalem again**. 2:12.
3. The man whose name is THE BRANCH; . . . He shall build the **temple** of the Lord; he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne. 6:12,13.
4. I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: Jerusalem shall be called a **city of truth**. 8:3.
5. I will **save my people** from the east country, and from the west country; I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and **they shall be my people**, and I will be their God, in truth and in righteousness. 8:7,8.
6. As ye were a curse among the heathen, O house of **Judah** and house of **Israel**; so will **I save you**, and ye shall be a **blessing**. 8:13.
7. In those days, ten men shall take hold of the skirt of a **Jew**, saying we will go with you: for we have heard that **God is with you**. 8:23.
8. The Lord of hosts shall defend them. 9:15.  
The Lord their God shall save them in that day. 9:16.
9. I will **strengthen** the house of Judah, and I will **save** the house of Joseph . . . **they shall be as though I had not cast them off**. 10:6.
10. **Israel will be converted when Christ returns.**  
I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all people. 12:2.  
I will make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people.  
All that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces. 12:3.  
In that day shall the Lord defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem. v.8.  
I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem. v.9.  
I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and supplications: they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him v.10. Zechariah 12:2,3,8,9,10.
11. **When Antichrist invades Jerusalem, two-thirds of Israel will die.**  
In all the land, two parts shall be cut off and die, but the third part will be left. v.8.  
I will bring the third part through the fire . . .  
they shall call on my name and I will hear them:  
I will say, it is my people:  
they shall say, the Lord is my God. Zechariah 13:8,9.

**Question** for Amillennialists: Will two-thirds of the church be killed? (No).

### 12. **Events of Armageddon.** Zechariah 14.

- I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle. v.2.  
The Lord shall go forth, and fight against those nations. v.3.  
His feet shall stand in that day upon the Mount of Olives. v.4.  
The Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. v.5.  
The Lord shall be King over all the earth. v.9.  
Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited. v.11.  
This shall be the plague that the Lord will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. v.12.  
Judah shall fight at Jerusalem. v.14. Zechariah 14:2-5,9,11,12,14.

## **Conclusion:**

From the 211 verses above, it is clearly seen that in the context of Christ returning to earth, God still cares for Israel. The Bible teaches unmistakably that Israel will return to the land in a state of unbelief, and while facing destruction from the Antichrist, Christ will return in person to rescue and convert Israel. Hence in Christ's earthly kingdom, Israel will be the chief nation on earth. So we conclude this study in full agreement with the Apostle Paul who said in Romans 11:2, "God hath not cast away His people which He forenew." To think that God has cast away His people Israel is to disagree with 15 writers of Scripture.

## **Summary:**

Romans 11:1, "God hath **not cast away** his people" (2),11, "their **fullness**" (12), "**receiving** of them" (15), "**Blindness in part** is happened to Israel, **until**" (24,25), "they are **beloved**" (28).  
Deut.4:31, "he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, **nor forget the covenant.**"  
Isaiah 11:11 "Lord shall set his hand again the **second time to recover** the remnant of his people."  
Isaiah 14:1 "Lord will have mercy on Jacob, & **will yet choose Israel**, & set them in their own land"  
Isaiah 19:17 "land of Judah shall be a **terror unto Egypt.**" "Blessed be Egypt,..Assyria,..Israel"(25)  
Isaiah 54:7,8,10 "**for a small moment have I forsaken thee**; but with great mercies will I **gather thee.**"  
Jeremiah 3:17,18 "In those days the house of Judah shall **walk with** the house of Israel,..."  
Jeremiah 30:7,11,22 "time of Jacob's trouble, but **he shall be saved out of it.**(7) I will be your God".  
Jeremiah 31:37 "If heaven above can be measured, & the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done, saith the Lord."  
Jeremiah 32:42 "As I have brought all this **great evil upon this people**,so will I bring upon them **all the good**"  
Jeremiah 46:28 "**I will not make a full end of thee**, but correct thee in measure;"  
Daniel 12:1 "shall **Michael** stand up, the great prince which standeth for the **children of thy people**"  
Hosea 3:4,5 "The children of Israel shall **abide many days without a king**, sacrifice,..Afterward shall the children of Israel return, & seek the Lord...in the latter days." "In the third day **he will raise us up.**" (6:2).  
Amos 9:11-15 "**I will raise up** the tabernacle of David that is fallen; I will build it **as in the days of old.**"  
Zechariah 10:6 "I will strengthen the house of Judah,& Joseph..they shall be **as though I had not cast them off.**  
Ezekiel **28:25,26; 36:24-29,37; 37:11-14,21-27; 39:7,9,22-29.** **poured out my Spirit on the house of Is.**